

AN
EXPLICATION
OF THE
HUNDRETH AND TENTH
PSALM:

WHEREIN

The several Heads of CHRISTIAN
Religion therein contained; touching the
Exaltation of Christ, the Scepter of his Kingdom,
the Character of his Subjects, his Priesthood, Victo-
ries, Sufferings, and Resurrection, are largely
explained and applied.

Being the Substance of severall Sermons
Preached at LINCOLNS INNE.

By EDWARD REYNOLDS, sometimes Fellow of
Merton Colledge in Oxford, late Preacher to the
foresaid Honorable Society, and Rector of the
Church of Breunstone in North-hamptonshire.

afterwards Bp of Norwich - 1660

The fourth Edition, revised, and corrected by the Author.

LONDON,

Printed by F. N. for R. Bostocke, and are to be sold in
Pauls Church-yard, at the signe of the
Kings Head. 1654. 3m

THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTEN LENOX AND TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

1892

WILLIAM

any on these contents, touching the
of the same, or the same, or the same,
of the same, or the same, or the same,
of the same, or the same, or the same,
of the same, or the same, or the same,<
of the same, or the same, or the same,

of the same, or the same, or the same,
of the same, or the same, or the same,

of the same, or the same, or the same,
of the same, or the same, or the same,
of the same, or the same, or the same,
of the same, or the same, or the same,

of the same, or the same, or the same,
of the same, or the same, or the same,

LONDON

of the same, or the same, or the same,
of the same, or the same, or the same,

TO THE RIGHT

Honorable THOMAS, Lord COVEN-

TRY, Baron of *Alisbury*, and Lord Keeper
of the great Seal of *England*, &c.

Most noble Lord,

IT was the devout profession which *S. Austin* once made of himself, when speaking of the great delight which he took in *Cicero's Hortensius*, as containing a most liberall exhortation to the love of Wisdom, without any bias or partiallity towards sects) he affirmeth, that the heat of this his delight, was by this only reason abated; because there was not in that book to be found the Name of *Christ*; without which Name, nothing though otherwise never so polire and elaborate, could wholly possesse those affections, which had been trained to a nobler study. And *Gregory Nazianzen*, that famous Divine, setteth no other price upon all his Athenian learning (wherin he greatly excelled) but only this, that he had something of worth, to esteem as nothing in comparison of *Christ*, herein imitating the example of *S. Paul*, who though he profited in the Jewish Religion above many others, yet when the Son of God was revealed in him, laid it all aside as losse and dung, for the excellency of the know-

Consol. l. 3. c. 4

Orat. 1.


The Epistle Dedicatory.

ledg of *Christ Iesus his Lord*. The consideration of which sacred affections in these Holy men, together with the many experiences of your Lordships abundant favour, hath put into me a boldnes beyond my natural disposition to prefix so great a name before these poor peices of my labors in Gods Church. Other argument in this Book there is none to procure either your Lordships view or patronage, than this one (which that good Father could not find in all the writings of *Plato or Cicero*) that it hath that *High and Holy Person* for the subject thereof, the knowledg of whom is not only our greatest learning, but our eternal Life. In this confidence I have presumed to present unto your Lordship this publick testimony of my most humble duty, & deep obligations for your many thoughts of favour and bounty towards me, not in my self only, but in others, unto whom your Lordships goodness hath vouchsafed under that respect to overflow. *The Lord Iesus, our eternal Melchisedeck*, meet your Lordship in all those honorable affairs which he hath called you unto, with the constant refreshment and benediction of his holy Spirit, and long preserve you a faithful pattern of the Church, which he hath purchased with his own blood, and a worthy Instrument of the Justice, Honour, and Tranquillity of this Kingdom.

Your Lordships most humble servant,

EDWARD REYNOLDS

To the Reader.

HRISTIAN Reader, When I was first perswaded to communicate some of my poor labors to the publick, my purpose was to have added unto those Treatises, which were extant before so much of these which I now present unto thy view, as concerneth the Elogies of the Gospel of Christ, the instrument of begetting the Life of Christ in us: for little reason had I, considering mine owne weaknesse, the frequent returnes of that service wherein these pieces were delivered, and the groaning of the press of late under-writings of this nature, to trouble the world a second time with any more of my slender provisions towards the work of the Sanctuary, in this abundance which is on every side brought in. But finding that work grow up under mine hand into a just Volume, and conceiving that it might be both more acceptable and useful to handle a whole Scripture together (especially being both of so noble nature, and at first view of so difficult a sense, as this Psalm is) than to single out some verse and fragment by it self. I therefore resolved once more to put in my mite in, o the Treasure

To the Reader.

of the Temple, which (though for no other reason) may yet I hope be for this cause accepted, because it beareth the Image and Inscription of Christ upon it. Some passages therein are inserted, which were delivered in another order, and on other Scriptures; and some likewise which were delivered in other places, and on other occasions; which yet being pertinent to the series of the discourse, I thought might justly seeme as natural parts, and not as *ἐκλήμματα*, incoherent and unsuteable pieces. So submitting my poor labours to thy favourable Censure, and commending thee to the Blessing of God, I rest,

EDWARD REYNOLDS.

A Table of the Contents.

	Christ Jesus the sum of Holy Scriptures	Page. 1
	The Ordination of Christ unto his Kingdom	6
	The Qualification of Christ for his Kingdom	7
	The Quality of Christs Kingdom	9
	How the will is drawn unto Christ	11
	Subjection unto the Kingdom of Christ	12
	How Christ is a Lord to his people, and to his fore-fathers	17
	The right hand of God.	22
	Christs sitting at Gods right hand noteth,	ibid
1.	His glorious Exaltation.	23
	All strength from his exciting and assisting Grace.	25
2.	His accomplishing all his works on earth	29
3.	The actual administration of his Kingdom	33
4.	The giving of gifts unto men	34
	The Ark how a type of Christ	35
	How the Spirit was given before Christ, and how after.	37
	The difference { Manner of his Mission. }	39
	Was in the { Subjects to whom he was sent }	
	{ Measure of his grace in regard of { knowledge. }	42
	{ strength }	
	The reason of the Spirits Mission.	
	How the Spirit is a comforter to the Church	43
1.	By being our Advocate, and how	44
2.	By representing Christ absent to the soul	47
3.	By a sweet and fruitful illumination	
4.	By unspeakable and glorious joy	48
	How the Spirit worketh this joy	49
	{ Humbling. }	
	{ Healing. }	
By his acts of	{ Renewing. }	
	{ Preserving. }	
	{ Frustrifying. }	
	{ Sealing. }	
	Enmity against Christ in all his Offices	56
	A 4	Ground.

The Table.

Grounds of misperswasion touching our love to Christ.		
1. The countenance of Princes and publick Laws.		59
2. The Rules of Tradition and education.		60
3. Self-love and furtherance of private ends.		61
4. An historical assurance of his being now in glory.		66
5. A false and erroneous love to his ordinances.		68
True love unto Christ	} Proportion that is in him to our soules. } Propriety that our souls have unto him.	} 69
is groundd on the		
This true love will manifest it self,		
1. In an univrsal extent to any thing of Christ his	} Spirit. } Ordinances. } Members.	} 71
2. In a right manner it is love	} Incorrupt. } Superlative. } Uncommunicated.	} 74
3. In the genuine	} Universal obedience } Chearful sufferings. } Zeale of his glory. } Longing after his apperance.	} 75 76 77
effects thereof.		
The continuance and limitation of Christs Kingdome.		
		77
The stability of the Church	} An unalterable decree } A free gift of God to Christ } A growing nature of its owne	} 79 80 81
Papall Monarchie raised upon inevident presumptions		
		82
The stability of the Church a ground of comfort against the violence of the enemy.		
		89
The present inconsummatenesse of Christs victories over his enemies, with the reasons of it.		
		91
Gods patience hath fixed bounds		
		93
The wicked shall be punished by Gods immediate power		
		98
The easines of Christs victory over his enemies		
		108
The folly of nature to judg of God or our selves by things in the present.		
		110
The punishment of the wicked bringeth order and beauty on the face of the world.		
		113
What it is to be under Christs feet		
		114
Christ suffereth in the sufferings of his Church		
		115
Christs		

The Table.

<i>Christs triumph over his enemies, and the comforts thereof to us.</i>	118
<i>Foot-stoole noteth</i> { <i>Shame.</i>	122
	123
	124
	126
<i>The Gospel with the Spirit is full of power and strength.</i>	135
	137
	140
1. Towards those that	141
are saved, in their	142
	143
	144
	145
	150
2. Towards those that	151
perish in	153
	ibid
	155
<i>The Gospel to be preached with authority.</i>	156
<i>The Gospel to be received in the power thereof.</i>	157
<i>The Gospel only able to hold up in extremities.</i>	158
<i>No acquaintance with God but in the Gospel.</i>	159
<i>The Gospel is not set in vaine</i>	161
<i>The Gospel with the Spirit is full of glory</i>	162
1. In regard of the author of it.	165
<i>The Gospel a myserie unsearchable by humane reason.</i>	167
<i>Contempt of the Gospel preached, is contempt of Christ in his glory.</i>	171
<i>Expect to heare Christ speaking from heaven in his Word</i>	173
2. In the promulgation thereof.	176
<i>Evangelical knowledg the measure of grace.</i>	179
3. In the matters therein contained.	180
<i>His Wisdome, Goodnesse, Power, Grace, Kingdome.</i>	182
<i>Gods glory can no where be looked on with comfort, but in Christ.</i>	184
4. In ends and purposes for which it serveth.	186
<i>To illighten the conscience.</i>	187
<i>To be a ministration of righteousness.</i>	189
	To

The Table.

<i>To be a ministration of life.</i>	190
<i>To be a spiritual judge in the heart.</i>	191
<i>To be an abiding ministration.</i>	192
<i>To ennoble the heart,</i>	195
{ <i>Magnanimity.</i>	196
{ <i>Fortitude.</i>	198
{ <i>Lustre and majesty.</i>	200
{ <i>Liberty and joy.</i>	201
<i>The dispensers of the Gospel are</i> { <i>Liberty.</i>	201
therein to use { <i>Sincerity.</i>	205
<i>The Gospel to be received with all honour and acceptance.</i>	208
<i>And to be adorned in a suitable conversation.</i>	214
<i>We adorn the Gospel of Christ.</i>	
1 <i>When we set it up in our hearts as our only rule.</i>	216
2 <i>When we walk in fitting obedience thereunto.</i>	219
3 <i>When we continue therein.</i>	ibid
4 <i>When we hold it in the unity of the Spirit.</i>	221
5 <i>When we seriously seek the knowledge of Christ and Heaven in it.</i>	222
6 <i>When we make it our only Altar of refuge in trouble.</i>	223
<i>Christ in the ministry of his Gospel is full of care over his Church.</i>	228
<i>This care seen in his Love.</i>	233
<i>Study and inquisitiveness.</i>	ibid
<i>Constancy and continuance.</i>	234
<i>Emptying of himselfe.</i>	235
<i>Laying down his life.</i>	ibid
<i>Grace and Spirit.</i>	236
<i>Preparations for the future</i>	ibid
{ <i>Food.</i>	237
{ <i>Guidance.</i>	ibid
{ <i>Health.</i>	238
{ <i>Comfort.</i>	239
{ <i>Protection.</i>	ibid
<i>The grounds of this care.</i>	
<i>He is our kinsman.</i>	240
<i>He is our companion.</i>	241
<i>He</i>	

The Table.

<i>He is our Head</i>	241
<i>He is our Advocate.</i>	242
<i>He is our Purchaser.</i>	244
<i>A right Judgment of God in Christ doth much strengthen Faith</i>	245
<i>The Gospel is Christs owne strength.</i>	249
<i>Christ then is to be preached, and not our selves,</i>	250
With <i>Authority.</i>	254
With <i>Wisdom.</i>	ibid
With <i>Meeknesse.</i>	256
With <i>Faithfulness.</i>	ibid
<i>Christ preached is to be received</i>	257
With <i>Faith.</i>	ibid
With <i>Love.</i>	259
With <i>Meeknesse.</i>	ibid
<i>Gods ordination gives life and Majestie to his ordinances</i>	260
<i>There is a natural Theology, no natural Christianity.</i>	261
<i>Gods judgments unssearchable in hiding the Gospel from former ages.</i>	262
<i>The Gospel an heavenly invitation unto mercy.</i>	263
<i>The Gospel not to be preached but by those that are sent.</i>	264
Three things requisite to an ordinarie mission. { <i>Gods providence casting upon the meanes.</i>	265
{ <i>Meet qualification of the person sent,</i>	{ <i>Fidelity.</i> ibid
{ <i>Ecclesiastical ordination by imposition of hands.</i>	{ <i>Ability.</i> 268
<i>The Church of the Jews was the chief Metropolitan Church.</i>	269
<i>The calling of the Gentiles to be Daughters of that Mother Church.</i>	271
<i>The Church is the seat of saving truth.</i>	273
<i>The office of the Church concerning holy Scriptures.</i>	275
<i>The stability of the Church, with the grounds thereof.</i>	278
<i>Whether the Church may faile.</i>	281
<i>Whether the Church be alwaies visible.</i>	282
<i>Christs Kingdome is a hated Kingdome.</i>	284
<i>Christ hath enemies there where his Kingdome is set up.</i>	286
<i>Christs Kingdome stronger then all adverse opposition.</i>	287
<i>Christs Kingdome quiet in the midst of enemies.</i>	290
<i>The</i>	

The Table.

<i>The faithful are Christs own people</i>		296
<i>By a right of</i>	<div> <div>Donation.</div> <div>Purchase.</div> <div>Conquest.</div> <div>Covenant.</div> <div>Communion.</div> </div>	<div>ibid</div> <div>297</div> <div>ibid</div> <div>298</div>
<i>We may belong unto Christ by</i>	<div> <div>External profession.</div> <div>Real Implantation</div> </div>	299
<i>Christ bringeth self-evidencing properties into the soul.</i>		300
<i>Christs propriety to us</i>	<div> <div>Caring for us.</div> <div>Purging of us.</div> <div>Sparing of us.</div> <div>Praying for us.</div> <div>Teaching of us.</div> <div>Chastising us in mercy.</div> </div>	<div>303</div> <div>306</div> <div>307</div> <div>308</div>
<i>the ground of his</i>		
<i>Christs people military men.</i>		ibid
<i>Satans wayes and method of assaulting the Church.</i>		309
<i>Christs people are willing and subject unto him.</i>		312
<i>By nature men are utterly unwilling.</i>		ibid
<i>Apt to charge the wayes of God as</i>	<div> <div>Grievous.</div> <div>Unprofitable.</div> <div>Unequal.</div> </div>	<div>313</div> <div>314</div>
<i>The Spirit of bondage compelleth many to unwilling services.</i>		ibid
<i>The power of the Word in natural men, worketh a velleity or incomplete will.</i>		315
<i>Willingnesse in</i>	<div> <div>Evidence and sense of their natural est ate</div> <div>Spiritual illumination of mind</div> <div>Communion and adspiration of the Spirit</div> <div>Apprehension of Gods deare Love</div> <div>Beauty and preciousnesse of heavenly promises.</div> <div>Experiences of peace, comfort & security in Gods wayes</div> <div>Beauty of Holinesse.</div> </div>	<div>320</div> <div>321</div> <div>324</div> <div>325</div> <div>327</div>
<i>Christs people</i>		
<i>wrought by the</i>		
<i>Such as the Will is, such is the service.</i>		
<i>Because the will is the first mover.</i>		328
		<i>Because</i>

The Table.

Because God esteemeth himself most honored thereby.	330
Whether those who are truly Christs people may not have fears, and unwillingness in his service?	330
1 They may have { Suffering Gods wrath. a fear of { Of meddling with his service }	331
2 They may have deadness, weariness, and a mixture of unwillingness in his service,	332
Strength of corruptions.	
Weakness of graces.	
Importunity of temptations.	
From the { Weight of some fresh sin.	333, 334
{ Spiritual desertions.	
3 Yet still their wills are sincerely carried towards God.	335
Christs people are made willing to obey him by an act of power.	337
The ground hereof is the universal selfishness, and reluctance of the will naturally against grace.	344
The more earnest should we be to serve Christ when we are his.	347
Holiness a glorious, and beautiful thing.	349
Author of it.	351
Nature of it.	352
In regard of the { Properties of it, { Rectitude. ? { Harmony. } { Maturity. } { Indeficiency.	354 356 357
Operation of it.	357
All Christs people are Priests unto God.	359
Holiness the character of Christs subjects.	359
None willing to come to Christ, till they see beauty in his service.	363
Multitudes born unto Christ by the Gospel.	365
Whether universality and visible pomp be a note of the Church.	369
All Christ subjects are with all his children.	374
And should expresse the affliction of children.	376
The birth of a Christian is a heavenly work.	377
Therefore the seed must be received with Heavenly affections.	379
Therefore we must look unto God in his Ordinances.	380
The birth of a Christian a secret, and undiscovered work.	380
	Th

The Table.

<i>The Birth of a Christian is a sudden Birth.</i>	381
<i>How the Lord sweareth.</i>	384
<i>Why the Lord confirmed the Priesthood of Christ by an oath,</i>	385
<i>Christ's solemn Ordination unto the office of a Priest.</i>	387
<i>Which is the foundation of all the Churches comfort,</i>	388.
	<i>Fidelity.</i> 390
	<i>Mercy.</i> 391
	<i>Power.</i> <i>ibid.</i>
<i>in regard of Christ's</i>	<i>Propriety.</i> <i>ibid.</i>
	<i>Sympathy.</i> 393
	<i>Consanguinity.</i> <i>ibid.</i>
<i>How God is said to repent.</i>	393
<i>Whether God hath repented him of the Law.</i>	395
<i>Why the Covenant of Grace is immutable.</i>	398
<i>What a Priest is.</i>	402
<i>Grounds tending to discover the necessity of a Priest for man.</i>	403
<i>A discovery of that necessity,</i>	408
<i>With the Application thereof.</i>	411
<i>Qualifications of the person which was to be our Priest.</i>	416
	<i>a Mediator,</i> 417
	<i>a Surety,</i> 418
<i>He was to be</i>	<i>a Sacrifice,</i> <i>ibid.</i>
	<i>an Altar,</i> 419
	<i>all in the unity of one Person.</i> 420
<i>Wherein the acts of Christ's Priesthood consisted,</i>	
	<i>namely, { Oblation. } 424</i>
	<i>{ Intercession. }</i>
<i>Christ's will made his death a Sacrifice.</i>	425
<i>Christ's Intercession appearing in Heaven for us.</i>	428
<i>Christ's death did merit, and his life confer Redemption.</i>	429
<i>Wherein Christ's Intercession consisteth.</i>	432
<i>No Mediators of Intercession.</i>	433
<i>The great benefits which came to us by Christ's Intercession.</i>	434
<i>What is the fruit and virtue of Christ's Priesthood.</i>	
	<i>namely, { Satisfaction for our debt, } 438</i>
	<i>{ Acquisition of our inheritance. }</i>
	<i>An</i>

The Table.

<i>An Explication of the Doctrine of Justification by righteousness imputed.</i>	440
<i>How Christ being innocent, might justly suffer the punishment of our sins.</i>	444
1 God may cast pains upon an innocent person.	445
2 It is not against generall Equity for one to suffer anothers sin.	446
3 This Equity in the present case is, that all parties	
are both { <i>Willing and Glorified.</i> }	446
4 In the innocent person thus suffering as a sacrifice for the no- cent is required,	
1 An intimate conjunction with him that is no- cent.	447
2 A full dominion over that from which in suffering he partieih.	448
3 A strength to break through the sufferings.	449
<i>How sin thus punished, may be said to be pardoned.</i>	449
<i>A double use of the Doctrine of Righteousnesse</i>	
imputed { <i>Self-deniall. Confidence.</i> }	450 452
<i>Redundancy of Christs merit,</i>	455
{ <i>Immunity from evils.</i>	
{ <i>Priviledg of union with him,</i>	
<i>purchasing for us</i> {	
whence our { <i>Union, Adoption, Exaltation.</i> }	456
<i>Duties growing out of the consideration of Christs Priesthood</i>	457
<i>Of Melchisedec his Person; Order, Bread and Wine, Benediction, Tithes,</i>	
<i>Genealogy.</i>	461
<i>Christ is a King of Righteousnesse.</i>	465
<i>Christ is a King of Canaanites.</i>	467
<i>Where Christ is a King of Righteousnesse, he is a King of Peace.</i>	469
<i>Christs forwardnesse to meet and to blesse his people.</i>	471
<i>Christ</i>	

The Table.

<i>Christ's comforter, and refresher of his People.</i>	472
<i>Christ a Receiver of Homage and Tribute.</i>	473
<i>Liberal maintenance due unto the Ministers of the Gospel.</i>	475
<i>Christ's Priesthood is everlasting.</i>	482
<i>VVhy the Lord is said to be at the right hand of his Church.</i>	485
<i>Christ's enemies Kings.</i>	487
<i>All praise and honour to be given unto God for the Power and Office of Christ.</i>	489
<i>Christ is present and prepared to defend his People from their enemies.</i>	491
<i>Christ in his appointed time will utterly overthrow his greatest Enemies.</i>	493
<i>Satans enmity in</i> } <i>Tempting.</i>	494
<i>Accusing.</i>	495
<i>How the Spirit of Judgment overcometh corruptions.</i>	495
<i>How Christ overcometh his potent adversaries in the world.</i>	498
<i>There is a constituted time wherein Christ will be avenged of his enemies.</i>	502
1. <i>When sin is grown to its fulnesse.</i>	503
<i>which is known by its</i> } <i>Univerſality,</i>	504
<i>Impudence,</i>	
<i>Obſtinacy.</i>	
2. <i>When the Church is thoroughly humbled and purged.</i>	506
3. <i>When all humane hopes and expectations are gone.</i>	506
<i>Christ's victories are by way of pleading and disceptation.</i>	509
<i>A torrent of curses between man and Salvation.</i>	515
<i>The necessity of Christ's Sufferings.</i>	522
<i>The greatnesse and Nature of Christ's Sufferings.</i>	521. 522.
<i>The Power and vertue of Christ's resurrection.</i>	524

AN
EXPOSITION
OF THE
HUNDRETH & TENTH
PSALME.

PSALME 110. vers. 1.

*The Lord said unto my Lord, sit thou
at my right hand ; untill I make
thine enemies thy foot-stool.*



CHRIST JESUS the Lord is
the Summe and Center of all
divine revealed Truth , neither
is any thing to be preached
unto men , as an object of
their faith , or necessarie ele-
ment of their salvation , which
doth not , some way or other,
either meet in him, or refer unto him. All Truths, especially
divine, are of a noble and pretious nature ; and therefore
whatsoever misteries of his Counsel God hath been pleased
in his Word to reveale, the Church is bound in her mini-
stery to declare unto men. And Saint Paul professeth

B

his

VERSE 1

ACT. 20. 27.

1 Cor. 2. 1. 2.

2 Cor. 4. 1. 2.

Eph. 4. 20.

Totum Christiani

nominis pondus

et fructus dñors

Christi. Tertul.

2 Cor. 3. 6. 14

Heb. 1. 1.

a Quid est quod

dicitur Testa.

mentum vñtus,

nisi realitatio n-

vis? quid aliud

quod dicitur no-

vum nisi veteris

Revelatio. Aug.

De Civ. Dei. 16

c. 26. hoc occul-

tabatur in vete-

ri Testamento

pro temporũ dis-

pensatione iusti-

ssima quod reve-

latur in novo. Id.

De Pec. merit.

Et remissi. 1. 1. c.

11. Et Tom. 4. de

Catec. rud. c. 4.

vñm & vñalita-

tem & vñalita-

tem & vñalita-

tem & vñalita-

tem & vñalita-

tem & vñalita-

tem & vñalita-

tem & vñalita-

tem & vñalita-

tem & vñalita-

tem & vñalita-

tem & vñalita-

tem & vñalita-

tem & vñalita-

tem & vñalita-

tem & vñalita-

tem & vñalita-

tem & vñalita-

tem & vñalita-

tem & vñalita-

tem & vñalita-

his faithfulness therein, I have not shunned to declare unto you all the Counsell of God. But yet all this Counsell (which else where hee calls μαρτυριον & the testimony of God) hee gathers together into this one conclusion, I determined not to know any thing amongst you, that is, in my preaching unto you to make discovery of any other knowledge, as matter of consequence or faith, but onely of Iesus Christ, and him crucified. And therefore preaching of the word is called preaching of Christ, and Ministers of the Word, Ministers of Christ, and learning of the Word, Learning of Christ, because our Faith, our Workes, and our Worship (which are the three essentiall elements of a Christian, the whole dutie of man, and the whole will of God) have all their foundation, growth, end and vertue, onely in and from Christ crucified. There is no fruit, we ght. nor value in a Christian title, but onely in and from the death of Christ.

The word in generall is divided into the Old and New Testament, both which are the a same in substance, though different in the manner of the dispensations, as Moses veild, differ'd from himsele anveild. Now that Christ is the substance of the whole New Testament, containing the Historie, Doctrine, and Prophecies of him in the Administration of the latter ages of the Church, is very manifest to all. The old Scriptures are againe divided into the Law and Prophets (for the Historically parts of them doe containe either typicall prefigurations of the Evangelicall Church, or inductions and exemplary demonstrations of the generall truth of Gods Justice and promises, which are set forth by way of Doctrine and Precept in the Law and Prophets.) Now Christ is the summe of both these, they waited upon him in his transfiguration, to note that in him they had their accomplishment. First for the Law, hee is the substance of it, hee brought Grace to fulfill the exactions, and Truth to make good the prefigurations of the whole Law, The cere-

manial

Christ the Sum of the Scriptures.

3

VERSE I.

monial Law he fulfilled and abolished; the *morall Law* he fulfilled and established; that his obedience thereunto might be the ground of our *righteousnesse*, and his Spirit and Grace therewith might be the ground of our *Obedience*: And therefore it is called *the Law of Christ*. 3. For *the Prophets*, hee is the Summe of them too, for to him they give all witness. Hee is the *Author* of their Prophecies, they spake by his Spirit; and he is the *Object* of their Prophecies, they spake of the Grace and Salvation which was to come by him. So that the whole Scriptures are nothing else but a testimony of *Christ*, and faith in him, of that absolute and universall necessity which is laid upon all the world to beleve in his Name. It is not onely *necessitas praecepti*, because we are thereunto commanded, but *necessitas medii* too, because he is the onely Ladder between Earth and Heaven, the alone Mediator between God and Man, in him there is a signall and unabolishable covenant established, and *there is no name but his under Heaven by which a man can be saved*.

Gal. 6. 2.
Act. 40. 43.
1 Pet. 1. 10. 11.
Ioh. 5. 39.

1 Ioh. 3. 7.

Act. 12.

In consideration of all which, and for that I have formerly discovered the *Insufficiency* of any either inward, or outward principle of mans happinesse, save onely the *Life of Christ*, I have chosen to speake upon this Psalme, and out of it to discover those waies, whereby the *Life of Christ* is dispenced and administred towards his Church: For this Psalme is one of the fullest and most compendious prophecies of the Person and Offices of *Christ* in the whole Old Testament, and so full of fundamentall truth, that I shall not shunne to call it *Symbolum Davidicum*, the Prophet *David's Creed*. And indeed there are very few, if any of the Articles of that Creed, which we all generally professe, which are not either plainly expressed, or by most evident implication conched in this little modell. First, the *Dollrine of the Trinitie* is in the first words; *The Lord said unto my Lord*. There is *Iehovah the Father*, and *My Lord*; the Son, and the

VERSE I.

consecrating of him to be *Dauids Lord*, which was by the *Holy Ghost*; by whose fulness he was anointed unto the Offices of King and Priest, for so our Saviour himselfe expounds this word *Said*, by the sealing and sanctification of him to his office. *Iohn. 10. 34. 35. 36.* When we have the *Incarnation of Christ*, in the word, *My Lord*, together with his dignity and honour above *David* (as our Saviour himselfe expounds it, *Matth. 22. 42. 45.*) *Mine*, that is, my Sonne by descent in Genealogy after the flesh, and yet my Lord too, in regard of a higher Son-ship. Wee have also the *Sufferings of Christ*, in that he was consecrated a Priest, v. 4, to offer up himselfe once for all, and so to drinke of the brooke in the way. VVe have his *Election* and conquest over all his enemies, and sufferings, his *Resurrection*, he shall lift up his head, his *Ascension* and *Intercession*, sit thou on my right hand. And in that is comprised his *Descent* into Hell by *S. Pauls* way of arguing. *That he ascended, what is it but that hee descended first into the lower parts of the Earth?* *Eph. 4. 9.* VVe have a *Holy Catholicks Church* gathered together by the Scepter of his Kingdome, and holding in the parts thereof a blessed, and beautifull *Communion of Saints*, *The Lord shall send forth the Rod of thy strength out of Sion? Rule thou in the midst of thine enemies. Thy people shall be willing in the day of thy Power in the beauties of holinesse, from the wombe of the morning, thou hast the dew of thy youth.* VVe have the last *Iudgment*, for all his enemies must bee put under his feet, (which is the *Apostles* argument to prove the end of all things, *1 Cor. 15. 25.*) and there is the day of his *Wrath*, wherein he shall accomplish that judgment over the heathen, and that victory over the Kings of the earth, (who take counsell and Bandy themselves against him,) which he doth here in his *VVord* beginn. VVe have the *Remission of sinnes*, comprised in his *Priest-hood*, for hee was to offer *Sacrifice* for the remission of sinnes, and to put away sinne by the *Sacrifice of himselfe*, *Eph. 1. 7. Heb. 9. 26.*
VVe

Sir The Analysis of the Psalm.

5

We have the *Resurrection of the body*, because he must subdue all his enemies under his feet, and the last enemy to be subdued is death, as the Apostle argues out of this Psalm, 1 Cor. 15. 25, 26. And lastly, we have *life everlasting*, in the everlasting merit and vertue of his Priesthood; Thou art a Priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec: and in his sitting at the right hand of God, whither he is gone as our fore-runner, and to prepare a place for us, Heb. 6. 20. *John. 14. 2.* And therefore the Apostle from his sitting there, and living ever, inferreth the perfection and certainty of our salvation, Rom. 6. 8. 11. Rom. 8. 17. Ephes. 2. 6. Col. 3. 1, 2, 3, 4. 1 Cor. 15. 49. Phil. 3. 20, 21. 1 Thess. 4. 14. Heb. 7. 25. 1 John 3. 2.

VERSE 1

The Sum then of the whole Psalm, (without any curious or artificial Analysis, wherein every man according to his own conceit and method, will vary from other) is this; *The ordination of Christ unto his Kingdom*, together with the dignity and vertue thereof, ver. 1. *The Scepter or Instrument of that kingly power*, ver. 2. *The strength and successe of both*, in recovering, maugre all the malice of enemies, a Kingdome of willing subjects, and those in multitudes unto himselfe, vers. 2. 3. *The Consecration of him unto that everlasting Priesthood*, by the vertue and merit whereof he purchased this Kingdome to himselfe, vers. 4. *The Conquest over all his strongest*, and most numerous adversaries, vers. 5, 6. *The prooffe of all*, and the way of effecting it, in his sufferings and exaltation. He shall gather a Church, and he shall confound his enemies, because for that end he hath finished, and broken through all the sufferings which he was to drink of, and hath lifted up his head again.

VERSE 1.

The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit thou at my right hand, untill I make thine enemies thy foot-stool.

Here the Holy Ghost begins with the Kingdom of Christ, which he describeth and magnifieth; By his

VERSE I.

Ainsworth.

unction and obſignation thereunto, The Word or Decree of his Father, *The Lord ſaid.* 2. By the Greatneſſe of his perſon in himſelfe, and yet neereneſſe in blood and nature unto us, *My Lord.* 3. By the Glory, power and heavelineſſe of this his Kingdom, for in the adminiſtration thereof he ſitteth at the right hand of his Father, *Sit thou at my right hand.* 4. By the continuance and victories thereof, *Untill I make thy foes thy foot-ſtoole.*

The Lord ſaid. Some read it, certainly or aſſuredly ſaid, by reaſon of the affinity which the original word hath with *Amen* (from which it differs only in the tranſpoſition of the ſame radical letters.) Which would afford this obſervation by the way; *That all which God ſays of or to his Son is very faithful and true.* For which cauſe the Goſpel is by ſpecial Emphaſis called, *The Word of Truth*, *Ephes. 1. 13.* and *πιστός λόγος*, *A faithful ſaying*, *Worthy of all acceptation*, *1 Tim. 1. 15.* Or moſt worthy to be believed and embraced. (For ſo the word *πιστός* and *λαμπύριον*, being applied unto the Goſpel, ſignifie. *Joh. 1. 12.* *Joh. 3. 33.* *Aſt. 17. 11.* Being oppoſite unto *ἀπρόβητος* & *λόγος*, *Acts 13. 46.*)

But the principal thing here to be noted is, the Decree, appointment, ſanctification, and ſealing of Chriſt unto his Regal Office. For the Word of God in the Scripture ſignifies his Bleſſing, Power, Pleaſure, Ordination: *Man liveth not by bread alone, but by every word which proceedeth out of the mouth of God, Mat. 4. 4.* That is, by that command which the Creatures have received from God to nourish by, that Benediction and Sanctification which maketh every Creature of God good unto us, *1 Tim. 4. 5.* Gods ſaying is ever doing ſomething; his words are operative, and carry an unction and authority along with them.

Whence we may note, *That Chriſts Kingdome belongs to him not by uſurpation, intruſion, or violence, but legality, by order, decree, inveſtiture from his Father.* All Kings raigne

raigne by Gods providence, but not alwayes by his approbation. *They have set up Kings, but not by me; they have made Princes, and I knew it not, Amos 8.4.* But Christ is a King both by the Providence, and by the Good will and immediate Consecration of his Father. *He loveth him, and hath given all things into his hand, Joh. 3.35. He judgeth no man, but hath committed all judgment to his Son. Joh. 5.22.* That is, hath entrusted him with the oeconomy and actual administration of that power in the Church, which originally belonged unto himselfe. *He hath made him to be Lord and Christ, Acts 2. 36. He hath ordained him to be Judge of quicke and dead, Acts 10. 42. He hath appointed him over his own house, Heb. 3.2,6. He hath crowned him and put all things in subjection under his feet, Heb. 2. 7,8. He hath highly exalted him, and given him a name above every name, Phil.2.9.* Therefore he calleth him *My King*, set up by him upon his owne holy hill, and that in the vertue of a solemne Decree, *Psalme 2. 6,7.*

But we must here distinguish between *Regnum naturale*, Christs natural Kingdome, which belongeth unto him as God coessential, and coeternal with his Father: and *Regnum economicum*, his Dispensatory Kingdome, as he is Christ the Mediator, which was his, not by Nature, but by Donation and unction from his Father, that he might be the Head of his church, a Prince of Peace, and a King of Righteousnesse unto his people. In which respect he had conferr'd upon him all such meet qualifications as might fit him for the dispensation of this Kingdome. 1. God prepared him a *Body* of a *Humane nature*, and by the grace of personal and Hypostatical union caused the Godhead to dwell bodily in him, *Col. 2.9.* 2. He anointed him with a *fulnesse of his Spirit*, not such a fulnesse as *John Baptist* and *Stephen* had, *Luk. 1. 15. Act. 7. 55*, which was still *to receive*, the fulnes of a measure or vessel, a fulnesse for themselves only, *Ephes. 4. 7.*

VERSE I

Tertul. Apolog. cap 30. Es ad Scapulum cap. 5. Dan. 7. 14 Mar. 11. 27 John 17. 2

Heb. 10. 5

VERSE I.

1 *Cor.* 12. 11. *Rom.* 12. 3. But a fulnesse without measure, like the fulnesse of light in the Sun, or water in the Sea, which hath an unsearchable sufficiency and redundancy for the whole Church, *John* 3. 34. *Ephes.* 3. 8. *Mal.* 4. 2. so that as he was furnished with all Spiritual Endowments of Wisdom, Judgment, Power, Love, Holinesse, for the dispensation of his own Office, *Esa.* 11. 2. & 61. 1. So from his fulnesse d'd there run over a share and portion of all his Graces unto his Church, *John* 1. 16. *Col.* 2. 19. 3. He did by a solemn and publick promulgation proclaime the Kingdom of Christ unto the Church and declare the Decree, in that Heavenly voice which came unto him from the excellent glory, *This is my beloved Son in Whom I am well pleased, heare ye him,* *Psal.* 2. 7. *Mat.* 3. 17. & 17. 5. 2 *Pet.* 1. 17. 4. He hath given him a Scepter of Righteousnesse, and hath put a sword in his mouth, and a rod of iron in his hand, made him a Preacher and an Apottle, to reveale the secrets of his bosome, and to testifie the things which he hath seene and heard, *Heb.* 1. 8. *Rev.* 1. 16 & 2. 16. *Psal.* 2. 9. *Esay* 16 1. *Heb.* 3. 1. *John* 1. 18. *John* 3. 12, 12. 32. 34. 5. He hath honoured him with many Ambassadors and Servants, to negotiate the affaires of his Kingdome, some Apostles, and some Prophets, and some Evangelists, and some Pastors and Teachers, for the perfecting of the Saints, for the work of the Ministry, and for the Edifying of his Body, 2 *Cor.* 5. 20. *Ephes.* 4. 11, 12. 6. He hath given him the Souldes and Consciences of men, even to the uttermost parts of the earth for his possession, and for the territories of his Kingdome, *Psal.* 2. 8. *John* 17. 6. 7. He hath given him a power concerning the Lawes of his Church. A power to make Lawes, the Law of Faith, (as *S. Paul* calls it, *Rom.* 3. 27.) *Mark* 16. 15, 16. A power to expound Lawes, as the Moral Law, *Mat.* 5. A power to abrogate Lawes, as the Law of Ordinances, *Col.* 2. 14. 8. He hath given him a power of Judging and condemn-

ning

The quality of Christs Kingdom.

9

VERSE I.

ning enemies, *John 5. 27. Luke 19. 27.* Lastly, he hath given him a power of remitting sins, and sealing pardons, which is a royal prerogative, *Matth. 9. 6. John 20. 23.* And these things belong unto him as he is *God*, as well Man as God, *John 5. 27.* For the workes of Christs mediation were of two sorts; *Opera Ministris*, works of Service, and Ministry; for he tooke upon himselfe the forme of a Servant, and was a Minister of the Circumcision, *Phil. 2. 8. Rom. 15. 8.* And *Opera Potestatis*, works of Authority and Governement in the Church: *All power is given unto me in Heaven and Earth, Mat. 28. 18.*

The Quality of this Kingdome is not Temporal or Secular, over the natural lives or civil negotiations of men; He came not to be ministred unto, but to minister; his Kingdom was not of this World, he disclaimed any civil power in the distribution of lands and possessions, he withdrew himselfe from the people, when by force they would have made him a King, and himselfe (that in this point he might give none offence) payed tribute unto *Cesar*, *Mat. 20. 28. Joh. 18. 36. Luk. 12. 13. 14. Joh. 6. 15. Mar. 17. 27.* But his Kingdome is Spiritual and Heavenly, over the soules of men, to binde and loose the Conscience, to remit and retaine sins, to awe and overrule the hearts, to captivate the affections, to bring in to obedience the thoughts, to subdue and pull down strong holds, to breake in pieces his enemies with an iron rod, to hew and slay them with the Word of his mouth, to implant fearefulnesse and astonishment in the hearts of hypocrites, and to give peace, security, protection and assurance to his people.

The way whereby he enters upon his Kingdome is ever by way of Conquest. For though the Soules of the Elect are his, yet his enemies have the first possession; as *Canaan* was *Abrahams* by Promise; but his seed by Victory. Not but that Christ proclaimes peace first, but because

VERSE I.

cause men will not come over nor submit to him without war. The strong man will not yeild to be utterly spoyled and crucified upon termes of peace.

Hence then we may first learne the great Authority and Power of this King, who holds his Crown by immediate tenure from Heaven, and was after a more excellent manner than any other Kings, thereunto decreed and anointed by God himselfe. Much then are they to blame, who finde out wayes to diminish the Kingdome of Christ, and boldly affirme, that though a King he could not but be, yet he might have beene a King without a Kingdome, a King in personal right, without Subjects or Territories, to exercise his regal power in; A King only to punish enemies, but not a King to governe or to feed a People. But shall God give his Son the uttermost parts of the earth for his possession, and shall men withhold it? shall God give men unto Christ (*Thine they were, and thou gavest them unto me, John 17. 6.*) and shall they detaine themselves from him? what is it that he gives unto his Son but the soules, the hearts, the very thoughts of men to be made obedient unto his Scepter? 2 Cor. 10. 5. and shall it then be within the compasse of humane power to effect, as it is in their pride to maintaine, *fieri possent nulla sit Ecclesia?* We know one principal part of the Kingdome and power of Christ is to cast down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth it selfe against the knowledge of God, and that not only unto conviction, but unto obedience, as the Apostle shewes: to send such gifts of the Spirit unto men as should benefit the very Rebellious, that God might dwell amongst them, *Psalm. 68. 18.* for in as much as Christ came to destroy the Works of the Diuel, that is, Sin, (as the Apostle shews, 1 Joh. 3. 8. Joh. 8. 41. 44.) and in their place to bring in the Work of God, which is Faith in him (for, so that Grace is frequently styled, *John 6. 29. Phil. 1. 29. Col. 2. 12.*) Therefore it is requisite that none
of

Christ compels not Mans Will.

II

of Satans instruments, and confederates, such as the hearts of natural men are, should be too strong for the Grace of Christ.

VERSE I.

But what then? doth Christ compel men against their wills to become subject unto him? No, in no wise. He hath ordered to bring them in by a way of voluntarinesse and obedience. And herein is the wisdom of his power seen, That his grace shall mightily produce those effects in men, which their hearts shall most obediently and willingly consent unto; that he is able to use the proper and genuine motions of second causes, to the producing of his own most Holy, Wise, and Merciful purposes. As we see humane wisdom can so order, moderate, and make use of Natural motions, that by them artificiall effects shal be produced; as in a clocke, the natural motion of the weight or plummet, causeth the artificiall distribution of houres, and minutes; and in a mill, the natural motion of the winde or water, causeth an artificiall effect in grinding the Corn: How much more then shall the wisdom of Almighty God, whose weaknesse is stronger, and whose foolishnesse is wiser than men, be able so to use, incline and order the wills of men, without destroying either them or their liberty, as that thereby the Kingdome of his Son shall be set up amongst them? so that though there be still an habitual, radical, fundamental indetermination and indifferency unto several wayes (unto none of which there can be a compulsion) yet by *this secret, ineffable, and most sweet operation of the Spirit of Grace*, opening the eyes, convincing the judgment, perswading the affections, enclining the heart, giving an understanding, quickning, and knocking at the conscience, a man shall bee swayed unto the *obedience of Christ*, and shall come unto him so *certainly* as if he were *drawn*; and yet so *freely* as if he were left unto himselfe. For in the calling of men by the word there is a *Trahere*, and a *Venire*. The Father

draw-

Illud nescio quo modo dicatur, frustra Deum misereri nisi vos velimus: si enim Deus miseretur, etiam volumus; Ad eandem quippe misericordiam pertinet ut velimus, Aug. Tom. 4. Ad Simplicianum, lib. 1. q. 2. Agit omnipotens in cordibus hominum etiam motum voluntatis eorum, ut per eos agat, quod per eos agere ipse voluerit. Id. de Grat. et lib. Arb. c. 21.

2 Cor. 4.6.
Ephes. 1. 17, 18
Acts 26. 18
1 John 2. 27
John 16. 8
Gen. 9. 27
Acts 16. 14
Jer. 31. 18, 33
Ezek. 36. 26, 27
1 John 5. 20
Psa. 119. 34, 36

VERSE VI.

*Nolite cogitare
inuisum erabi,
stabitur animus
ex amore, Aug.
Tract. 26. in Jo-
han.*

Plal. 2. 12

*Ἀλλήλους φιλή-
μασι ἀσπαζέ-
σθαι πᾶς ἀλλή-
λους ὡς ἐν ἑαυ-
τοῖς, Just. Martyr. A-
pol. 2.*

*Osculum pacis,
Orationis signu-
culum, qua ora-
tio cum divortio
sancti osculi in-
tegra? etc.*

Ter. de Orat.

Act. 3. 16

draweth, and the man cometh, John 6. 44. That notes the efficacy of Grace, and this the Sweetness of Grace. Grace worketh strongly, and therefore God is said To Draw: and it worketh sweetly too, and therefore man is said to Come.

Againe, from hence we learne our Duty unto this King, the honour and subjection which is due unto him: The Father committeth all Judgement to the Sonne, that is, hath anointed him with the Office, and abilities of a King (for judgement stands for the whole duty of a King, Psal. 72. 1. and is there frequently attributed unto the Messias, Esai. 42. 1. 4. Jer. 23. 5. Jer. 33. 15.) And from thence our Saviour infers, that all men should honour the Sonne, even as they honour the Father, John 2. 22. 23. with the same worship, reverence and subjection. For God hath highly exalted him, and given him a name above every name, That at the Name of Jesus, that is, unto that holy thing, unto the Power and Scepter of that Divine Person, which is unto us so comfortably manifested in a name of salvation, Every knee should bow, &c. Phil. 2. 9, 10. This Duty the Psalmist expresseth by Kissing the Sonne. Which denoteth unto us three things: 1. Love. For a kisse is a symbole and expression of love, and therefore used by the Primitive Christians in their Feasts of Love, and after prayer unto God; and oftentimes enjoyed by Saint Paul, as an expression of Christian Love. In so much that it was a proverbial speech amongst the Heathen, See how these Christians do love one another. And this is a Duty which the Apostle requires, under paine of the extremest curse that can light upon a man, to love the Lord Jesus Christ, 1 Cor. 16. 22. Eph. 6. 24. And if any man, saith our Saviour loveth Father or Mother more than Me, he is not worthy of Me; or Son or Daughter more than Me, he is not worthy of Me, Mat. 10. 37. That is, he is utterly unqualified for the benefit of my mediation. For he that hath good by me cannot

Honour and subjection due to Christ.

13

cannot choose but love me, *Luk. 7. 47.* To kisse in the Scripture phrase noteth* *Worship and Service.* Let the men that sacrifice kisse the Calves, *Hof. 13. 2. Iob. 31. 26, 27* And thus wee finde the foure beasts, and the foure and twenty Elders, and every Creature in Heaven and on Earth, and under the Earth, worshipping the Lamb, and ascribing blessing, honour, glory and power unto him, *Revel. 5. 8. 13. 3.* To kisse is an expression of *Loialty and Obedience*, thus *Samuel* kissed *Saul* when he had anointed him king over *Israel*, *1 Sam. 10. 1.* And therefore the * *Septuagint*; and *Hierom*, and from them our Translators, render the word which signifieth to kisse, by being obedient or ruled by the words of *Ioseph*, *Gen. 41. 40.* And this likewise is a duty which we owe unto Christ to bee obedient to him, to bee ruled by his mouth, and by the Scepter of his mouth, that is, by his Word, which is therefore called the *Law of Christ*, because it hath a binding power in it. Wee are commanded from Heaven to heare him, *Matth. 17. 5.* And that too under paine of a curse, every soul which will not heare that Prophet, shall be destroyed from among the people, *Act. 3. 22.*

Wee should learne therefore to take his Commands as from God, for he speaketh his Fatheres Words, and in his Name, *Deut. 18. 19. Iob. 3. 34.* When *Ahasuerus* commanded *Haman* to put on the Crowne upon *Mordcai*, hee presently executed the Kings pleasure, and honored his greatest enemy, because the King required it: Now God hath made Christ our King, and hath crowned him with Honour and Majestie (as the Apostle speakes) and requires of us to kisse this his Son, and to bow unto his Name; and therefore be we what wee will, Princes, or Judges, or great men of the World, (who rejoyce in nothing more than in the name of wisdome) this is our Wisdome, and duty, *Psal. 2. 10. 12.* It is too ordinary with great men to bee regardlesse of God and of his waies, Yet we see the wrath of God

VERSE 1.

* *Affectione*.
ca'estia adoram
di ad solis ortu
labia vibrat.
Tertull. Apolog
Cap. 16. Caeli
simul acro Sera
pidis denotato,
u' u'gu' super
nitissus solet,
manum ori ad
mouens, osculum
labiis preffit.
vinut. Felix, in
Ollavio. In ad
rando dextram
ad osculum re
ferimus. Plin.
lib. 28. cap. 2.
ινδλ ωερω
ωνλα τ ηλιν
u' u' u' u' u' u'
τω ηειεη ηι
u' u' u' u' u'
Luc. Lucian. de
Sa'uatione.
* *στανύστωαι*.
Ad tui oris im
perium cunctus
populus obediēt.
Hieron.

V. 2. 3. 4. 5.

in his Creatures, fire, tempest, pestilence, sword, sickness, makes no distinction between them and others, how much lesse will God himselfe make, when a Crowne, and Scepters, and Dignities shall bee resigned to him, and all men shall stand in aniequall distance and condition before the Tribunal of Christ, when no titles of honour, no eminency of station, no treasures of wealth, no strength of dependencies, no retinue and traine of servants will accompany a man into the presence of the Lamb, or stand between him and the judgment of that great day. Wee know he was a King that feared the presence of a persecuted Prophet, and he was a Prince that trembled at the preaching of an Apostle in chains. The word of God cannot be bound, nor limited, it is the Scepter which his Father hath given him, and we cannot without open contestation against God resist his government therein over us. *He that despiseth you despiseth me, and he that despiseth me, despiseth him that sent mee*, saith our Saviour. It is Christ himselfe whose Ambassadors we are, and with whom men have to doe in our Ministerie. And hee will have it so: First, *For our Peace*: If God should speake againe by the Ministry of Angels, in thunder, and fire (as he did on mount Sina) wee would quake all for Moses and Ministers againe; *Exod. 20. 19.* Secondly, *For his owne Glory*, that the Excellency may be of God and not of men, *2 Cor. 4. 7.* That it may not be in him that planteth, nor in him that watereth, but in God which giveth the blessing and increase, *1 Cor. 3. 7.* That it may not bee in him which willet, nor in him which runneth, but in God which sheweth mercy, *Rom. 9. 16.* That the Service, Cooperation, and helpe of the Churches joy might bee ours, but the Dominion over mens faith, and the teaching of their inner man might be Christs, *2 Cor. 1. 14. Eph. 4. 20. 21.* Very bold therefore and desperate is the contumacy of those men who stand at defiance with the Power of Christ speaking in his

Subjection due unto Christ.

15

VERSE 1.

his servants. The Apostle saith, there is no escape left for those who neglect so great salvation, *Heb. 2. 3.* And yet this is the constant folly and cry of naturall men, *We will not have this man to reigne over us. Let us breake their bands asunder, and cast away their cords from us.*

But first, every man must bee subject to some King, either Christ or sin; (for they two divide the World) and their Kingdomes will not consist. And the subjects of sin are all slaves and servants, no liberty amongst them, *Iob 8. 34.* Whereas Christ makes all his subjects Kings like himselfe, *Revel. 1. 6.* and his is a Kingdome of Righteousnesse, Peace, and Joy, *Rom. 14. 17.* Secondly, If men by being the subjects of sin could keepe quite out from the Judgement and Scepter of Christ, it were something; but all men must one way or other bee subdued unto him, either as sonnes or as captives, either under his grace, or under his wrath. *As I thus saith the Lord, every knee shall bow to me, Rom. 14. 10, 11.* Hee must bee either a saviour of life or of death, either for the rising or the fall of many in Israel, either for a sanctuary, or for a stumbling block. All must either bee saved by him, or judged by him. There is no refuge, nor shelter of escape in any Angle of the World, for his Kingdome reacheth to the uttermost corners of the Earth; and will finde out, and fetch in all his enemies. Thirdly, the matter were not great, if a man could hold out in the opposition. But can thine heart endure, or thine hands bee strong, saith the Lord in the day that I shall deale with thee? *Ezek. 23. 14.* What will yee doe in the desolation which shall come from farre? when you are spoiled what will yee doe? where will you leave your glory? what will become of the King whom yee served before? It may bee thy money is thine idoll, and thou art held in chaine under thine owne possessions. But what will remaine of a mans silver and gold to carry him through the wrath to come, but onely the rust thereof to joyne

*Eris sub pedibus
aut adoptatus
aut victus; lo-
cum habebis vel
gratia vel pane
Aug.*

2 Cor. 2. 16:

Luk. 2. 34.

Esaï 8: 14

Esaï. 10. 3.

Ierc. 4. 30

VERSE I:

in judgement against him? It may bee thou servest the times, and fashions of the world, rejoycest in thy youth, in the waies, of thy heart, and in the sight of thine eyes: But thou must not rise out of thy Grave in thy best cloaths, nor appeare before Christ like *Agag* Gorgeously apparelled. Thou must not rise to play, but to be judged. It may bee thou servest thine owne lust, and anothers beauty; but what pleasure will there bee in the fire of lust when it shall be turned into the fire of Hell? or what beauty wilt thou finde on the left hand of Christ, where the Characters of every mans hellish conscience shall be written in his face? Thou servest thine owne vain-glory and affectations; but what good will it bee to bee admired by thy fellow prisoners, and condemned by thy Judge? In one word, thou servest any of thine owne evill desires; foolish man, here they command thee, and there they will condemne thee; they are here thy Gods, and they will be there thy Devils.

The Second particular in the description of Christs Kingdom is the greatnesse, and neerenesse of his Person unto *David*. *My Lord*. *David* calleth him *my Lord* upon a double reason, by a Spirit of *Prophecie*, as foreseeing his incarnation and nativity out of the Tribe of *Juda*, and stocke of *Iesse*; and so hee was *Dauids Sonne*: and by a Spirit of *Faith* as beleeving him to be his Redeemer, and Salvation, and so hee was *Dauids Lord*: A Virgin shall conceive and beare a Son, there wee see his incarnation and descent from *David*; and shall call his Name *Immanuel*, God with us, there wee see his Dominion over *David*. As man so hee was his Son, and as Mediator so he was his Lord. As Man, so he was subject unto *Mary* his Mother; and as Mediator, so hee was the Lord and Savior of his Mother, *Luk* 2. 51: *Luk*, 1. 46, 47. As Man, he was made for a little while lower than the Angels, that he might suffer death, but as Mediator, God and Man in one person, so he was made much better than the Angels,

Angels, all the Angels of God were his subjects to worship him, and his Ministers to wait upon him, *Heb. 2. 7, 9, Heb. 1. 4, 6, 7.* So then, the Pronoun *Mine* leads us to the consideration of Christs consanguinity with *David*, as He was his Son: and of his dignity above *David*, as he was his Lord.

From hence we learn, That though Christ was man, yet he was more then a bare man. For *jure natura* no Son is Lord to his Father; Domination doth never ascend, There must be something above nature in him to make him his Fathers Sovereign, as our Saviour himself argueth from these words, *Matth 22. 42, 45.* Christ then is a Lord to his people; he had dominion, and was the salvation of his own fore-fathers.

A Lord] First, by right of the Creation. For he is before all things, and by him all things consist, *Col. 1. 17.* which the Apostle makes the argument of his Sovereignty. *To us there is but one Lord Jesus Christ by whom are all things, and we by him, 1 Cor. 8. 6.*

Secondly, By a right of Sonship and Primogeniture. as the chiefe, the first borne, the Heir of all things. He is not in the house as *Moses* was, a Servant; but a Son over his own House. *Heb. 3. 5, 6.* That is, he was not a Servant, but Lord in the Church, as the Apostle elsewhere gives us the same distinction. *We preach Christ Jesus the Lord, and our selves servants, 2 Cor. 4. 5.* For in the Scripture phrase the first born notes principality, excellency, and dominion. *I will make him (saith God) my first born, higher then the Kings of the Earth. Psal. 89. 27.* So in *Job*, *The first born of death is the same with the King of terrors, Job 18. 13, 14.* and so the Apostle saith, *That the Heir is the Lord of all, Gal. 4. 1.* and therefore from his Primogeniture, and designation to the inheritance of all things, he inferreth his preheminance, and honour even

summum est. — Ego Primogenitum constituam eum, hoc est, mirum in modum exaltabo eum glorificabo eum. *Glossus* Ο πρωτογονος Μεσσια, *Olas* 8. *Appet.* 7. pag 308.

^a Christus vocatur et primogenitus omnis creaturae. hoc est Dominus. Subindler in voce. Solet in Scriptura is Primogenitum vocari quoque in suo genere excellere atque

VERSE I.

above the Angels, *Colos. 1. 18. Hebr. 1. 2, 4.*

Thirdly; By the right of his *Uñction*, Office and Mediatorship, unto which he was designed by his Father. He was to have in allthings the preheminence; *for it pleased the Father, that in him should all fulnesse dwell, Col. 1. 18, 19.* Where by fulnesse, either we must understand fulnesse of the Godhead bodily, as the Apostle speaks, *Col. 2. 9.* Or fulnesse of the Spirit of Grace, which *S. John* speaks of *Job. 1. 16. Job. 3. 34.* And in both respects he is a Lord over all : in one, by the dignity of his Hypostatical union ; in the other, by the grace of his heavenly unction ; and in both as Mediator and Head in the Church: Therefore the Apostle saith, *That God hath made him Lord and Christ, Act. 2. 36.* and by the accomplishment of his Office, in dying, rising, and reviving, he became Lord both of the dead and living, *Rom. 14. 9. Rev. 5. 12.*

And thus he is Lord in two respects : First, *A Lord in power and strength.* Power to forgive sins ; Power to quicken whom he will ; Power to cleanse, justifie, and sanctifie ; power to succor in temptations ; power to raise from the dead : Power to save to the uttermost all that come unto God by him ; power to hold fast his sheep ; power to cast out the accuser of the brethren ; power to put down all his enemies, and to subdue all things unto himself. Secondly, *A Lord in Authority :* To judge, to annoint, to imploy, to command whom and what he will. He only is Lord over our persons, over our faith, over our consciences : To him only we must say, *Lord, save us lest we perish ;* to him only we must say, *Lord, what wilt thou have me to do ?*

And such a Lord Christ was to his own fore-fathers : They all did eat of the same Spiritual meat, and all drank of the same Spiritual drink, even of that rock which was Christ, *1 Cor. 10. 3, 4.* He was the substance of the Ceremonies, the Doctrine of the Prophets, the accomplishment of the promises, the joy and salvation of Patriarchs

Matth. 9. 6.
John 5. 25, 26
1 Cor. 6. 11
John 6. 40
Hebr. 2. 18
Hebr. 7. 25
John 6. 39
and 10. 28
Revel. 12. 10
Phil. 3. 21

Patriarchs and Princes, the desire and expectation of all flesh. The Gospel to us a *History* and Narration, and therefore delivered by the hand of *Witnesses*: to them a *promise* and prediction, and therefore delivered by the hand of *Prophets*. The Apostles entred into the Prophets Labours, and were servants in the same common salvation; these as sowers, and they as reapers; these as preachers of the seed hoped, and they as Preachers of the same seed exhibited. The ancient Jewes then were not saved by bare temporal promises, neither was their faith ultimately fixed upon Ceremonies or earthly things, but as their preachers had the same Spirit of Christ with ours, so the Doctrine which they preached, the faith and obedience which they required, the salvation which they foretold, was the same with ours. As the same Sun illightens the Stars above, and the earth beneath; so the same Christ was the righteousness and salvation both of his fore-fathers, and of his Seed. They without us could not be made perfect; that is, (as I conceive) their faith had nothing actually exant amongst themselves to perfect it, but received all its forme and accomplishment from that better thing which was provided for, and exhibited unto us. For the Law, that is, the carnal Commandment, and outward Ceremonies therein prescribed, made nothing, no grace, nor person perfect; but the bringing in of a better hope, that is of Christ, (who as he is unto us the hope of glory, so he was unto them the hope of deliverance; for he alone it is by whom we draw nigh unto God) doth perfect for ever those that are sanctified, *Heb. 7. 19. Heb. 10. 14.*

If Christ then be our Lord, we must trust in him, and depend upon him for our present subsistence, and our future expectations. For he never faileth those that wait upon Him. He that believeth in Him shal not be ashamed. And indeed, faith is necessary to call Christ Lord: No man can call Jesus Lord, but by the Spirit. Because

VERSE I

Colof. 2. 17
 Luke 1. 69, 70
 A&S 3. 18
 and 20. 24
 2 Cor. 1. 20
 John 8. 56
 Gen. 49. 18
 2 Sam. 23. 5
 Hag. 2. 7
 A&S 26. 16
 1 John 1. 2, 3
 1 Pet. 1. 10, 11, 12
 John 4. 38
 Aug. de Civ. Dei
 lib. 10. cap. 25
 & epist. 157. ad
 Opias. Et Epist.
 49. ad Diognat.
 de Catech. Rud.
 cap. 3. &c. 19
 de peccat. merit.
 & remiss. lib. 2
 c. 29. de peccat
 Orig. c. 24. et 25
 de nups. & con-
 cupis. l. 2. c. 11.

VERSE I.

other Lords are present with us, they do with their own eye oversee, and by their own visible power order and direct us in their service. But Christ is absent from our senses; *Though I have known Christ after the flesh, yet henceforth (saith the Apostle) know I him no more.* Therefore to fear, and honour, and serve him with all fidelity, to yeild more absolute and universal obedience to his commands, though absent, though tendered unto us by the Ministry of mean and despicable persons, then to the threats and Scepters of the greatest Princes; to labour that not only present, but absent, we may be accepted of him, to do his hardest works of selfe-denial, of overcoming and rejecting the assaults of the world, of standing out against principalities and powers, and spiritual wickednesse, of suffering and dying in his Service, there needs must be faith in the heart to see him present by his Spirit, to set to our seal to the truth, Authority and Majesty of all his commands, to hear the Lord speaking from heaven, and to find by the secret and powerful revelations of his Spirit out of the Word to the soul, evident and invincible proofs of his living by the power of God, and speaking mightily in the Ministry of his Word to our consciences. Therefore when the Apostle had said, *We are absent from the Lord*, he presently addes, *We walk by faith*; that is, we labour to yeild all service and obedience to this our Lord, though absent; because by faith (which giveth presence to things unseen, and subsistence to things that are yet but hoped) we know that he is, and that he is a rewarder of those that diligently seek him.

And indeed though every man call him Lord, yet no man doth in truth and sincerity of heart so esteem him, but those who do in this manner serve him; and by faith walk after him. *If I be a Master, saith the Lord, where is my fear?* Malach. 1.6. It is not every one that saith, Lord, Lord; but he that doth my will, that trem-
bleth

bleth at my word, that laboureth in my service, who declares himself to be mine indeed. For the heart of man cannot have two Masters, because which way ever it goes, it goes whole and undivided. We cannot serve Christ and any thing else which stands in competition with him: First, because they are *contrary Masters*, one cannot be pleased, or served, without the disallowance of the other. The Spirit that dwelleth in us lusteth to envy, that is, grudgeth, and cannot endure that any service should be done to the Lord. For the friendship of the world is enmity against God, *1 Jam 4.4,5* And therefore saith the Apostle, *If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him*; and the reason is, because they are contrary principles, and have contrary Spirits, and lusts, and therefore must needs over-rule unto contrary services. Secondly, because both masters have employments enough to take up a whole man. Satan and the World have lusts to fill the whole head and heart of their most active and industrious servants; for the Apostle saith, that all which is in the world is lusts. And the heart of man is wholly, or most greedily set in him to do that evil which it is tasked withall, *Eccles. 3.11*. The (*all*) that is in man, all his faculties, all his affections, the whole compasse of his created abilities, are all gone aside, or turned backward, there is no man, no part in man, that doth any good, no not one, *Psal. 14.3.* & *53.3*. Christ likewise is a great Lord, hath much more businesse than all the time; or strength of his servants can bring about. He requireth the obedience of every thought of the heart, *2 Cor. 10.5*. Grace, and edification, and profit in all the words that proceed out of our mouth, *Ephes. 4.29*. a respect unto the glory of God in whatsoever works we go about, *1 Cor. 10.31*. The whole soule, body and spirit should bee sanctified throughout, and that eventill the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, *1 Thess. 5.23*. Christ hath service much

The Power of Christs Kingdome.

VERSE I.

more than enough to take up all the might, strength, studies, abilities, times, callings of all his servants. Businesse towards God and himself, worship, feare, Communion, love, prayer, obedience, service, subjection: businesse towards and for our selves, watchfulness, repentance, faith, sincerity, sobriety, growth in Grace: businesse towards other men, as instruments and fellow members, exhortation, reproofe, direction, instruction, mourning, rejoicing, restoring, relieving, helping, praying, Serving in all wayes of love. So much evil to be avoyded, so many slips and errors to be lamented, so many earthly members to be crucified, so much knowledge and Mysteries to be learned, so many vaine Principles to be unlearned, so much good to be done to my selfe, so much service to be done to my brother, so much glory to be brought to my Master; every Christian hath his hands full of worke. And therefore Christ expostulateth it as an absurd thing, to call him *Lord, Lord*, to professe and ingeminate a verball subjection, and yet not to do the things which he requires, *Luke 6. 46.*

The third thing observed touching the Kingdome of Christ, is the *Glory and Power thereof*, intimated by his sitting at the *Lords* right hand. Gods right hand in the Scripture is a Metonymicall expression of the strength, power, majesty and glory that belongs unto him. *This is mine infirmity*, saith the Psalmist, *but I will remember the yeares of the right hand of the most high*, Psalm 77. 10. Where we find Gods power under the Metonymy of a right hand, opposed to the infirmity of his servant. My infirmity, and weake faith made me apt to sinke under the sense of Gods displeasure; but when I called to minde the experiences of Gods former power in alike distresses, I recollected my Spirits, and was refreshed againe. So the right hand of the *Lord* is said to spanne or extend the heavens, *Isay* 48. 13. And the Psalmist expresseth the strength and salvation of the *Lord* by his right

Δεξιαν ⁊
παβδος λεγο-
μενη ⁊ διεδαν
⁊ τινι τιμην
⁊ διετηθη εν
ᾧ ο ⁊ Οεβι υἱος
αυτου αἰωνων
ἔσπερχων, ὅς
Οεβος ⁊ τῷ
αδελφῷ ομοῦ-
σι· ἐπιχα-
λῶν σαρκω-
θεῖς· ⁊ σωμα-
τικῶς καὶ θῆ-
συνδεδάσθαι
σῆς τῷ σάρκι
αυτῆς. Damasc.
lib 4. de Or-
thodox. fid. c. 2

right hand, *Psal.* 118. 14, 15, 16. and his fury is the Cup of his right hand, *Hab.* 2. 16. And he strengtheneth, and helpeth, and upholdeth his people by the right hand of his Righteousnesse; that is by his Power, and faithfull promises, which in their weaknes strengthens them, in their feare and flagging helps them, in their sinking & falling upholds them, *Esa.* 41. 10. So the Psalmist saith of wicked men, that their right hand is a right hand of falsehood, *Psal.* 144. 11. that is, either confidence in their own power will deceive themselves, or they will deceive others to whom they promise succour and assistance. Therefore Gods right hand is call'd the right hand of Majesty, *Hebr.* 1. 3. and the right hand of power, *Luk.* 22. 63. To sit then at Gods right hand noteth that great honor, and Iudiciary Office, and plenitude of power, which God the Father hath given to his Sonne; after his manifestation in the flesh, in his nativity; and justification by the Spirit, in his resurrection; he was then, amongst other dignities, received up into glory, *1 Tim.* 3. 16. Thus we find amongst those expressions of honor which Solomon shewed unto his mother, that shee sate at his right hand, *1 King.* 2. 19. And herein the Apostle puts a great difference between Christ and the Leviticall Priests, that they stood daily ministring, but Christ after his Offering, Sate down on the right hand of God, *Heb.* 10. 11, 12. noting two things: First, That Christ was the Lord and they but servants, for standing in the posture of a Servant or Minister, *Deut.* 10. 8. 17. 12. *Ezek.* 44. 24. and not sitting, *Luk.* 17. 7. Secondly that their work was daily to be repeated, whereas Christs was consummate in one offering once for all, after which he rested or sate down again.

This sitting then of Christ at the right hand of Majesty and glory, notes unto us first, *The great exaltation of the Lord Christ*, whom God hath highly honoured and advanced, and given a name above every name.

VERSE I.

Verbum Sedere Regni significat potestatem.

Hieron. in Eph. cap. 1.

Sedere quod dicitur Deum, non membrorum positionem, sed iudiciariam significat potestatem.

Aug. de Fide & symbol.

cap. 7.

Ier. 52. 12.

Luk. 1. 19.

1 Chron. 18. 18.

1 King. 17. 1.

VERSE I.

ἐν δὲ τῇ περὶ τὸ
θεῖον ἀδελφεύς
συγκατάθεσις
ἐλαττωσις ὁ
φειλὼ γίνεσθαι
τῆς ἀγίας τοῦ
θεοῦ, ἀλλὰ
τὴν ἰσχύος
ἐν ὧν θεοπροπῶς
τὰ ὅτι ταπεινὸς
ἵερα ἔχον ἱερὰ
των δέχοντο
νομικῶς.

Bati. Mag. Ho-
mil de Fide.
Ut sol cum in
nube tegitur,
claritas ejus
comprimitur,
non cecatur; —
sic homo ille,
quem Pominus
servatorque n-
strus, iest, Deus.
Dei Filius in-
duit, Deitatem
in illo non in-er-
cipit, sed abscon-
dit Greg. Naz.
Ora. 49 de fide.
Συνακατάθε-
σις ἀνθρωπι-
νῶν φύσιν ἐν
τῷ θεῷ, καὶ
βασιλικῶς, καὶ
προσωπικῶς
ἐν τῷ θεῷ
ὡς ἑνὶ ὄντι.
Theophylact. in
John 17.

Acceptus ut homo
qua habebat ut
Deus. Theod. in
Phil. 2.

First his Divine nature, though it cannot possibly re-
ceive any intrinsecal improvement or glory (all fullness of
glory essentially belonging thereunto) yet so farre
forth as it was humbled, for the æconomie and admin-
istration of his office, so far it was readvanced againe;
Now he emptied and humbled himselfe, not by putting
off any of his divine glory, but by suffering it to be over-
shadowed with the similitudes of sinful flesh, and to bee
humbled under the forme of a Servant, as the light of a
candle is hidden in a darke and close Lanterne. So that
Declaraterily, or by way of manifestation, he is in that
respect magnified at Gods right hand, or as the Apostle
speaks, declared to be that Sonne of God by power in
rising from the dead, and returning to his glory again,
Rom 1.4. Again, how ever in *Abstratto* we cannot
say that the Deity or divine nature was exalted in any
other sense than by evident manifestation of it selfe in
that man who was before despised, and accused as a
blasphemer, for that he made himselfe equal with God:
yet in *Concreto*, and by reason of the Communication of
properties from one nature to another. in the unity of
one person, it is true, that as God saved the world by his
bloud and it was the Prince of life that was crucified,
and the Lord that lay in the grave; so God likewise was
in the form of a Servant humbled, and at the right hand
of Majesty exalted againe.

Secondly, the humane nature of Christ is most highly
exalted by sitting at Gods right hand; for in the right of
his Hypostolical union he hath an ample and immediate
claime to all that glory which might in the humane
nature be conferr'd upon him. So that though during
the time of his conversation amongst men, the exigence
and æconomy of the office which he had for us under-
taken, made him a man of sorrowes, and intercepted the
beames of the Godhead and Divine glory from the o-
ther nature; yet having finished that dispensation, there

was

was in the vertue of that most intimate association of the natures in one person, a communicating of all glory from the Deity which the other nature was capable of. For as by the Spirit of Holinesse he was filled with treasures of Wisdome and Knowledge, and Grace, and thereby fitted for the Office of a Mediator, and made the first fruits, the first born, the heir of all things, the head, and Captaine of the Church; furnished with a residue and redundancy of the Spirit to sanctifie his brethren, and to make them joint heirs, and first born with himselfe; so by the Spirit of glory he is filled with unmatchable perfections, beyond the capacity or comprehension of all the Angels of Heaven; being not only full of glory, but having in him all the fulnes of glory, which a created nature joyned to an infinite and bottomless fountain could receive.

VERSE I.

From hence therefore wee should learne to let the same mind bee in us which was in Christ, to humble our selves first, that we may be exalted in due time; to finish our workes of self-denyal, and service which wee owe to God, that so we may enter into our Masters glory. For hee himselfe entred not but by a way of blood. Wee learne likewise to have recourse and dependance on him for all supplies of the Spirit, for all strength of Grace, for all influences of life, for the measure of every joint and member. He is our Treasure, our Fountaine, our Head; it is his free Grace, his voluntary influence which habituateth and fitteth all our faculties, which animateth us unto a heavenly being, which giveth us both the strength and *first act*, whereby we are qualified to worke, and which concurreth with us *in actu secundo* to all those workes which we set our selves about. As an instrument, even when it hath an edge, cutteth nothing till it be assisted and moved by the hand of the Artificer; so a Christian when he hath a will, and an habituall fitnessse to worke, yet is able to do nothing without the constant

Phil. i. 19
Phil. 4. 13
Eph. 4. 16.

VERSE I.

Phil. 2. 13.
 Esay. 26. 12.
 John. 15. 5.
 2 Cor. 3. 5.

constant supply, assistance, & concomitancy of the grace of Christ, exciting, moving, and applying that habituall power unto particular actions. He it is that giveth us not only to wil, but to do, that goeth through with us, and worketh all our works for us by his grace. Without him we can do nothing, all our sufficiency is from him.

But it may be objected, if we can do nothing without a second grace, to what end is a former grace given? or what use is there of our exciting that grace and gift of God in us, which can do nothing without a further concurrence of Christs Spirit? To this I answer, first, that as light is necessary and requisite unto seeing, and yet there is no seeing without an eye: so without the assisting Grace of Christs Spirit concurring with us unto every holy duty, we can do nothing; and yet that grace doth ever presuppose an implanted, seminall, and habituall grace, fore-disposing the soule unto the said Duties: Secondly, as in the Course of naturall Effects, though God be a most voluntary Agent, yet in the ordinary Concurrence of a first cause he worketh *ad modum nature*, measuring forth his assistance proportionably to the condition and preparation of the second causes: so in supernaturall and holy operations (albeit not with a like certaine and unaltered constancy) though Christ be a most voluntary head of his Church, yet usually he proportioneth his assisting & second grace, unto the growth, progresse & radication of those Spiritual habits which are in the soule before. From whence cometh the difference of holinesse, & profitablenesse amongst the Saints, that some are more active, and unwearied in all holy conversation than others; as in the naturall body some members are larger, and more full of life and motion, than others, according to the different distribution of spirits from the heart, and influences from the head.

This then affords matter enough both to humble us, and to comfort us. To humble us, that we can do nothing

thing of our selves, that we have nothing in our selves but sinne. All the fulnesse of grace is in him, and therefore whosoever hath any must have it from him; as in the Egyptian famine, whosoever had any corne had it from *Ioseph*, to whom the granaries and treasures of *Egypt* were for that purpose committed. And this lowlinesse of heart, and sense of our own Emptinesse is that which makes us alwaies have recourse to our fountaine, and keep in favour with our head; from whom we must receive fresh supply of strength for doing any good, for bearing any evil, for resisting any temptation, for overcoming any enemy, for beginning, for continuing, and for perfecting any Dutie. For though it be mans heart that doth these things, yet it is by a forraigne and impressed strength; as it is iron that burns, but not by its owne nature (which is cold) but by the heate which it hath received from the fire. *It was not I, saith the Apostle, but the grace of God which was with me.*

To comfort us likewise when we consider, that all fulnesse and strength is in him as in an Officer, an *Adam*, a treasurer and dispenser of all needfull supplies to his people, according to the place they beare in his body, and to the exigence and measure of their condition in themselves, or service in his Church. Sure we are, that what measure soever he gives unto any, he hath still a residue of Spirit, nay he still retaineth his own fulness, hath skill enough to carry us through any condition, and according to the difficulties of the service he puts us upon, hath still wisdom to understand; compassion to pity, strength to supply all our needs. And that all this hee hath as a mercifull and faithfull depositary, as a Gardian, and husband, and elder brother to imploy for the good of his Church; that he is unto this office appointed by the wil of him that sent him, to lose nothing of all that which is given him but to keepe, and perfect it unto the resurrection at the last day. That God hath planted

VERSE 1.

planted in him a Spirit of faithfulness and pity for the cheerful discharge of this great office, given him a propriety unto us, made us as neer and deare unto him as the members of his sacred body are to one another; and therefore whosoever cometh to him with emptinesse, and hunger, and faith, he will in no wise cast them out; it is as possible for him to hew off, and to throw away the members of his natural body, to have any of his bones broken, as to reject the humble and faithfull desires of those that duly wait upon him.

Againe, from this *Exaltation* of Christ in his humane nature, we should learne to keep our vessels in holinesse and in honour, as those who expect to bee fashioned at the last like unto him: For how can that man truly hope to be like Christ hereafter, that labours to bee as unlike him here as he can? *Shall I take the members of Christ, and make them the members of an harlot?* saith the Apostle. So may I say, Shall I take the nature of Christ, that nature which he in his person hath so highly glorified, and make it in my person the nature of a diuel? If a Prince should marry a mean woman, would he endure to see those of her nearest kindred, her brethren & sisters live like scullions or strumpets under his own eye? Now Christ hath taken our nature into a neerer union with himselfe than marriage; for man and wife are still two persons, but God and man is but one Christ. Death it selfe was not able to dissolve this union; for when the soule was separated from the body, yet the Deity was separated from neither: it was the Lord that lay in the grave, and he that ascended, was the same that descended into the lower part of the earth. *Matth. 28. 6. Eph. 4. 10.* And shal we then defile this nature by wantonnesse, intemperance, and vile affections, which is taken into so indissoluble an unity with the Sonne of God? Christ took it to advance it, and it is still by his Spirit in us so much the more advanced, by how much the neerer it comes

comes to that holiness which it hath in him. We should therefore labour to walk as becometh those that have so glorious a Head, to walk worthy of such a Lord, unto all well pleasing, in fruitfulness and knowledge: to walk as those that have received Christ, and expect his appearing again *Phil. 1. 27. Col. 1. 10. & 2. 6. & 3. 4, 5.*

VERSE I.

Secondly, The sitting of Christ on the right hand of God, notes unto us the Consummation of all those Offices which he was to perform here on the earth for our Redemption. For till they were all finished, he was not to returne to his Glory again. *He that hath entered into his rest, hath ceased from his owne works,* saith the Apostle, *Heb. 4. 10.* first he was to execute his Office, before he was to enter into his rest. Though he were a Son, and so *jure naturali*, the Inheritance were his own before; yet he was to learne Obedience by the things which he was to suffer; before he was made perfect again, *Heb. 5. 8, 9.* After he had offered one sacrifice for sinnes for ever; that is, after he had made such a complete expiation as should never need to be repeated, but was able for ever to perfect those that are sanctified, he then sat down on the right hand of God, expecting till his enemies be made his foot-stool, *Hib. 10. 12, 13, 14.* This is the Argument our Saviour useth when he prayeth to be glorified again with his Father; *I have glorified thee on earth, or revealed the Glory of thy Truth and Mercy to thy Church, I have finished the work which thou gavest me to do; and now, O Father, glorifie thou me with thine own self, &c. Joh. 17. 4, 5.* He humbled himself, saith the Apostle, and became obedient to death, even the death of the Crosse, wherefore God hath highly exalted him, &c. *Phil. 2. 8, 9.* Noting unto us the order of the dispensation of Christs Offices; some were works of Ministry and Service, in the Office of Obedience and suffering for his Church: Others were works of Power and Majesty, in the protection and exaltation of his Church; and those necessarily

VERSE I.

necessarily to precede these. *He ought to suffer, and to enter into his glory, Luk. 24. 26, 46.* Necessarily, I say, First, by a *Necessity of Gods Decree*, who had so fore-appointed it, *Act. 2. 23, 24.* Secondly, by the *Necessity of Gods Justice*, which must first be satisfied by obedience, before it could be appeased with man, or in the Person of their Head and Advocate exalt them to his Glory again, *Rom. 3. 25. Rm. 5. 10. Rom. 6. 6, 11. Ephes. 2. 5, 6* Thirdly, by the *Necessity of Gods Word and Will*, signified in the predictions of the Prophets, *Luke. 24. 46. 1 Pet. 1. 10, 11.* Fourthly, by the *Necessity of Christs infinite person*, which being equal with God, could not possibly be exalted without some preceding descent and humiliation: *That he ascended, saith the Apostle, what is it, but that he descended first into the lower parts of the earth? Eph. 4. 9* Therefore it is, that our Saviour saith, *The Spirit should convince the world of Righteousnesse, because he was to go to the Father, and should be seen here no more, Joh. 16. 10.* The meaning of it is, that the Spirit shall in the Ministry of the Word reveal unto those who are fully convicted of their sinful condition, and humbled in the sense thereof, a treasure of full and sufficient Righteousnesse by his Obedience wrought for sinners. And the reason which is given of it, stands thus, Our Righteousnesse consists in our being able to stand in Gods presence; Now Christ having done all as our Surety here, went up unto Glory as our Head and Advocate, as the first fruits, the Captain, the Prince of life, the Author of salvation, and the forerunner of his people; so that his going thither is an argument of our justification by him: First, because it is a sign that he hath finished the work of our Redemption on earth, a sign that he overcame death, and was justified by the Spirit from the wrongs of men, and from the curse of the Law. Therefore he said to Mary after his Resurrection, *Go tell my Disciples, I ascend to my Father and your Father, to my God and*

your God, Joh. 20. 17. that is, by my death, and victory over it, you are made my brethren, and reconciled unto God again. Secondly, because he hath Offices in Heaven to fulfil at the right hand of his Father in our behalfe, to intercede, and to prepare a place for us, to apply unto us the vertue of his Death and Merits. If hee had ascended without fulfilling all Righteousnesse for the Church, he should have been sent down, and scene againe: but now (saith he) you see me no more, for by once dying, and by once appearing in the end of the world, I have put away sin by the Sacrifice of my selfe, Heb. 9. 26. & 7. 27. Rom. 6. 9, 10. He was taken, saith the Prophet, from prison and judgement; to note that the whole debt is paid, and now, *Who shall declare his generation?* that is, he now liveth unto numberless Generations, he prolongeth his dayes, and hath already fulfilled Righteousnesse enough to justifie all those that know him, or believe in him, *Isai. 53. 8, 10.* Thus we see that Christs deliverance out of prison, and exaltation at the right hand of God, is an evident argument, that he is fully exonerated of the guilt of sin, and curse of the Law, and hath accomplished all those works which he had undertaken for our righteousness.

And this likewise affords abundant matter both to *humble, and to comfort the Church of Christ.* To humble us in the evidence of our disabilities; for if we could have finished the works which were given us to do, there would have been no need of Christ. It was weaknesse which made way for Christ. *Our weaknesse to fulfil obedience, and the weaknesse of the Law to justifie sinners,* Rom. 5. 6. Rom. 8. 3. Heb. 7. 18, 19. All the strength we have is by the power of his might, and by his grace, Eph. 6. 10. 1 Tim. 2. 1 and even this God dispenceth unto us by measure, and by degrees, driving out our corruptions as he did the *Canaanites before his people, by little and little,* Exod. 23. 30. because while we are here, he will have us live by faith, and

VERSE I.

and fetch our strength as we use it from Christ, and wait in hope of a better condition, and glorifie the patience and forbearance of God, who is provoked every day.

To comfort us likewise; First, *against all our unavoidable and invincible infirmities.* Every good Christian desires to serve the Lord with all his strength, desires to be enriched, to be steadfast, unmoveable, abundant in the work of the Lord, *To do his will as the Angels in Heaven do it*: yet in many things they fail, and have daily experience of their own defects. But here is all the comfort, though I am not able to do any of my duties as I should, yet Christ hath finished all his to the full, and therefore, though I am compassed with infirmities, so that I cannot do the things which I would, yet I have a *compassionate Advocate with the Father*, who both giveth and craveth pardon for every one that prepareth his heart to seek the Lord. *Though he be not perfectly cleansed*, 1 John 2.2. 2 Chron. 30. 18, 19 Secondly, *Against the perinacy and close adherence of our corruptions*, which cleave as fast unto us as the very powers and faculties of our soul, as heat unto fire, or light unto the Sun. Yet sure we are, that he who forbade the fire to burn, and put blacknesse upon the face of the Sun at midday, is able likewise to remove our corruptions as far from us, as he hath removed them from his owne sight. And the ground of our expectation hereof is this, Christ when he was upon the earth in the form of a servant, accomlished *all the Offices* of suffering and obedience for us: *Therefore being now exalted far above all Heavens*, at the right hand of Majesty and Glory, hee will much more fulfil those Offices of Power which hee hath there to do. Which are by the supplies of his Spirit to purge us from sin, by the sufficiency of his grace to strengthen us by his word to sanctifie and cleanse us, and to present us to himselfe a glorious Church without spot or wrinkle. He that brought from the dead the Lord Jesus,

and

and suffered not death to hold the head, is able by that power and for that reason, to make us perfect in every good worke to doe his Will, and nos to suffer corruption for ever to hold the members. It is the frequent argument of the Scripture, Heb. 13. 20. 21. Col. 2. 12. Eph. 1. 19, 20. Rom. 9. 5, 6. Rom. 8. 11. Thirdly, against all those fiery darts of Satan, whereby he tempteth us to despaire, and to forsake our mercy. If he could have held Christ under when he was in the Grave, then indeed our faith would have beene vaine, we should be yet in our sinnes, 1 Cor. 15. 17. But he who himselfe suffered, and being tempted, overcame both the sufferings and the temptation, is able to succour those that are tempted, and to shew them mercy and grace to helpe in time of need, Heb. 2. 17, 18. Heb. 4. 15, 16. Lastly, against death itselfe. For the Accomplishment of Christs Office of Redemption in his resurrection from the dead, was both the Merit, the Seale, and the first fruits of ours, 1 Cor. 15. 20, 22.

Thirdly, The sitting of Christ on the right hand of his Father, noteth unto us the actual Administration of his Kingdome. Therefore that which is here said, sit at my right hand until I make thine enemies thy foot-stools, the Apostle thus expoundeth, He must reigne till he hath put all enemies under his feet, 1 Cor. 15. 25. And he therefore dyed, and rose, and revived, that he might be Lord both of dead and living, namely, by being exalted unto Gods right hand, Rom. 14. 9. Now this Administration of Christs Kingdome implies several particulars: First *republican*, The publication of established Lawes. For that which is in this Psalm called the sending forth of the rod of Christs strength out of Sion, is thus by the Prophets expounded, Out of Sion shall goe forth the Law, and the Word of the Lord from Jerusalem, Esay 2. 3. Mat. 4. 2. Secondly, The conquering and subduing of Subjects to himselfe, by converting the hearts of men, and bringing their thoughts into the Obedience of his Kingdome.

VERSE I

Ministerially, by the word of reconciliation, and *Effectually*, by the power of his Spirit, writing his Lawes in their hearts, and transforming them into the image of his Word from glory to glory. Thirdly, *Ruling*, and leading those whom he hath thus converted in his way, continuing unto their hearts his heavenly voice, never utterly depriving them of the exciting, assisting, cooperating grace of his holy Spirit; but by his Divine power giving unto them all things which pertain unto life and godlinesse, after he had once called them to his Glorious Power, *Esay 2.2. John 10.3,4. 1 Cor. 1.4,8. Esay 30. 21. 1 Pet. 2.9. 2 Pet. 1.3.* Fourthly, *Protecting*, upholding, succouring them against all temptations and discouragements. By his compassion pitying them, by his power and promises helping them, by his care and wisdom proportioning their strength to their trials, by his peace recompensing their conflicts, by patience and experience establishing their hearts in the hope of deliverance, *Heb. 2.17. John 16.33. 1 Cor. 10.13. 2 Cor. 1.5. Phil. 4.7,19. Rom. 15.4.* Fifthly, *Confoundding all his enemies.* First, *Their projects*, holding up his kingdome in the midst of their malice, and making his truth like a Tree, settle the faster, and like a torch shine the brighter for the shaking. Secondly, *Their persons*, Whom he doth here gall and torment by the Scepter of his Word, constraining them by the evidence thereof to subscribe to the justice of his wrath; and whom he reserveth for the day of his appearing, till they shall be put all under his feet. In which respect he is said to stand at the right hand of God, as a man of war ready armed for the defence of his Church, *Acts 7.56.*

Fourthly, *The sitting of Christ on the right hand of God*, noteth unto us his giving of gifts, and sending downe of the Holy Ghost upon men. It hath beene an universal custome both in the Church, and elsewhere, in dayes of great joy and solemnity, to give gifts and send presents unto men.

This

The Arke a type of Christ.

35

VERSE I

Thus after the wall of Jerusalem was built, and the worship of God restored, and the Law read and expounded by Ezra to the people after their captivity, it is said that the people did eat and drinke, and send portions, *Nehem. 8. 10, 12.* The like forme was by the people of the Jewes observed in their feast of *Purim. Ester. 9. 22.* And the same custome hath been observed amongst Heathen Princes upon solemne and great occasions, to distribute donatives and congiaries amongst the people. Thus Christ in the day of his Majesty and inauguration, in that great and solemne Triumph, when he ascended up on high, and led captivity captive, he did withal give gifts unto men, *Eph. 4. 10.*

Christ was notably typified in the Arke of the Testament; In it were the Tables of the Law, to shew that the whole Law was in Christ fulfilled, and that he was the end of the Law for Righteousnesse to those that believe in him. There was the golden pot which had Manna, to signifie that heavenly, and abiding nourishment which from him the Church receiveth. There was the Rod of Aaron which budded. Signifying either the miraculous incarnation of Christ in a Virgin, or his sufferings, which are expressed by stripes, *Esa. 53. 5.* and our resurrection with him, noted in the budding of a dry rod. Or lastly, noting the sanctifying and fruitful vertue of his Word, which is the rod of his strength. Upon it also was the Mercy seat, to note that in Christ is the foundation of all that mercy and attonement which is preached unto men. But in two things principally did it signifie Christ unto our present purpose: First, it was overlaid within and without with gold, and had a Crowne of gold round about it, *Exod. 25. 11. & 37. 2.* denoting the plentiful and glorious Kingdome of Christ, who was crowned with glory, and Honour, *Heb. 2. 7.* Secondly, it had rings by which it was carried up and downe, till at last it rested in Solomons Temple, with glorious and triumphall Solemnity;

Tiberius in triumpho Germanico congiarium tricenos nummos virisim dedit. Sueton. Divisit in populum congiarium us mos est imperium suscipiensibus. Herodian. lib. 3. & de Septimio Severo initio imperii magno congiario populum profectum est. Idem l. 3. vid. Sueton. Aug. cap. 41. & Elitum Lawprid. in Antonino. Observatum fuit ut principes assumpto Imperio, ad conciliandum favorem, congiarium darent populo, &c. Alex. ab Alex. Genial. dier. l. 5. cap. 24.

VERSE I

Psal. 132.8,9. 2 Chron. 5.13. So Christ while he was here upon earth, being anointed with the Holy Ghost and with Power, went about doing good, Act. 10. 38. and having ceased from his works, did at last enter into his rest, Heb. 5. 10. which is the Heavenly Temple, Revel. 11. 19.

Now this carrying of the Arke into his resting place, denotes two things; first a final conquest over the enemies of God, For as the moving of the Arke signified the acting and procuring of victory, *Josh. 6. 11. 20.* So the Resting of the Arke noted the Confirmation of victory. And therefore the Temple was built, and the Arke set therein, in the dayes of *Solomon*, when there was not an emendicated or borrowed peace, depending upon the courtesy of the neighbour Nations; but a victorious and triumphal peace, after the great victories of *David*, and tributary subjection and homage of all the Canaanites which were left in the Land, *2 Chron. 8. 7, 8, 26. 2 Sam. 7. 9. 12. Psal. 68. 29.* Secondly, it notes the transferring of gifts, as we see in that triumphal song at the removal of the Arke, being also a prediction both of that which literally hapned in the reigne of *Solomon*, and was mystically verified in Christ, *Psal. 68. 18.* Thus Christ, our Prince of Peace; being now in the Temple of God in Heaven, hath bound Hell, Sinne and Death asprive, and hath demolished the wals of *Jerico*, or the Kingdome of *Satan*; throwne him down from Heaven with lightning, and passed a sentence of judgement upon him. And hath received of the Father the promise of the Holy Ghost, and given gifts unto men, *Act. 2. 32, 33.* before his entering into his rest it was but a Promise, and they were to wait at *Jerusalem* for it, *Act. 1. 4.* but after his departure, and intercession at his Fathers right hand, it was poured forth in abundance upon us, *John 1. 16. Act. 1. 5.*

And we are to note that as it began with his sitting there, so it continueth as long as he shall there sit. It is true, all Holy Scripture, which God ordained for the gathering

gathering of his pople, and for the guidance of them in the militant Church, is already long since by the Spirit dictated unto holy and selected instruments, for that purpose inspired with more abundance of Grace, and guided by a full and infallible Spirit: but yet wee must note, that in those holy writings there is such a depth of heavenly wisdom, such a sea of mysteries, and such an unsearchable treasure of purity and grace, that though a man should spend the longest life after the severest and most industrious manner to acquaint himself with God in the revelations of his Word, yet his knowledge would be but in part, and his holinesse after all that come short of maturity; as the enemies are not all presently under Christs feet, but are by degrees subdued; so the Spirit is not presently conferred in fulnesse unto the members of Christ, but by measure and degrees, according to the voluntary influences of the head, & exigencies of the members. So much of the Spirit of grace and truth as we have here is but the earnest and hanel of the greater summe, *Ephes. 1. 14.* The seed and first fruits of a fuller harvest, *1 John 2. 9.* *Rom. 8. 23.* Therefore the Apostle mentions a growing change from glory to glory by the Spirit of God, *2 Cor. 3. 18.* We must not expect a fulnesse til the time of the restitution of all things, til that day of redemption and adoption wherein the light, which is here but some, for the Righteous, shall grow up into a full harvest of holinesse and of glory.

But here ariseth a question out of the seeming contradiction of Holy Scripture. It is manifest that the Spirit of Christ was in the Church long before his Ascension. The Prophets spake by him; *1 Pet. 1. 11.* The ancient Jewes vexed him, *Isa. 63. 10.* John Baptist was even filled with the Spirit, to note a plentiful measure for the discharge of his Office, *Luke 1. 15* and yet St. John saith, That the Holy Ghost was not yet given, because Christ was not yet glorified, *John 7. 39.* To this I answer, that the

VERSE I.

Χριστιανοὶ ἔρ-
γο εἴχα μὴ
οὐρασι.
Euseb. hist. lib. 1.
cap. 5.

Fathers were sanctified by the same Spirit of Christ with us, difference there is none in the substance, but only in the accidents and circumstances of effusion and manifestation; as light in the Sunne, and light in a starre, is in it selfe the same original light, but very much varied in the dispensation. It was the same truth which was preached by the Prophets, and by Christ, but the Apostle observs in it a difference: *Sundry times, and in sundry manners, hath God spoken by the Prophets; but in these last dayes by his Son*, that is, more plentifully, and more plainly unto us than unto the Fathers, *Heb. 1. 1. Job. 16. 25.* Therefore though it be true that Abraham saw Christs day, as all the Fathers did (though he being the Father of the faithfull more than others) in which respect *Ensebins* saith of them that they were Christians really and in effect, though not in name: yet it is true likewise, that many Prophets and righteous men did desire to see and heare the things which the Apostles saw and heard, but did not, *Mt. 13. 17.* namely, in such plaine and plentiful measure as the Apostles did. They saw in glimpses and morning starres, and prefigurations; but these, the things themselves. They saw only the promises, and those too but as a fore off, *Heb. 11. 13.* these the substance and Gospel in selfe, neerer at hand, in their mouth, and before their eyes, and even amongst them; *Rom. 10. 8. Gal. 3. 1. John 1. 14. 1 Job. 1. 2, 3.* They, by Prophets, who testified before-hand; these by eye-witnesses, who declared the things which they had seen and heard, *Alt. 1. 8. 22. & 10. 41.* Therefore it is said that Christ was a Lamb slain from the beginning of the world, and yet in the end of the world that he appeared to take away sin by the Sacrifice of himself, *Heb. 9. 26.* to note, that the Fathers had the benefit, but not the perfection of the promises; *Heb. 11. 40.* for the Apostle every where makes perfection the work of the Gospel, *1 Cor. 2. 7. Eph. 4. 13. Heb. 6. 1.*

So then after Christs sitting on the right hand of pow-

er, the Holy Spirit was more compleatly sent both in regard of manifestation and efficacy, than ever before. The difference is chiefly in three things: First, In the manner of his Mission. To the old Church in dreams and vision, in figures and latent wayes: But to the Evangelicall Churches, in power, evidence and demonstration, 1 Cor. 2. 4. 5. Therefore it is called the Spirit of Revelation, and Knowledge, which discovereth, and that unto principalities and powers by the Church, the manifold and mysterious wisdom of God in Christ, Eph. 1. 17. & 3. 10. Therefore the Spirit was sent in the latter dayes in wind, and fire, and tongues, and earthquakes, all which have in them a self discovering property, which will not be hidden. Whereas in the time of the Prophets God did not in any such things, save only in a low and still voice reveal himself, 1 King. 19. 11, 12.

Secondly, In the Subjects unto whom hee was sent. Before only upon the inclosed garden of the Jewes did this wind blow; but now is the Spirit powred upon all flesh; and this heavenly dew falleth not upon the fleece, but upon the whole earth. And therefore our Saviour opposeth Jerusalem and the Spirit, Joh. 4. 21, 23. Every believer is of the Israel of God, every Christian a Temple of the Holy Ghost; no people of the earth secluded: But in every nation hee that seareth God and worketh Righteousnesse is accepted; no place unclean, but every where pure hands may be lifted up.

Thirdly, In the measure of his grace. At first hee was sent only in drops and dew; but after he was powred out in fountains and abundance, Tit. 2. 6, and therefore (as I have before observed) the grace of the Gospel is frequently expressed by the name of Riches, to note, not only the preciousnesse, but the plenty thereof in the Church. And it is here worth our observation that the Spirit under the Gospel is compared to things of a spreading, multiplying, and operative nature.

VERSE I.

Agg 2. 2, 3
Agg 4. 31

Joel 2. 28.

Rom. 2. 29

Gal. 6. 15, 16

Col. 2. 11

Phil. 3. 3

1 Cor. 6. 19

Agg 10. 35

1 Tim. 2. 4.

Ephes. 1. 7

2. 7

3. 8

VERSE 1.

Col. 1. 27

2 Cor. 6. 12.

First, To water, and that not a little measure to sprinkle or bedew, but to Baptize the faithfull in *Matth. 3. 11. Act. 1. 5.* and that not in a Font or vessel, which growes lesse and lesse, but in a springing & living river, *John 7. 39.* Now water, besides its purging property, is first of a spreading nature: It hath no bounds nor limits to it selfe, as firme and solid bodies have, but receive its restraint by the vessel or continent which holds it: so the Spirit of the Lord is not straightned in himselfe, but only by the narrow hearts of men into which hee comes. *Yee are not straitned,* saith the Apostle, *in us,* that is, in that ministry of Grace, and dispensation of the Spirit which is committed to us: *but in your own bowels,* which are not in any proportion enlarged unto that abundance and fulnesse of heavenly grace, which in the Gospel of salvation is offered unto you. Secondly, Spring water is a growing and multiplying thing; which is the reason why rivers which rise from narrow fountaines, have yet by reason of a constant and regular supply a great breadth in remote channels, because the water lives. Whereas in pits and torrents it groweth lesse and lesse: so the graces of the Spirit are living & springing things, the longer they continue, the larger they grow, (like the waters of the Sanctuary, *Ezek. 36. 25.*) and the reason is, because they come from a fountaine which is all life, *John 4. 10. John 14. 6. Col. 3. 4.* Thirdly, as water multiplies in it self, so insinuation and mollification it hath a fructifying vertue in other things. Fruitfull trees are planted by the waters side; so the Spirit searching and mollifying the heart, maketh it fruitfull in holy obedience, *Ezek. 11. 19, 20.* Fourthly, water is very strong in its owne streame: wee see what mighty engines it moveth, what huge vessels it rolleth like a ball, what walls and bulwarkes it overthrowes: so the Spirit of God is able to beat downe all strong holds, which the wit of man, or the malice of Satan, can erect against the Church.

The

The horses of Egypt are flesh and not Spirit, saith the Lord. Not by might, nor by power, but by my Spirit: noting that that which might and created power could not doe, the Spirit of the Lord was able to effect. And this strength of water serves to carry it as high as its own spring and level: so the Spirit wil never cease to raise the hearts of his people; till it carries them up to their fountaine and spring-head in heaven.

Secondly, the Spirit is compared to the *rushing if a mighty wind*. The Learned observe, that before Christs time God spake unto men in a soft still voyce, which they called *Bath Koll*; but after in the time of the Gospell by a *mighty Winde*: noting thereby both the Abundance of his Spirit which he would powre out in the latter dayes, and the strength thereof, as a rushing wind. Though a man have walls of brasse, and barres of iron upon his conscience, though he set up fortifications of fleshly reason, and the very gates of hell to shut out the Spirit of Grace, yet nothing is able to withstand the power of this mighty rushing wind. *Who art thou, O great mountaine? Before Zerubbabel thou shalt become a plaine &c. Zech. 4.7.* No mountaines, no difficulties can prevent the power of Gods Spirit. He hath strength to pull down the strongest opposition, and to enable the weakest condition unto the service which hee will have done. Though there be mountains betweene *Israel* and their deliverance, yet the blind, and the lame, and the women with child, and her that travelles with child together, wil he strengthen to climb over the precipices of the highest mountaine, *Jer. 31.8.*

Thirdly, The Spirit is compared to *Fire*, noting likewise both the multiplying or diffusive property thereof, turning every thing into its owne nature: and the mighty strength thereof, whereby it either cleanseth or consumeth any thing that it meets with; If thou art stubble, it will devour thee; if stone, it will break; if gold it will

VERSE I.

Zech 4 6.

VERSE I.

will purge thee. The hard heart it can melt, and the soule heart it can purifie. Lay down thine heart under the Word, and yeild it to the Spirit, who is as it were the Artificer which doth manage the word, he can frame it into a vessel of honour: but if thou resist and be stubborn against the Spirit in the Word, know that it is but the crackling of a leaf in the fire, if thou wilt not suffer it to purge thee, thou canst not hinder it to torment thee; nothing is more comfortable, nothing more consuming than fire; nothing more comfortable than the light, warmth, and witnesse of the Spirit; nothing more terrible than the conviction, condemnation and bondage of the Spirit.

Now this difference in the measure of the Spirit, may be seen in *two things*. First, in a greater measure of knowledge; *They shall all know me from the least of them to the greatest of them*, saith the Lord, *Jer. 31. 34.* And the earth shall be full of the knowledge of the Lord, as the waters cover the sea, *Isai. 11. 9.* Our Saviour told his Disciples, that all things which hee had heard of his Father, hee had made knowne unto them, *John 15. 15.* and yet a little after hee telleth them, that many other things he had to say unto them, which they could not heare, till the Spirit of truth came, who should guide them into all truth, *John 16. 12, 13.* noting that the Spirit when hee came, should enlarge their hearts to a capacity of more heavenly wisdom than they could comprehend before. For we may observe before how ignorant they were of many things, though they conversed with Christ in the flesh; *Philip* ignorant of the Father, *John 14. 8.* *Thomas* of the way unto the Father, *John 14. 5.* *Peter* of the necessity of his sufferings, *Matt. 16. 22.* The *two Disciples* of his resurrection, *Luke 24. 45.* all of them of the quality of his Kingdome, *Act. 1. 6.* Thus before the sending of the Holy Ghost, the Lord did not require so plentiful knowledge unto salvation, as after; as in the valuations of money;

mony; that which was plenty two or three hundred years since, is but penury now. Secondly, in a greater measure of strength for Spiritual obedience. They who before fled from the company of Christ in his sufferings, did after rejoyce to be counted worthy of suffering shame for his Name, or as the elegancy of the originall words import, to be *dignified with the dishonour of Christians*, *Act. 5. 41.* For suffering of persecution for Christ, and the tryal of faith by diverse temptations is in the Scriptures reckoned up amongst the gifts, and hundred fold compensations of God to his people, *Marke 10. 30. Phil. 1. 29. Heb. 11. 26. Jam. 1. 2. 1 Pet. 1. 6, 7.* No man, saith our Saviour, putteth new wine into old bottles; that is, exacteth rigid and heavy services of weak and unqualified Disciples, and therefore my Disciples fast not while I am amongst them in the flesh: *But the dayes will come when I shall be taken from them in body, and shall send them my holy Spirit to strengthen and prepare them for hard service, and then they shall fast, and performe those parts of more difficult obedience unto me, Mat. 9. 15. 17.*

Now farther, touching this *sending of the holy Spirit*, (which together with Christs intercession was one of the principal ends of his ascending up unto the right hand of power) it may be here demanded, Why the Holy Spirit was not before this Exaltation of Christ sent forth in such abundance upon the Church? The maine reason whereof, next unto the purpose and decree of God, into which all the acts of his wil are to be resolv'd, *Eph. 1. 11.* is given by our Saviour, *Joh. 14. 16. Joh. 16. 7.* Because he was to supply the corporal absence of Christ, and to be another Comforter to the Church, of which Office of the Spirit, (because it was one of the main ends of his Mission, and that one of the chief works of Christ sitting at Gods right hand) I shal here, without any unprofitable, or impertinent digression, speake a little.

First, then the Spirit is a Comforter, because an Advo-

cate

VERSE I.

Interpellare dicitur pro nobis, quis nobis gemendi & interpellandi imponit affectum. Aug. Quod dicitur Spiritus Sanctus intercedere pro nobis, hoc non est ita intelligendum ac si ipsa persona spiritus immedietate intercederet. Intercedi enim per gemitus: porro non gemit spiritus, sed nos gemimus; itaque docendo hoc facit, efficiendo ut gemamus. Cameron de Eccl. p. 98.

cate to his people; for so much the word signifies, and is elsewhere rendered, 1 John 2.1. Now he is called another Comforter or Advocate, to note the difference betweene Christ and the Spirit in this particular. There is then an Advocate by Office, when one person takes upon himself the cause of another, and in his name pleads it. Thus Christ by the Office of his Mediation and Intercession is an Advocate for his Church, and doth in his own person in heaven apply his merits, and further the cause of our salvation with his Father. There is likewise an Advocate by energie and operation, by instruction and assistance; which is, not when a work is done by one person in the behalf of another, but when one by his counsel, inspiration and assistance, enableth another to mannage his owne businesse, and to plead his own cause. And such an Advocate the Spirit is, who doth not intercede, nor appear before God in person for us, as Christ doth: but maketh interpellation for men in and by themselves, giving them an accessse unto the Father; emboldning them in their fears, and helping them in their infirmities when they know not what to pray, Eph. 2. 18. Hebr. 10. 15, 19. Rom. 8. 26. Eph. 3. 16.

First then, the Spirit as our Advocate justifieth our persons, and pleadeth our causes against the accusations of our spiritual enemies. For as Christ is our Advocate at the tribunal of Gods justice to plead our cause against the severity of his Law, and that most Righteous and undeniable charge of sinne which hee layes upon us: so the holy Spirit is our Advocate at the tribunall of Gods mercy, enabling us there to cleare our selves against the temptations. and murderous assaults of our Spiritual enemies, The world accuseth us by false and slanderous calumniation, laying to our charge things which we never did; the spirit in this case maketh us not only plead our innocency, but to rejoyce in our fellowship with the Prophets which were before us, to esteeme the reproache,

proaches of Christ greater riches than the treasures of the world, to count our selves happy in this; that it is not such low markes as we are, which the malice of the World aimeth at; but the Spirit of Glory and of God which resteth upon us, who is on their part evil spoken of, 1 Pet. 4. 14. Satan that grand accuser of the brethren, doth not only looke my signes upon my conscience, but further endevoureth to exclude me from the benefit of Christ by charging me with impenitency and unbeliefe. But here the Spirit enableth me to cleare my self against the Father of lies. It is true indeed, I have a naughty flesh, the seeds of all mischief in my nature, but the first means which brought me heseunto was the believing of thy lies, and therefore I will no longer entertaine thy hellish reasonings against mine own peace. I have a spirit which teacheth me to bewaile the strowardnesse of mine owne heart, to deny mine owne will and workes, to long and aspire after perfection in Christ, to adhere with delight and purpose of heart unto his Law, to lay hold with all my strength upon that plank of salvation, which in this shipwracke of my soule is cast out unto me. These affections of my heart come not from the earthly *Adam*, for what soever is Earthly, is sensual and Devilish too. And if they be holy and Heavenly, I will not believe that God will put any thing of Heaven, into a vessel of Hell, sure I am, he that died for me when I did not desire him, will in no wise cast me away when I come unto him. He that hath given me a will to love his service, and to lean upon his Promises, will in mercy accept the will for the deed, and in due time accomplish the works of Holinesse which he hath begun. Thus the Spirit like an Advocate secureth his clients title against the sophisticall exceptions of the Adversary, and when by temptations our eye is dimmed, or by the mixture of corruptions our evidences defaced, he by his skill helpeth out infirmities, and bringeth those things which are blotted out, and

VERSE I. and forgotten, into our remembrance againe, *Job. 14. 26.*

Secondly, an Advocate admonisheth and directeth his Client how to order and sollicite his owne businesse, what evidences to produce, what witnesses to prepare, what offices to attend, what preparations to make against the time of his hearing: so the Spirit doth set the hearts of believers in a right way of negotiating their spiritual affaires, maketh them to heare a voice behind them, furnishing them with wisdom and prudence in every condition: How to grapple with temptations, how to serve God in all estates, when to reprove, direct, counsel, comfort; when to speake, and when to be silent; when to let out, and when to chaine up a passion, when to use; and when to forbear liberty, how to prosecute occasions, and apply occurrences unto spiritual ends, every where, and in all things: strengthening and instructing us to mannage our hearts unto the best advantages of peace to our selves, and of Glory to our Master, *Esa. 30. 21. Col. 1. 9, 10. Phil. 4. 12, 13. Eph. 4. 20, 21.*

Thirdly, an Advocate maketh up the failings of his Client, and by his wisdom, and observation of the case, picketh out advantages beyond the instructions, and gathereth arguments to further the suite which his Client himselfe observed not. So the Spirit, when we know not what to pray, when with *Isaiah* we know not what to do, when it may be in our own apprehension the whole businesse of our peace and comfort lieth a bleeding, doth then help our infirmities, and by dumb cries, and secret intimations, and deepe, and unexpressible groanings, presenteth arguments unto him who is the searcher of hearts, and who knoweth the minde of the Spirit, which we our selves cannot expresse. Thus as an Infant crieth and complaineth for want of sleep, and yet knowes not that it is sleep which he wanteth: as a sick man goeth to the Physician, and complaineth that so he physick he wanteth, but knoweth not the thing which

which he asketh for: so the soule of a Christian by the assistance of the Spirit is enlarged to request things of God, which yet of themselves do passe the knowledge and understandings of those that aske them, *Rom. 8. 26, 27. Eph. 3. 19. Phil. 4. 7. 1 Cor. 14. 15.*

Secondly, the Spirit is a Comforter by applying and representing Christ absent unto the soule againe. For first, the Spirit carrieth a Christians heart up to Christ, in heavenly affections, and conversation, *Col. 3. 1, 3. Phil. 3. 20*, as a piece of earth when it is out of its place, doth ever move to the whole earth: so a sparkle of Christs Spirit will naturally move upward unto him who hath the fulnesse in him. A stone, though broken all to pieces in the motion, will yet through all that petil and violence move unto the center: so though the nature of man abhorre, and would of it selfe decline the passages of death, *2 Cor. 5. 4.* yet the Apostle desired to be dissolved, and to be taken asunder, that by any meanes he might be with Christ, who is the Center of every Christians desire, *Philip. 1. 23.* Secondly, the Spirit bringeth Christ downe to a Christian, formeth him in his heart, evidenceth him, and the vertue of his Passion and Resurrection unto the Conscience, in the powerful dispensation of his holy Ordinances. Therefore when our Saviour speaks of sending the Holy Spirit, he addeth, *I will not leave you comfortlesse, I will come to you: when the world seeth mee not, yet yee see mee.* This noteth the presence of Christ by his Spirit with the Church: but there is more than a presence, there is an inhabitation. *At that time you shall know that I am in my Father, and you in me, and I in you; John 14. 18, 20.*

Thirdly, the Spirit is a Comforter by a worke of sweet and fruitfull Illumination, not onely giving the knowledge, but the love and comfort of the truth unto a Christian, making him with open face to behold as in a glasse the glory of God, and thereby transforming him into the same

VERSE I.

same image from Glory to Glory. The light of other sciences is like the light of a Candle, nothing but light: but the knowledge of Christ by the Spirit is like the light of the Sun, which hath influences and vertue in it. And this is that which the *Apostle* calls the *Spirit of Revelation in the knowledge of God*; for though there be no Prophetical, or extraordinary revelations, by dreames, visions, extasies, or enthusialmes; yet according to the measure of spiritual perspicacie, and diligent observation of Holy Scriptures, there are still manifold revelations or manifestations of Christ unto the soule. The secret and intimate acquaintance of the Soule with God, the heavings, aspirings, and harmony of the heart with Christ, the sweet illapses and flashes of Heavenly light upon the soule, the knowledge of the depths of God and of Satan, of the whole armour of God and the strong man of conflicts of Spirit, protection of Angels, experiences of mercy, issues of temptation, and the like, are Heavenly and constant revelations out of the Word manifested to the Soules of the faithful by the Spirit.

Lastly and principally, the Spirit is a *Comforter in those effects of joy and peace* which he worketh in the heart. For joy is ever the fruit and companion of the Spirit, *Gal. 5. 22. Act. 13. 52.* and the joy of the Spirit is like the intercession of the Spirit, unspeakable and glorious *1 Pet. 1. 8.* not like the joy of the world, which is empty, false, and deceitful, full of vanity, vexation, insufficiency, unfutable to the soule, mingled with feares of disappointment and miscarriage, with tremblings and guilt of conscience, with certainty of period and expiration: but cleare, holy, constant, unmixed, satisfactory, and proportionable to the compass of the soule, more gladnesse than all the world can take in the increace of their corne and wine, *Psal. 4. 7.*

And this joy of the Spirit is grounded upon every passage of a *Christian condition*, from the entrance to the end.

First

First, the Spirit worketh joy in discovering and bending the heart to mourne for corruption. For it is the Spirit of grace and supplications which maketh sinners mourne, and loath themselves, *Zech. 12. 10, 11. Ezek. 36. 27. 31.* and such a sorrow as this, is the seede and the matter of true joy; As *Josephs* heart was full of joy, when his eyes powred out tears upon *Benjamins* neck. As in wicked laughter the heart may be sorrowful, so in holy mourning the heart may rejoyce, for all Spiritual afflictions have a peaceable fruit. This was the first glimpse and beame of the Prodigals joy, that he resolv'd with teares and repentance to return to his Father againe. For there is a sweet complacency in an humble and Spirituall heart to be vile in its own eyes, as to the hungry soule every bitter thing is sweet. Sacrifices (we know) were to be offered up with joy. *Mal. 2. 13.* and of all sacrifices a broken heart is that which God most delighteth in; *Psal. 51. 16, 17.* There is joy in Heaven at the repentance of a sinner, and therefore there must needs bee joy in the heart it selfe which repenteth in as much as it hath Heavenly affections beguine in it. Therefore as the Apostle saith, *Er a man become a fool, that he may be wise*, To may I truly say, let a man become a mourner, that hee may rejoyce.

Ἐν τοῖς πέν-
θεσι καὶ θένουσιν
ἐγγίσι τῆς
ἐκδοῦ. *Arist.*
Rhet.

If it be objected how one contrary affection can bee the ground and inducement of another, and that he who feeleth the weight of sinne, and displeasure of God, can have little reason to boast of much joy? To this I answer, First, that wee do not speake of those extraordinary combates, and graplings with the sence of the wrath of God, breaking of bones, and burning of bowels, which some have felt; but of the ordinary humiliations and courses of repentance, which are common to all. Secondly, that such Spiritual mourning and joy are not contrary in regard of the Spirit, nor doe one extinguish or expell the other. As black and white are contrary in

VERSE 11. *the wall, but meet without any repugnancy in the eye because though as qualities they fight, yet as objects they agree in communi conceptu visibilibus*: so joy and mourning, though contrary in regard of their immediate impressions upon the sense, do not only agree in the same principle, the Grace of Christ; and in the same end, the salvation of man, but may also be subordinated to each other; as a dark and muddy colour is a fit ground to lay gold upon, so a tender and mourning heart is the best preparation unto spiritual joy. Therefore our Saviour compareth *Spiritual sorrow unto the paines of a woman in travail*; other paines growing out of sicknesse and distempers, have none but bitter ingredients, and anguish in them; but that paine groweth out of the matter of joy, and leadeth unto joy: so though godly sorrow have some paine in it, yet that pain hath ever joy both for the root and fruit of it. *John 16. 21.* and though for the present it may haply intercept the exercise, yet it doth strengthen the habit and ground of joy: as those flowers in the Spring rise highest and with greatest beauty, which in winter shrinke lowest into the earth. *I trembled, saith the Prophet. in my selfe, that I might rest in the day of trouble, Hab. 3. 16.*

Secondly, the Spirit doth not only Discover, but heale the corruptions of the Soul, and there is no joy to the joy of a saved and cured man. The lame man when hee was restored by Peter, expressed the abundant exultation of his heart, by leaping and praising God, *Act. 3. 8.* for this cause therefore amongst others, the Spirit is called the oile of gladnesse, because by that healing vertue which is in him, he maketh glad the hearts of men. *The Spirit of the Lord, saith Christ, is upon mee, because the Lord annointed me to preach good tidings to the mecke, he hath sent me to bind the broken hearted, Isa. 61. 1.* and againe, *I will bind that which was braken, and wil strengthen that which was sick, Ezek. 34. 16.* Now this healing vertue of
Christ

Christ is the dispensation of his Word and Spirit; and therefore the Prophet saith, *the Sonne of Righteousnesse shall arise with healing in his wings, Mal. 4. 2.* where the Spirit in the Word, by the which he cometh, and preacheth unto men. *Eph. 2. 17. 1 Pet. 3. 19.* is called the wing of the Sonne, because he proceedeth from him, and was sent to supply his absence, as the beame doth the Sunnes; and this Spirit the Apostle calleth *the strengthner of the inner man, Eph. 3. 16.*

Thirdly, the Spirit doth not onely heale, but renew, and revive again: when an eye is smitten with a sword, there is a double mischief, a wound made, and a faculty perished; and here though a Chirurgicalian can heale the wound, yet he can never restore the faculty, because total privations admit no regresse or recovery: but the Spirit doth not onely heale, and repaire, but renew, and reedifie the spirits of men. As he healeth that which was torne, and bindeth up that which was smitten; so he reviveth and raiseth up that which was dead before, *Hos. 6. 1, 2.* and this the Apostle calls the *Renovation of the Spirit, Tit. 3. 5.* whereby old things are not mended and put together againe, (*for our fall made us all over unprofitable, and little worth, Rom. 3. 12. Prov. 10. 20.*) but are done quite away, and all things made new againe, *2 Cor. 5. 17.* The heart, mind, affections, judgement, conscience, members, changed from stone to flesh, from earthly to Heavenly, from the image of Adam to the image of Christ, *Ezek. 11. 19. 1 Cor. 15. 49.* Now this renovation must needs be matter of great joy. For so the Lord comforteth his afflicted people, *Isa. 54. 11, 12, 13.*

Fourthly, the Spirit doth not renew and set the frame of the heart right, and then leave it to its own care and hazards againe; but being thus restored, he abideth with it, to preserve and support it against all tempests and batteries. And this further multiplieth the joy and comfort of the Church, that it is *established in Righteousnesse*, so

VERSE I.

ἡδὺ τὸ νικᾶν.
Arist.

ἔπειθ' οἱ πάντες, καὶ
τὰ αὐτῶν ἀ-
νασκῆν ἡδὺ αἰ-
ναι πᾶσιν,
οὐκ ἔργα, ἀ-
γῆς δὲ καὶ οἱ
ἀτέκνοι αὐ-
τῶν οὐκ ἔργα
τὰ τέκνα.
Arist.

^b 1 Job. 3.8,9.

^c Mat. 7.23.

Luke 13.27

The whole

phrase ἀμαρ-

τίαν ποιῶν

is as much as

the Latine

Operarius Ini-

quitatis, one

that maketh a

trade of sinne,

or professeth

iniquity, whose

service is al-
together incom-

patible with the

profession or

hope of a Chris-

tian. Doctor

Jackson of

Justification, *scilicet* 2. c.8.

^d John 4.26.

^e 1 John 2.20.

Isa. 54.13.

Jer. 31.33.

^f 2 Cor. 3.3.

Τὸ μαρτυρεῖν ἡδὺ Arist.

^g Vid. Beza Annotas. in Rom. 6.17.

that no weapon which is formed against it can prosper, *Isa.* 54.14, 17. Victory is ever the ground of joy, *Isa.* 9.3. And the Spirit of God is a victorious Spirit. His judgement in the heart is sent forth unto victory, *Matth.* 2.20. and before him Mountaines shall be made a plaine, and every high thing shall be pulled downe, till hee bring forth the head stone with shoutings, *Zech.* 4.6, 7. To Steven he was a Spirit of victory against the disputers of the world, *Acts* 6.10. To the Apostles a Spirit of liberty in the prison, *Acts* 15.25, 26. To all the faithful a Spirit of joy and glory in the midst of persecutions, *1 Pet.* 4.13, 14.

Fifthly, The Spirit doth not onely preserve the heart which he hath renewed, but maketh it fruitfull and abundant in the works of the Lord, *Gal.* 5.22. *Rom.* 7.4. And a fruitfulness is a ground of rejoycing, *Isai* 54.1. Therefore they which are borne of God, cannot commit sinne; that is, they are not ἐργαταὶ τῆς ἀνομίας Workers, or artificers, or finishers of iniquity, because they have the seed of God, that is, his Spirit in them, which fitteth them (as seed doth the wombe or the earth) to bring forth fruit unto God. Partly, by teaching the heart, and casting it as it were in the mould of the Word, fashioning such thoughts, apprehensions, affections, judgements in the soul as are answerable to the Will and Spirit of God in the Word; so that a man cannot but set his seal, and say Amen to the written Law: partly, by moving, animating, applying, and most sweetly leading the heart unto the Obedience of that Law which is thus written therein.

Lastly, those whom he thus fitteth, he sealeth up unto a final and full redemption by the testimony of their adoption, which is the hantell and earnest of their

inheri-

inheritance; and thereby begetteth a lively hope, an earnest expectation, a confident attendance upon the promises, and an unspeakable peace and security thereupon; by which fruits of faith and hope, there is a glorious joy shed abroad into the soul, so full, and so intimately mingled with the same, that it is as possible for man to annihilate the one, as to take away the other. For according to the evidence of hope and excellency of the thing hoped, must needs the joy therefrom resulting receive its sweetness and stability.

By all this which hath been spoken of the *Mission of the Spirit in such abundance after Christs sitting at the right hand of God*, we should learne with what affections to receive the Gospel of Salvation, for the teaching whereof this Holy Spirit was shed abroad abundantly on the Embassadors of Christ; and with what heavenly conversations to expresse the power which our hearts have felt therein, to walk as children of the light, and as becometh the Gospel of Christ, to adorne our high profession, and not to receive the grace of God in vain. Consider first, that the word thus quickned will have an operation, either to convince unto Righteousnesse, or to seal unto condemnation; as the Sun, either to melt, or to harden; as the rain, either to ripen corn, or weeds; as the Scepter of a King, either to rule subjects or to subdue enemies; as the fire of a Gold-smith, either to purge gold, or devour dross; as the waters of the Sanctuary, either to heal places, or to turn them into salt pits, *Ezek. 47. 11.* Secondly, according to the proportion of the Spirit of Christ in his Word revealed shall be the proportion of their judgment who despise it. The contempt of a great Salvation, and glorious Ministry shall bring a forer condemnation, *Heb. 2. 2, 4.* *If I had not come and spoken unto them (saith our Saviour) they had not had sin,* *Joh. 15. 22.* Sins against the light of nature are no sins in comparison of those against the Gospel. *The earth*

VERSE I.

Rom. 8. 19, 23.
Rom. 9. 23
2 Cor. 5. 4
Phil. 4. 7
1 Pet. 1. 8
Joh. 16. 22, 24
ΕΛΤΙΖΟΥΤΕΣ
Χαριστι. Αριστ.

VERSE I.

which drinketh in the raine that falls often on it, and yet beareth nothing but thornes and briars, is rejected, and nigh unto cursing, Heb. 6. 7, 8. Thirdly, even here God will not alwayes suffer his Spirit to strive with flesh; there is a Day of Peace, which he calleth our day, a day wherein he entreateth and beseecheth us to be reconciled: but if we therein judge our selves unworthy of eternal life, and go obstinately on till there be no remedy, he can easily draw in his Spirit, and give us over to the intatuation of our own hearts, that we may not bee cleansed any more till he have caused his fury to rest up- on us, Ezek. 24. 13.

Wee see likewise by this Doctrine, whereupon the comforts of the Church are founded; namely, upon Christ as the first Comforter, by working our Reconciliation with God: and upon the Spirit as another Comforter, testifying and applying the same unto our souls. And the continual supply and assistance of this Spirit is the onely comfort the Church hath against the dominion and growth of sin. For though the motions of lust which are in our members, are so close, so working, so full of vigor and life, that we can see no power nor probabilities of prevailing against them; yet we know Christ hath a greater fulnesse of Spirit then we can have of sin, and it is the great promise of the new covenant, *That God will put his Spirit into us, and thereby save us from all our uncleanesse; Ezek. 36. 27, 29.* for though we be full of sin, and have but a seed, a sparkle of the Spirit put into us, and upheld, and fed by further, though small supplies, yet that little is stronger then legions of lust, as a little salt or leaven seasoneth a great lump, or a few drops of Spirit strengthen a whole glasse full of water. Therefore the Spirit is called a Spirit of judgment and of burning, because as one Judge is able to condemne a thousand prisoners, and a little fire to consume abundance of drosse: so the Spirit of God in and present with us, though re-
ceived

Continuance of Christs Kingdom.

55

VERSE 1.

ceived and supplied but in measure, though but a smothering and suppressed fire, shall yet break forth in victory and judgment against all that resist it. In us indeed there is nothing that feeds, but only that which resists and quencheth it. But this is the wonderful vertue of the Spirit of Christ in his members, that it nourisheth it self. Therefore sometimes the Spirit is called *Fire*, *Isai. 4. 4.* *Mat. 3. 11.* and sometimes *Oyle*, *Heb. 1. 9.* *1 John 2. 27.* to note, that the Spirit is nutriment unto it self, that that grace which we have received already, is preserved and excited by new supplies of the same grace. Which supplies we are sure shall be given to all that ask them, by the vertue of Christs prayer, *Joh. 14. 16.* by the vertue of his and his Fathers promise, *Joh. 16. 7.* *Act. 1. 4.* and by the vertue of that office which he still bears, which is to be the head, or vital principle of all holinesse and grace unto the Church. And all these are permanent things and therefore the vertue of them abideth, their effects are never totally interrupted.

Fifthly and lastly, this sitting of Christ at the right hand of God noteth his Intercession in the behalfe of the whole Church, and each member thereof. *Who is he that condemneth?* saith the Apostle, *it is Christ that is dead, yea rather that is risen again, who is even at the right hand of God, who also maketh intercession for us, Rom. 8. 34.* But of this Doctrine I shall speak more fully in the fourth verse, it being a great part of the Priesthood of Christ.

I now proceed to the last thing in this first verse, the continuance and Victories of Christs Kingdom, in these words. *Unsil I make thy foot thy footstool:* Wherein every word is full of weight. For though ordinarily subdivisions of holy Scripture, and crumbling of the bread of life, be rather a loosing then an expounding of it; yet in such parts of it as were of purpose intended for models and summaries of fundamental Doctrine (of which sort this Psalm is one of the fullest and briefest in the whole

VERSE I.

Scriptures, as in little maps of large Countries, there is no word whereupon some points of weighty consequence may not depend. Here then is considerable the *term of duration or measure of Christs Kingdom; Until.* The *Authour* of subduing Christs enemies under him; *I, the Lord.* The *manner* thereof, *ponam, and ponam scabellum;* Put thy foes as a stool under thy feet. Victory is a relative word, and presupposeth enemies, and they are expressed in the Text. I will but touch that particular, because I have handled it more largely upon another Scripture, and their enmity is here not described, but onely presupposed. It shewes it self against Christ in all the Offices of his Mediation. There is *enmity* against him as a *Prophet;* *Enmity* against his *Truth,* In *opinion,* by adulterating it with humane mixtures and superinducements, teaching for doctrines the traditions of men. In *affection,* by wishing many divine truths were razed out of the Scriptures, as being manifestly contrary to those pleasures which they love rather than God. In *conversation,* by keeping down the truth in unrighteousnesse; and in those things which they know, as brute beasts, corrupting themselves. *Enmity* against his *Teaching,* by quenching the motions, and resisting the evidence of his Spirit in the Word, refusing to hear his voyce, and rejecting the counsel of God against themselves. There is *Enmity* against him as a *Priest,* by undervaluing his Person, Sufferings, Righteousnesse, or Merits. And as a *King;* *Enmity* to his *Worship,* by profanenesse neglecting it, by Idolatry communicating it, by Superstition corrupting it. *Enmity* to his wayes and service, by ungrounded prejudices, misjudging them as grievous, unprofitable, or unequal wayes; and by wilful disobedience forsaking them to walk in the wayes of their own heart.

And this is a point which men should labour to try themselves in, for the enemies of Christ are not only out of the Church, but in the midst where his kingdome

is set up, *ver. 2. Iſai. 8. 14.* And indeed by, how much the more dangerous it is, by so much the more subtil wil Satan and a sinful heart be to deceive it self therein; for this is a certain truth, that men may professe and fallſly believe, *that they love the Lord Jeſus*, and yet be as real enemies unto his Person and Kingdome, as the *Jewes* that accused, and the *Heathen* that crucified him: He was set up for a sign to be spoken against, for a rock of offence, and a stone of stumbling, which the very builders themselves would reject. False brethren amongst the *Philippians* there were, who professed the name of *Christians*, and yet by their sensual walking and worldly mindednesse, declared themselves to be enemies to the Crosse of *Christ*, *Phil. 3. 18. 19.* To honour the bodies of the *Saints* departed with beautiful Sepulchers, is in it self a testimonial of sincere love and inward estimation of their persons and graces; and therefore the Holy Ghost hath recorded it for the perpetual honour of *Joseph of Arimathea* and *Nichodemus*, that they embalmed the body of *Jeſus*, and laid it in a new Sepulcher, *John 19. 38. 41.* yet our Saviour pronounceth a *wo* against the *Scribes* and *Pharisees*, because they built the Tombs of the *Prophets*, and garnished the Sepulchers of the righteous, *Matth. 23. 29.* The fault was not in the fact it selfe, but in the hypocrisie of the heart, in the incongruity of their other practices, and in that damned protection, which by this plausible pretext of honour to the *Prophets*, they laboured to gain to their persons; and approbation to their attempts against *Christ*, in the minds of the people, who yet ordinarily esteemed *Christ*, (whom they persecuted) a *Prophet* sent from *God*. They professe. If we had been in the dayes of our *Fathers*, we would not have done as they did: But our Saviour reproves this hypocritical persuasion, by shewing first, that it was no strange thing with them to persecute *Prophets*, but a national and hereditary sinne, and therefore they had

no

VERSE II.

no reason to boast of their descent (as their manner was, *Exe 3:8. Job 8:39.*) or to think that Gods mercies were entail'd unto them; since by their own confession, they were the posterity of those that had killed the Prophets. And secondly, that they did fulfil the measure of their Fathers, that is, that which their fathers had been long and leisurely a doing, they now did altogether in one blow; for it was the same Christ whom they persecuted in his person, and their fathers in his Prophets. And therefore though they seemed to honor and revive the memory of those holy Martyrs, yet upon them should light the guilt of all the righteous blood which had ever been shed in the Land, in as much as their malice was directed against that fulnesse, of which all the Prophets had but a measure. If by several enemies a man be severally mangled, one cuts off a foot, another an hand, another an arm, and after all this, there come one who cuts off the head, and yet bestowes some honourable ceremonies upon those members which the rest had abused, he shall justly suffer as if he had slain a whole man, in as much as his malice did eminently containe in it the degrees of all the rest, and that pretended honour shall be so far from compensating the injury, that it shal add thereunto an aggravation of base hypocrisie. Thus, as the *Jewes*, when they thought they did honour and admire the Prophets, did yet harbor in their breasts that very root of fury, and had that self-same constitution of soul which was in their forefathers who shed their blood; so in our dayes, men may say and think that they love Christ, and court him with much out side and empty service, may boast that if they had lived in the dayes of those unthankful Jewes, they would not have partaked with them in so execrable a murder, and yet interpretatively and at second hand shew the very same root of bitternesse, and rancorous constitution of heart against him in his Spirit and Ordinances, which was in those

those men, when they cryed, *Away with him crucifie him, crucifie him.*

VERSE I.

Many grounds there are of this grand misperfection of the heart in its love to Christ, which I will but touch upon. The first is the general acceptance and countenance which the Gospel of Christ receiveth amongst the Princes of this world, who in Christian Commonwealths do both by their owne voluntary and professed subjection, and by the vigour of their publick lawes establish the same. Now this is most certain, that as in all other Sciences there cannot be *transitus a genere in genus*, the principles of one will not serve to beget the conclusions of another: so here especially, if a spiritual assent and affection be grounded upon no other then humane inducements it is most undoubtedly spurious and illegitimate. That reason which the Pharisees used to dissuade men from believing in Christ; *Have any of the Rulers or the Pharisees believed on him?* Job. 7. 48. Is one of the principal arguments which many men have now, why they do believe him, because the Rulers, whose examples and lawes they observe more upon trust than tryal, do lead them thereunto: and therefore wee finde amongst the *Jewes*, that those very men who when the Government of the whole twelve Tribes was one, did all consent in an unity of Religion; upon the distraction of the kingdome under *Jeroboam*, were presently likewise divided in their observance of Gods worship; and they who before were zealous for the Temple at *Jerusalem*, were after as superstitious for *Dan* and *Bethel*. The Prophet giveth the reason of it, *They willingly walked after the commandment*; namely, of *Jeroboam*. Hos. 5. 11. No sooner did the Prince interpose his Authority, but the people were willing to pin their opinions and practises upon his word. If *Omri* make *stranger*, and *Ahab* confirm *Idolatrous counsels* by his own practises; the Prophet shewes how forward the people are to walk in them

VERSE I.

them, *Mich. 6. 16.* Therefore it is that our Saviour saith of the best sort of wicked men, *Those who with gladnesse (and that is ever a symptome of love) received the Gospel; that yet in time of persecution they were offended and fell away, Matth. 13. 21.* To note unto us, that when Christ is forsaken because of persecution, the imaginary love which was bestowed upon him before, was certainly supported by no other ground then that which is contrary to persecution, namely the countenance and protection of publick power.

Secondly, a great part of men professe faith and love to Christ, meerly upon the *rules of their Education.* The main reason into which their Religion is resolved, is not any evidence of excellency in it self, but only the customes and traditions of their forefathers; which is to build a divine faith upon humane authority, and to set man in the place of God. Certain it is that contrary religions can never be originally grounded upon the same reason. That which is a true and adequat principle of faith or love to Christ, can never be suitable to the conclusions of *Mahometism* or *Idolatry*. Now then, when a *professed Christian* can give no other account of his love to Christ, then a *Turk* of his love to *Mahomet*; when that which moveth an *Idolater* to hate Christ, is all that one of us hath to say why he believeth in him, certainly that love and faith is but an empty presumption, which dishonoureth the Spirit of Christ, and deludeth our own souls. There is a natural instinct in the mind of man to reverence and vindicate the traditions of their progenitors, and at first view to detest any novel opinions which seem to thwart the received doctrine wherein they had been bred. And this affection is ever so much the stronger, by how much the tradition received is about the nobler and more necessary things. And therefore it discovereth it self with most violence and impatience, in matters of Religion, wherein the eternal welfare

Auro parietes,
auro laquearia,
auro fulgens ca-
pita columna-
rum, & nudus
atque esuriens
ante fores ne-
stras Christus in-
pauere moritur.
Hieron. ad
Gaudenium.

“Οι δ' ἂν μὴ
ἐνέστησαν ἱε-
ροῖς ὡς ἐδί-
δαξας, γυνέ-
εἰς δ' αὖτε μὴ
ὄντες χριστι-
ανοὶ καὶ ἀγα-
ποῖν διὰ γλῶσ-
σας τὰ τὰ χρι-
στὸν διδάμα-
τα. Iust. Mart.
Apol. 2.

Qui Christiano
vocabulo glori-
antur & perdi-
tū vivunt, non
absurdū possunt
videri medio
Noe filio figu-
rari; passionem
quippe Christi,
qua illius homi-
nis nuditate fig-
nificata est, &
annuncians pro-
ficiendo, & male
agendo exbono-
rant. August. de
Civ. D. li. 6. c. 2
“Ου χριστιανοὶ
ἀλλὰ χριστι-
ανοὶ, &c. Ige-
nat. Epist. ad
Tral.

will measure the love or hatred or men unto him, is their love or hatred of his brethren and members here, *Mat.* 25. 40, 45. for in all their afflictions Christ himself is afflicted. *Peter*, lovest thou me? feed my sheep; make proof of thy love to me, by thy service and compassion to my people. And how many are there every where to be found, whose love unto themselves hath devoured all brotherly love? who take no pity either upon the souls, or temporal necessities of those with whom they yet pretend a fellowship in Christs own body? who spend more upon their own pride and luxury, upon their backs and bellies, their pleasures and excesses, yea bury more of their substance in the mawes of Hawks and Dogs, then they can ever perswade themselves to put into the bowels of the poor Saints? Surely at the day of judgement, however such men here professe to love Christ, and would spit in the face of him, with *Iustin Martyr*, should say, they were not Christians, it will appear, that such men did as formally and as properly deny Christ, as if with *Peter* they had publicly sworn, *I know not the man*. The Apostle plainly intimates thus much, when he sheweth that the experiment of the *Corinthians* ministration to the necessitie of the Saints was an inducement unto the Churches to praise God for their professed subjection to the Gospel of Christ, *2 Cor.* 9. 13. Again, as Christ is present with us in his poor members, so likewise in the power of his Ordinances, and in the light and evidence of his Spirit shining forth in the lives of holy men; If then we are as impatient of the edge of his Word, when it divides between the bone and the marrow, when it discerneth and discovereth our secret thoughts, our base sinnes, our ambitious, unclean, and hypocritical intents: if the lives and communion of the Saints be in like manner an eye-sore unto us in shaming and reprovng our formal and fruitlesse profession of the same Truth, as Christs was unto the Jewes, certainly

certainly the same affections of hatred, reproach, and dis-
estimation which we shew unto them, we would with
so much the more bitterneſſe have expreſſed unto Chriſt
himſelf, if we had lived in his dayes, by how much that
Spirie of Grace, againſt which the ſpirit which is in us
envieth, was above meaſure more abundantly in him,
then in the holieſt of his members. *If you were of the
world (ſaith our Saviour) the world would love their cōs:
but now I have called you out of the world: I have given
to you a Spirit which is contrary to the ſpirit of the
world, therefore the world hateth you.* And this is evident,
when men hate another meerely for that diſtinction
which differenceth him from them, they much more
hate him from whom the difference it ſelfe originally
proceedeth. We ſee then that they who openly profeſſe
Chriſt, may yet inwardly hate him, becauſe the ground
of their profeſſion is not any experimental goodneſſe
which they have taſted in him (for by nature men have
no reliſh of Chriſt at all) but only ſelfe-love and private
ends, ^a whereby Chriſt is ſubordinated to their owne
commodities. Men are herein juſt like the ^b Samaritans,
of whom *Joſephus* reports, that when *Antiochus* perſe-
cuted the *Jewes*, they then utterly diſavowed any con-
ſanguinity with them, denied their Temple on Mount
Geruſim to bee dedicated to the great God; and declared
their lineage from the *Medes* and *Persians*; but when be-
fore that, *Alexander* had ſhewed favour unto the *Jewes*,
and remitted the tribute of every ſeventh year, they then
claimed kindred with that people, and counterſeited a

^a Si quis Chriſto
i. mporalia pre-
ponat, non eſt in
eo fundamentū
Chriſti. Aug.
de Civit. Dei,
lib. 1. cap. 26
Multi amiſſi
charitate, prop-
terea non ex-
cūnt ſortas, quia
ſecularibus imp-
lumentis tenen-
tur, & ſua qua-
rentes, non qua
Jeſu Chriſti;
non à Chriſti u-
niſitate, ſed à ſuis
commodis no-
lunt recedere.
Aug. de Bap i-
mo con. Dc-
nar. lib. 4. c. 10.

^b Ταῦτα ἡ βέλτερες οἱ Σαμαρεῖς ἡ ἀρχαῖος καὶ Ἰουδαίος, ἐκείνῳ ὁμολογῶν αὐ-
τῷ εἶναι συγγενεὶς αὐτῷ, ἐδὲ ἡ ἐν γὰρ (ἢ καὶ τῷ μὴ ἵσθαι Θεοῦ, &c. *Joſ. Antiq.*
lib. 1. cap. 7. Ἰδοὺς οὗτοι καὶ Ἰουδαίος Ἀλέξανδρον ἔτα λαμπρῶς τελεῖται, ἐγ-
νοῶν αὐτῷ Ἰουδαίος ὁμολογῶν ἐπὶ τῷ οἱ Σαμαρεῖς τοῖς τοῖς τῷ φύσιν, ἐν ἐκείναις
συμφωταῖς ὄντας καὶ Ἰουδαίος ἀρνεῖσθαι συγγενεῖς ἔχουσιν. ὅταν ἡ τι αὐτῷ λαμ-
πεῖν ἰδῶσιν ἐν τύχῃ, ἐξαιρῶντες ἀπὸ τῆς αὐτῇ τῇ κοινωνίᾳ, &c. *Joſep Antiq.*
lib. 1. cap. 3.

descent

VERSE I.

Quos vides
petulanter &
procaciter insul-
sare servis Chri-
sti, sunt in eis
plurimi qui il-
lum interitum
clademque non
evasiscent, nisi
servis Christi se
esse finxissent, et
nunc ingrata su-
perbia, atq; im-
piissimā insanid-
ejus nomini resi-
stunt corde per-
verso, ut impi-
ternis tenebris
paniantur; ad
quod nomen, ore
vel subdolo con-
fugerunt, ut
temporali luce
fruantur. Aug.
de Civ. Dei, lib.
I. cap. I.

descent from the Tribes of Ephraim and Manasseh, that thereby they might enjoy the privileges of those people whom otherwise they mortally hated. And so we find that in the vastation of the City of Rome by the Gothes and Barbarians, when there was but one onely refuge allowed the Romanes for the safety of their lives, namely to fly unto the Christian Churches, those very enemies of Christ and his profession, who before had persecuted him, and after returned to their malice again, were yet then as hasty to fly unto his Temples, and to assume the title of his servants, as they were after ungratefully malicious in reproaching Christian Religion, as if that had been the provocation of those calamities. And may we not still observe amongst Christians at this day many men who contrary to the evidence of their judgement, and peace of their consciences, conform themselves unto the vanities, courses and companies of this evil world, and like cowards, are afraid to adventure on a rigorous and universal subjection to the Truth of Christ, dare not keep themselves cloise to those narrow rules of Saint Paul, to abstain from jesting which is not seemly, to avoid all appearances of evil, to reprove the unfruitful Works of darknesse, to speak unto Edification, that their words may minister grace unto the hearers, to rejoyce alwaies in the Lord, to give place unto wrath, to recompence evil with good, and to be circumspet and exact in their walking before God; and all this meerly out of suspicion of some disrespect & disadvantages which may hereupon meet them in the world, of some remoraes, and stoppage in the order of those projects which they have contrived for their private ends? Now if such purposes as these do startle men from a punctual and rigorous profession of the Gospel of Christ and his most holy wayes (notwithstanding our vow in Baptism doth as strictly bind us thereunto, as unto the external title of Christianity) suppose we that the same or greater diladvan-

disadvantages should now (as in the Primitive times) attend the naked and outward profession of Christ; would not such men as these fall into downright apostacy, and deny the Lord that bought them? Certainly our Saviour hath so resolved that case in the very best sort of unregenerate men, noted in the stony ground; when times of persecution happen, that they are brought to the tryal, who it was whom in their profession they loved. Christ or themselves, the excellency of the knowledge of him, or the secure enjoyment of secular contentments, They will then certainly fall away, and be offended, *Matth. 13. 21.* so profound and unsearchable is the deceitfull heart of man, that by that very reason for which men contend for the outward face and profession of Religion, because they love their pleasures and profits, which without such a profession they cannot peaceably enjoy, they are deterred from a close, spirituall and universall obedience to the power thereof, because thereby likewise those pleasures and profits are kept within such rules of moderation as the nature of a boundlesse and unsatisfiable lust will not admit. This is a certain rule in love, that the motions and desires thereof are strong, and therefore in any thing which the soul loves, it therein strives for excellency and perfection; and this rule holds most true in Religion, because when the soul loves that, it loves it under the apprehension of the greatest good, and therefore by consequence sets the strongest and most industrious desires of the soul upon it. Therefore the *Apostle* saith, that the Love of Christ, namely that love of him which is by the Holy Ghost shed abroad in our hearts, constraineth us to live unto him, and to aspire after him who died for us, and rose again. Love is as strong a death, it will take no deniall. It is the wing and weight of the soul, which fixeth all the thoughts and carrieth all the desires unto an intimate unity with the thing it loves, stirreth up a zeal to remove all ob-

VERSE I.

Amor concupiscentia non requiescit in quacunque extrinsecâ a se superflua adaptione amati, sed querit amicum perfectè habere, quasi ad intimam illius perveniens, &c. Aquin. 1. 2a. qu. 28. art. 1. vid. ibid. art. 4. & 5. Cant. 2. 5. Psal. 119. 29. Isaiah 26. 8. Psal. 42. 2. Rom. 8. 23. Psal. 119. 5. 10. 31. 47. 54. 81. &c.

Quodlibet agens, propter amorem agit quodcunque agit. Aquin. 1. 2a. qu. 28. art. 6.

stacles which stand betweene it, worketh a languor or failing of nature in the want of it, a liquefaction and softnesse of nature to receive the impression of it, an egress of the Spirits, and as it were an hast of the soul to meet and entertaine it. Whence those expressions of the Saints in Holy Scripture, *Comfort me with apples, stay me with flagons, for I am sick of love. My soule breaketh for the longing which it hath unto thy judgments at all times. The desire of our soule is to thy Name, and to the remembrance of thee. My soule thirsteth for God, yea for the living God; when shall I come and appear before God? Wee that have the first fruits of the Spirit, groan within our selves, waiting for the adoption, even the redemption of our Bodies. O that my waies were directed, that I might keepe thy Commandments. With my whole heart have I sought thee, I have stuck unto thy Testimonies. I will delight my selfe in thy Commandments. Thy Statutes have beene my songs. My soule fainteth for thy salvation, &c.* By all which we see, that a true love of Christ doth excite strong desires, and an earnest aspiring and ambition of the soule to walke in all well-pleasing, and to be in all things conformable unto him. What the Apostle saith of Spiritual hope, we may truly say of love, (which is the fundamental affection, and root of all the rest) *He that hath it indeede in him, purgeth himself, even as Christ is pure.* The love of the World, and the things and lusts of the World may indeed consist with the formal profession, but no way with the truth or power of a true love to Christ or his government. For love is ever the principle and measure of all our actions, such as it is, such likewise will they be too.

Fourthly, something like love there may be in *natural* men unto Christ, grounded upon the Historical assurance and perswasion of his being now in glory, attended by mighty Angels, filled with all the treasures of wisdom, Knowledge, Grace, Power, and other excellent attributes.

attributes, which can attract love even from an enemy: and that he hath and still doth procure such good things for Mankind, in their deliverance from the guilt of sin, and from the wrath to come, as of which, might they but have an exemption from his Spiritual government, and a dispensation to live according to their own lusts still, no man should be more greedily desirous. As *Samson* met the Lion as an enemy, when hee was alive; but after he was slain, he went unto him as to a table; there was only terror while he lived, but hony when hee was dead: so doubtlesse many men, to whom the Bodily presence of Christ, and the mighty Power and Penetration of his heavenly preaching, whereby hee smote sinners unto the ground, and spake with such authority as never man spake, would have been unsufferably irksome, and full of terror (as it was unto the *Scribes* and *Pharisees*) can yet, now that he is out of their sight, and doth not in person, but only by those who are his witnesses torment the inhabitants of the earth, pretend much admiration and thankful remembrance of that death of his, which was so full of hony for all that come unto him. For as particular dependencies and expectations may make a man flatter and adore the greatnesse of some living Potentate, whose very image notwithstanding the same man doth professedly abominate in other Tyrants of the world who are dead, or upon whom he hath not the same ends: so the self-same reason may make men in hypocritical expressions flatter and fawn upon Christ himself who is absent, and yet hate with a perfect hatred the very image of his Spirit, in the power of his Word, and in the lives of his People. The very *Scribes* and *Pharisees*, who blasphemed his Spirit, and contrived his death, could yet be contented to be gainers thereby; for so they confesse, *It is expedient for us, that one dye for the people.*

Lastly, a false love to Christ may be grounded upon:

*Securus licet
Encam Ruti-
lumque ferocem
Committas, nul-
li gravis est per-
cussus Achilles.
Quid refert di-
diu ignoscat
Mutius, annon?
Pone Rigillini,
talâ lucebis in
illâ Qua stan-
tes ardens qui
fixo gutture ju-
vant. C. Ju-
venal. Satyr. 1.*

VERSE I

*false conceit of love to his Ordinances : For as it is certain that he who loves the Word and Worship of Christ as his, doth love him too who is the Author of them; so it is certain likewise, that that love which is sometimes pretended unto them, may indeed in them fix-upon nothing but accidentall and by-respects. This people, saith the Lord to his Prophet, come, and sit before thee as my people, and they heare thy words, but they will not doe them: for with their mouth they shew much love, but their hearts goeth after their covetousnesse. Here is love in pretence, but falshood in the heart. What then was it which in the Prophet they did thus love? That presently followes, Thou art unto them as a very lively song of one that hath a pleasant voyce, and can play well on an instrument, Ezek 33. 31, 32. that is, it is not my will which in thy Ministry they at all regard, but only those circumstantiall ornaments of gracefull action and elocution which they attend with just alike proportion of sensuall delight, as an eare doth the harmony of a well tuned instrument. For as a man may be much affected with the picture of his enemy, if drawne by a skilfull hand, and yet therein love nothing of the person, but only the cunning of the workman who drew the peece : So a man who hates the life and Spirit of the word of God it selfe, as being diametrically contrary to that spirit of lust, and of the world which rules in him, may yet be so wonderfully taken with that dexterity of wit, or delicacy of expression, or variety of learning, or sweetnesse of speech, and action, or whatsoever other perfection of nature or industry in the dispensers of that word are most sutable to his naturall affections, as that he may from thence easily cheat his owne conscience, and ground a misperwasion of his love to Gods Word, which yet indeed admireth nothing but the perfections of a man. Nay suppose he meet not with such *lenocinia* to entice his affection, yet the very pacification of the conscience, which by a notorious neglect*

neglect of Gods ordinances would haply be disquieted, or the credit of bearing conformity to Ecclesiastical orders, and the established service of God in his Church, or some other the like sinister respect may hold a man to such an external faire correspondence, as by a deceitfull heart may easily be misconstrued a love of Gods Ordinances. Nay further, a man may externally glory in the priviledge of Gods Oracles, he may distinctly believe, and subscribe to the truth of them, he may therein heare many things gladly, and escape many pollutions of the world, and yet here hence conclude no clearer evidence of his love to Christ in his Word, than the unbelieving Jewes, or Herod, or Ahab, or Simon Magus, or the foolish Virgins and Apostates (all which have attained to some of these degrees) could have done.

VERSE I.

For the clearing then of this great case touching the evidence of a mans love to Christ, wee must first know, that this is not a flower of our own garden; for every man by nature is an enemy to Christ and his Kingdome, of the Jews mind, *we will not have this man to reign over us.* And the reason is, because the image of the old Adam which we bear, is extremely contrary to the heavenly image of the second Adam, unto which we are not born, but must be renewed. And this is certain, our love is according to our likeness, he who hath not the nature and Spirit of Christ, can never love him or move towards him. For love is like fire, *congregat homogenea*, it carrieth things of a nature to one another. Our love then unto Christ must be of a spiritual generation: and it is grounded upon two causes. First, upon the Proportion which is in him unto all our desires or capacities; upon the evidence of that unspeakable and bottomlesse goodness which is in him, which makes him the fairest of ten thousand, even altogether lovely. For that heart which hath a spirituall view of Christ, will be able by faith to observe more dimensions of love, and sweetness in him

Jer. 7. 4.
Rom. 2. 17, 20
Hos. 2. 2, 3
Mark 6. 20.
1 King. 21. 27.
29.

Ag. 8. 13.
2 Pet. 2. 20.

E. f. 9. 18, 19.

V. R. 3. 1.

Psal 14. 3

Amor meus pōn-
dit meum, co fe-
ror quocunq; fe-
ror Aug.

than the knowledge of any creature is able to measure. In all worldly things; though of never so curious and delicate an extraction, yet still even those hearts which swimme in them, and glut upon them, can easily discover more dregs than Spirits; nothing was ever so exactly fitted to the soule of man, wherein there was not some defect, or excess; something which the heart could wish were away; or something which it could desire were tempered with it. But in Christ and his kingdom there is nothing unlovely. For as in man the *all* that is, is full of corruption; so in Christ the *all* that he is, is nothing but perfection. His fulnesse is the center and treasure of the soule of man, and therefore that love which is thereupon grounded must needs be in the soule as an universall habit and principle, to facilitate every service whereby wee move unto this center. For love is the weight or spring of the soule, which sets every faculty on work, neither are any of those commandments grievous which are obeyed in *Love*. And therefore it is called *the fulfilling of the Law*. True love unto Christ keeps the whole heart together, and carries it all one way; and so makes it universall, uniforme, and constant in all its affections unto God (for unstedfastnesse of life proceeds from a divided or double heart, *James 1. 8*). As in the motions of the heavens, there is one common circumvolution which carries the whole frame daily unto one point from east to west, though each severall sphere hath a severall crosse way of its own, wherein some move with a swifter, and others with a slower motion: So though severall Saints may have their severall corruptions, and those likewise in some stronger than in others, yet being all animated by one and the same Spirit, they all agree in a steady and uniform motion unto Christ. If a stone were placed under the concave of the Moon, though there be fire, and air, and water between, yet through them all it would hasten to its own place; so, be the obstacles never so

many

many, or the conditions never so various through which a man must passe, through evil report and good report, through terrors and temptations, through a Sea and a wilderness, through fiery Serpents and fons of *Asnak*; yet if the heart love Christ indeed, and conclude that Heaven is its home, nothing shall be able totally to discourage it from hastning thither, whither Christ the fore-runner is gone before.

VERSE. I.

Secondly, the true Love of Christ is grounded upon the evidence of that *Propriety* which the soule hath unto him. And of that mutual inhabitation and possession which is between them. So that our love unto him in this regard is a kind of self-love (and therefore very strong) because Christ and a Christian are but one: And the more perswasion the soule hath of this unity, the more must it needs love Christ. For we love him, because he loved us first, 1 *Joh* 4. 16, 19. And therefore our Saviour, from the womans apprehension of Gods more abundant love in the remission of her many and great sins, concludeth the measure and proportion of her love to him. But saith he, *To whom little is forgiven, the same loveth little, Luke* 7. 47.

Cant. 2. 16.
John 14. 23.
Joh. 17. 21, 22

Now True Love of Christ and his Kingdome thus grounded, will undoubtedly manifest it selfe, first in an *universal extent*, unto any thing wherein Christ is present unto his Church. First, the soule in this case will abundantly love and cherish the Spirit of Christ. Entertain with dearest embraces, as worthy of all acceptation: the motions, and dictates, and secret illapses of him into the soule; will be careful to heare his voice alwaies behind him, prompting and directing him in the way he should walke; wil endeavour with all readinesse and pliability of heart to receive the impression of his seale; and the testimony which he giveth in the inner man unto all Gods promises; wil fear and suspect nothing more than the trowardnesse of his own nature, which daily endeavour

VERSE 1.

devoureth to quench, grieve, resist, rebell against this Holy Spirit; and to sling off from his conduct againe. Secondly, the soule in this case will abundantly love the *Ordinances of God* (in which by his Spirit he is still walking in the midst of the Churches;) for the Law is written in it by the finger of God, so that there is a sureable-nesse and coincidence betweene the Law of God and the heart of such a man. He will receive the Word in the purity thereof, and not give way to those humane inventions which adulterate it; to that spiritual treason of wit and fancy, or of heresie and contradiction, which would stampe the private image and superscription of a man upon Gods own coine, and torture the Scriptures to confesse that which was never in them. He will receive the Word in the *Power, Majesty, and Authority* thereof, suffering it like thunder to discover the Forrest, and to drive out all those secret corruptions which shelter themselves in the corners, or deceits of his heart. He will delight to have his imaginations humbled; and his fleshly reasonings non-plus'd, and all his thoughts subdued unto the obedience of Christ. Hee will receive the Word as a *wholsome potion*, to that very end that it may search his secret places; and purge out those tough and incorporated lusts which hitherto he had not prevailed against. He will take heed of hardning his heart that he may not hear of rejecting the counsel of God against himself, of thrusting away the word from him of setting up a resolved will of his own against the call of Christ, as of most dangerous downfalls to the soule. Lastly, he will receive the word in the *spiritualnesse thereof*, subscribing to the closest precepts of the Law: suffering it to cleanse his heart unto the bottom, he wil let the consideration of Gods command, preponderate and over-rule all respects of fear, love, profit, pleasure, credit, compliancy, or any other charm to disobedience; hee will be contented to be led in the narrowest way, to have his se-
crettest

Evidences of our true love to Christ.

73

VERSE I.

cretest corruption reveal'd and removed, to expose the conscience with patience under the saving, though severest blowes of this spiritual sword. In one word, he will deny the pride of his own wit, and if it be the evident truth of God which is taught him, though it come naked and without any dressing, or contributions of humane fancie, he will distinguish between the Authour and the Instrument, betweene the treasure and the vessel in which it comes, and from any hand receive it with such awful submission of heart, as becometh Gods owne Word. Thirdly, the soul in this case will most dearly love every member of Christ. For these two, the love of Christ, and of his members, do infallibly accompany one another. For though there be farre higher proportion of love due unto Christ than unto men, yet our love to our brethren is *quoad nos* and *a posteriori*, not only the evidence, but even the measure of our love to Christ. *Hee that loveth not his brother whom hee hath seene, how can he love God whom he hath not seene?* (saith the Apostle) 1 John 4. 20. he that hath not love enough in him for a man like himselfe, how can he love God whose goodnesse being above our knowledge, requireth a transcendency in our love? This then is a sure rule, He that loveth not a member of Christ, loveth not him, and hee who groweth in his love to his brethren, groweth likewise in his love to Christ. For as there is the same proportion of one to five, as there is of twenty to an hundred, though the numbers be far less: and as the motion of the shadow upon the dial, answereth exactly to that proportion of motion and distance which the Sunne hath in the Firmament, though the Sunne goeth many millions of miles, when the shadow, it may bee, moyeth not the breadth of a hand: so though our love to Christ ought to be a far more abundant love, than to any of his members; yet certain it is, that the measure of our progresse in brotherly love is punctually answerable

VERSE I.

[swerable to the growth of our love to Christ.

Secondly, A true grounded love unto Christ will shew it self in the *right manner* or conditions of it. Which are principally these three: First, it must be an *incorrupt and sincere love*. Grace bee upon all those that love the Lord *Iesus in ἀφάρατος*, in incorruption or sincerity, saith the Apostle, Eph. 6. 24. that is, on those who love not in word or outward profession and stipulation only, but in deed and truth, or in the permanent constitution of the inner man; which moveth them to love him alwaies and in all things, to hate every false way, to set the whole heart, the study, purpose, prayer and all the activity of our Spirits against every corruption in us, which standeth at enmity with him and his Kingdome. Secondly, it must be a *principal and superlative love*, grounded upon the experience of the soul in it self, that there is ten thousand times more beauty and amiableness in him, than in all the honours, pleasures, profits, satisfactions, which the world can afford; that in comparison or competition with him the dearest things of this world, the parents of our body, the children of our flesh, the wife of our bosom, the blood in our veins, the heart in our breast, must not only be laid down and lost as *sacrifices*, but hated as *snarers* when they draw us away from him. Thirdly, it must be an *unshared and uncommunicable love*, without any corivals; for Christ as he is unto us all in all, so he requireth to have all our affections fixed upon him: As the rising of the Sun drowneth all those innumerable Stars which did shine in the Firmament before; so must the beauty of this Sun of righteousness blot out, or else gather together unto it self all those scattered affections of the soule, which were before cast away upon meaner objects.

Lastly, True love unto Christ will shew it selfe in the natural and genuine effects of so strong and spiritual a grace: some of the principal I before named, unto which

we

Evidences of our true love to Christ. 75

we may adde, First, *An universal, cheerful and constant obedience to his holy commandments: If a man, saith Christ, love me, he will keep my Commandments; and my Father will love him, and we will come unto him, and make our abode with him. John 14. 24.* There is a twofold love, a love which descends, and a love which ascends; a love of Bounty and beneficence, and a love of Duty and service: so then, as a Father doth then only in truth love his Child, when with all care he provideth for his present education and future subsistence; so a child doth then truly love his Father, when with all reverence and submission of heart he studieth to please and to do him service. And this love, if it be free and ingenuous, by how much the more not only pure and equal in it selfe, but also profitable unto him the commandment is, by so much the more carefully will it endeavour the observation thereof. And therefore since the soul of a Christian knows that as God himself is good, and doth good, so his Law (which is nothing but a ray and glimpse of his own holinesse) is likewise good in it self, and doth good unto those which walk uprightly, it is hereby enflamed to a more sweet and serious obedience thereunto, in the keeping whereof, there is for the present so much sweetness, and in the future so great a reward; *Thy Word, saith the Psalmist, is very pure, therefore thy servant loveth it.*

Secondly, *A free, willing, and cheerfull suffering for him and his Gospel.* Unto you, saith the Apostle, it is given in the behalf of Christ, not only to believe on him, but also to suffer for his sake, *Phil. 1. 29.* We see how far a humane love either of their Country; or of vaine glory, hath transported some heathen men to the devoting and casting away their own lives: How much more should a spiritual love of Christ put courage into us to beare all things, and to endure all things, as the Apostle speaks, *1 Corinth. 13. 7.* for him, who bare our sinnes and our stripes,

VERSE I.

Psalm 119. 68
Psalm 119. 71
Mic 2. 7.
Isa 45. 19
Psalm 119. 140

Terull. Apolog
cap. ult.

76 Evidences of our true love to Christ.

VERSE I.

Ἄ Οὐδ' ἦκουσα
 καὶ ἐξ ἑτη δού-
 λω αὐτοῦ, καὶ
 ἡδὲ με ἡδίκη-
 σεν, καὶ πᾶς θύα
 μοι βλασφημί-
 σαι τὴ βασιλεία
 μὴ τὴ σωσάτω
 μέ. Euseb. hist
 Eccl. 1. 4. c. 14

Ἡ Πύξ καὶ γαν-
 ῑς, ἡνείων τὴ
 συσσεύεις, ἀνα-
 τομαί, διατρέ-
 σεις, σκορπισ-
 μεν ὁσίων, συλ-
 ποταί μελῶν,
 αἰλυσμοί, ὅλα
 τὴ σώματι. καὶ
 πόλασις τὴ δι-
 αβόλου ἐπ' ἐμὲ
 ἐρχέσθω, μόνον
 ἵνα Ἰησοῦ Χριστῷ
 ὁποῦχω,
 Ignac. ad Rō.
 Ζῶν γὰρ
 γράφω ὑμῖ
 ἐρῶν τὴ δια-
 Χριστῶν ὡς θα-
 νείν. Ὁ ἐμὲ
 ἔρω; ἐς αὐτῶν,
 &c. Ibid

° Psal. 69. 1, 2.
 Psal. 124. 4, 5
 Isa 8 7

stripes, and our burdens for us, which were heavier then all the world could lay on? And this was the inducement of that holy Martyr ^a Polycarp, to die for Christ, notwithstanding all the perswasions of the persecutors, who by his apostacy would faine have cast the more dishonour upon Christian Religion, and as it were by sparing him, have the more cunningly persecuted that; *This eighty six years, saith hee, I have served him, and he never in all that time hath done me any hurt; why should I be so ungratefull as not to trust him in death, who in so long a life hath never forsaken me? I am perswaded, saith the Apostle, that* ^b *neither death, nor life, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come, nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature shall be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord, Rom. 8. 38, 39* Nothing is able to turne away his love from us, and therefore nothing shall be able to quench our love to him. *Many waters,* that is, by the usual ^c expression of the holy Scriptures, many afflictions, persecutions, temptations, cannot quench love, neither can the floods drowne it, *Cant. 8. 6.*

Thirdly, *A zeal and jealous contention for the glory, truth, worship, and wayes of Christ:* wicked men pretend much love to Christ, but they indeed serve only their own turnes, as Ivie which claspes an Oake very close, but only to suck out sap for its own leaves and berries. But a true love is full of care to advance the glory of Christs Kingdome, and to promote his truth and worship, feares lest Satan and his instruments should by any meanes corrupt his truth, or violate his Church, as the Apostle to the Galatians professeth the feare which his love wrought in him towards them; *I am afraid of you, lest I have bestowed upon you labour in vain, Gal. 4. 11, 16.* So we find what contention, and disputation, and strife of Spirit, the Apostles and others in their Ministry used, when Christ and his holy Gospell was any way

The Stability of Christs Kingdome 77

way either injured by false brethren, or kept out by the idolatry of the places to which they came, *Acts* 15. 2. *Act* 17. 16. *Act* 18. 25. & 19. 8. *Gal* 2. 4. 5. *Jude* v. 2.

VERSE 1.

Lastly, *A longing after his presence, a love of his appearing*, a desire to be with him, which is best of all, a seeking after him, and grieving for him, when for any while he departs from the soule, a waiting for his Salvation, a delight in his Communion, and in his Spiritual refreshments, a communion with him in his secret chamber, in his houses of wine, and in his galleries of love. By which lovely expressions the Wise man hath described the fellowship which the Church desireth to have with Christ, and that abiding and supping of Christ with his Church, feasting the soule with the manifestations of himselfe and his Graces unto it, *Psal* 42. 3. & 105. 4. *2 Cor* 5. 2. *2 Tim* 4. 8. *Phil* 1. 23. *Cant* 3. 1; 2. *Cant* 5. 6, 8. *Gen* 49. 18. *Psal* 119. 131. *Cant* 2. 4. *Cant* 7. 5. *John* 14. 21, 23. *Revel* 3. 20.

Having thus by occasion of the enemies of Christ, spoken something of the true and false Love which is in the world towards him: we now proceed to the particulars mentioned before. And the first is the terme of *Duration*, or measure of time in the Text, *Untill*. It hath a double relation in the words; unto Christs Kingdome, and unto his *Enemies*. As it looks to the Kingdome of Christ, it denotes both the *Continuance* and the *Limitation* of his Kingdome. The continuance of it in his own Person, for it is there fixed and intransient. He is a King without successors, as being subject to no mortality, nor defect, which might be by them supplied. The Kingdome of Christ (as I observed) is either *Naturall*, as he is God, or *Dispensatory*, and by *Donation* from the Father, as hee is Mediator: and not only of the former, but even of this likewise the Scripture affirms that it is *Eternal*. It is a Kingdome set up by the God of Heaven, and yet it shall never be destroyed, but stand for ever, *Dan* 2. 44. I have set

78 The Stability of Christs Kingdom.

VERSE I. set my King upon my Holy hil of Sion, that notes the unction and donation. *Psalm 2. 6.* and in mount Sion where God hath set him, he shal reign from henceforth even for ever, *Mic. 4. 7.* Though he be a child borne, and a Sonne given, yet of the encrease of his Government and Peace there shall be no end; upon the Throne of David, and upon his Kingdome to order it, and to establish it with judgement and justice, from henceforth for ever and ever, *Eesai. 9. 6, 7.* Unto the Sonne he saith, *Thy Throne, O God, is for ever and ever, Heb. 1. 8.* And here we must distinguish betweene the substance of Christs Kingdome, and the form or manner of administering and dispensing it. In the former respect it is, absolutely Eternal, Christ shall be a Head and rewarder of his members, an everlasting Father, a Prince of peace unto them for ever. In the latter respect it shall be *Eternal according to some acception*; that is, it shall remaine until the consummation of all things: as long as there is a Church of God upon the Earth, there shall be no new way of Spiritual and Essential government prescribed unto it, no other Vicar, Successor, Monarch, or Uurper upon his Office by God allowed, but he only by his Spirit in the dispensation of his Ordinances shall order and overrule the Consciences of his people, and subdue their enemies. Yet he shall so reigne till then, as that hee shall then cease to rule in such manner as now he doth: when the end comes, Hee shall deliver up the Kingdome to God the Father; and when all things shall be subdued unto him, be also himselfe shall be subject unto him that put all things under him, that God may be all in all, *1 Cor. 15. 24, 28.* He shall so returne it unto God, as God did conferre, and as it were, appropriate it unto him, namely, in regard of judiciary dispensation and execution; in which respect our Saviour saith, that as touching the present administration of the Church, *The Father judgeth no man, but hath committed all judgement, and hath given authority*

The Stability of Christs Kingdom. 79

VERSE I.

city to execute it, unto his Sonne, John. 4. 22, 27. Now
 Christ governeth his Church by the Ministry of his
 Word and Sacraments, and by the effusion of his Spirit
 in measure and degrees upon his members; by his migh-
 ty, though secret power he fighteth with his enemies,
 and so shall doe till the resurrection of the dead, when
 death, the last enemy shall be overcome, and then in
 these respects his Kingdome shall cease; for he shall no
 more exercise the Offices of a Mediator in compassiona-
 ting, defending, interceding for his Church; but yet hee
 shall still sit and reigne for ever as God, coequal with his
 Father, and shall ever bee the head of the Church his
 Body. Thus wee see, though Christs Kingdome, in regard
 of the *manner of dispensation*, and present execution ther-
 of, be *limited* by the consummation of all things; yet
 in it selfe it is a Kingdome which hath neither *within* the
 seeds of mortality, nor *without* the danger of a concussi-
 on, but in the substance is immortall, though in regard
 of the Commission and Power which Christ had as Me-
 diator to administer it alone by himselfe, and by the ful-
 nesse of his Spirit, it be at last voluntarily resigned into
 the hands of the Father, and Christ as a part of that great
 Church become subject to the Father, that God may be
 all in all.

Now the grounds of the *Constancy of Christs govern-
 ment* over the Church, and by consequence of the Church
 it selfe, which is his Kingdome, are amongst others these,
 First, the *Decree and promise of God* sealed by an Oath,
 which made it an adamantine and unbended purpose,
 which the Lord would never repent of nor reverse. All
 Gods Counsels are immutable (though he may alter his
 works, yet he doth never change his Wil,) but when
 he sealeth his Decree with an Oath, that makes them im-
 mutably past question or suspition. In that case it is
 impossible for God to change, because it is impossible for
 God to lye, or deny himselfe, *Heb. 6. 18.* Now upon
 such

Jam. 1. 17
Non mutat vo-
luntatem, sed
vult mutation-
em, Aqu. part.
1. qu. 19. art. 7.
Aug. confes. lib.
12 c. 14. de civ.
Dei, lib. 14. c. 11.
lib. 22. c. 1. de
Trin. lib. 5. c. 16

VERSE I. such a Decree is the Kingdom of Heaven established. Once have I sworn by my Holinesse, that I will not lye unto David, saith the Lord, *Psal. 89. 35.* Once, that notes the constancy and fixednesse of God's promise; By my Holinesse, that notes the inviolableness of his promise: as if he should have said, Let me no longer be esteemed an Holy God than I keep immutably that Covenant which I have sworn unto David in my truth.

Secondly, the free gift of God unto his Son Christ, whereby he committed all power and judgment unto him. And Power is a strong argument to prove the stability of a Kingdom, especially if it be on either side supported with wisdom and righteousness, as the Power of Christ is. And therefore from his Power he argues for the perpetuity of his Church to the end of the World; *All Power is given me in Heaven and Earth: Go ye therefore and preach the Gospel to all Nations; and to I am. With you alwayes to the end of the World, Matth. 28. 18, 20.* And the argument is very strong and emphatical; for though Kingdoms of great power have been and may be subdued, yet the reason is, because much power hath still remained in the adverse side; or if they have bee too vast for any smaller people to root out, yet having not either wisdom enough to actuate so huge a frame, or righteousness to prevent or purge out those vitious humours of emulation, sedition, luxury, injustice, violence and impiety, which like strong diseases in a body, are in States the preparations and seminaries of mortality; they have sunk under their own weight, and been inwardly corrupted by their own vices. But now first, the Power of Christ in his Church is universall, there is in him *All Power*, and no weakness; no Power without him or against him; and therefore no wonder if from a fulnesse of Power in him, and an emptinesse in his enemies, the argument of continuance in his Kingdom doth infallibly follow: for what

Vid. Arist. Pol. lib. 5.

In semina ruunt laus hunc numina rebus Crescendi posuere modum. Lucan.

what man, if he were furnished with all sufficiency, would suffer himself to be mutilated and dismembered? as Christ should, if any thing should prevaile against the Church, which is his fulnesse. Again, this power of Christ is supported with *wisdom*, it can never miscarrie for any inward defect, for the wisdom is proportionable to the power; this, *All power*, and that, *All the treasures of wisdom*. Power able by weaknesse to confound the things that are mighty, and wisdom able by foolishnesse to bring to nought the understanding of the prudent. And both these are upheld by righteousness, which is indeed the very soule and sinewes of a Kingdome, upon which the Thrones of Princes are established; and which the Apostle makes the ground of the perpetuity of Christs Kingdome, *Thy Throne, O God, is for ever and ever, a scepter of righteousness is the scepter of thy Kingdome, Hebr. 1.8.*

Thirdly, the quality of Christs Kingdome is to bee a *growing Kingdome*: though the originals thereof be but like a graine of mustard-seed, or like *Eliabs* cloud to a humane view despicable, and almost below the probabilities of subsistence, the object rather of derision than of terrour to the world; yet at last it groweth into a widenesse, which maketh it as catholick as the world. And therefore that which the Prophet *David* speaks of the Sunne, the Apostle applies to the Gospel, *Rom. 10. 18.* to note, that the circle of the Gospel is like that of the Sunne, universal to the whole world. It is such a kingdome as groweth into other kingdomes, and eats them out. The little stone in *Nebuchadnezzars* vision (which was the Kingdome of Christ, for so *Jerusalem* is called a stone, *Zech. 12. 3.*) brake in pieces the great Monarchies of the earth, and grew up into a great mountaine which filled the world, *Dan. 2. 34, 35.* for the kingdomes of the earth must become the kingdoms of the Lord, and of his Christ, *Rev. 11. 15.* Therefore the

VERSE I.

the Prophets expresse Christ and his Kingdome by the name of a *Branch*, which groweth up for a standard and ensigne of the people, *Isaiah* 11. 1. 10. *Zech.* 3. 8. A branch which growes, but never withers. It hath no principles of death in it self; & though it be for a while subject to the assaults of adversaries, & forraign violence, yet that serves only to try it, and to settle it, but not to weaken or overturne it. The gates of Hell, all the powers, policies, and lawes of darkness, shall never prevaile against the Church of Christ: he hath bruised, and judged, and trodden downe Satan under our feet. He hath overcome the world; he hath subdued iniquity, hee hath turned persecutions into seminaries, and resurrections of the Church; he hath turned afflictions into matters of glory and rejoycing; so that in all the violence which the Church can suffer, it doth more than conquer, because it conquers not by repelling, but by suffering.

And this shewes the sacriledge and sawcinesse of the Church of *Rome*, which in this point doth with a double impiety therefore pervert the Scriptures, that it may derogate from the honour of Christ and his kingdome: And those things which are spoken of the infallibility, authority, and fulnesse of power which Christ hath in his body, of the stability, constancie, and universality of his Church upon earth, doth arrogate onely to the Pope and his See at *Rome*: As the Donatists in Saint *Augustines* time, from that place of the Spouse in the *Canticles*, tell me, O thou whom my soule loveth where thou feedest, where thou makest thy flock to rest in *Meridie*, excluded all the world from being a Church, save only a corner of *Africa*, which was at that time the nest of those hornets: So because Christ sayes, his Church is built upon a rock, and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it; therefore the Romanists from hence conclude all these priviledges to belong to them, and exclude

Aug. Epist. 48
Co. tom. 7. de u-
nitas. Eccle. 16.

The Stability of Christs Kingdome. 83

clude all the famous Churches of the world besides from having any communion with Christ the Head. That scornful expostulation which *Harding* makes with that renowned and incomparable Bishop (under whose hand he was no more able to stand, then a whelp under the paw of a Lion) shal we now change the song of *Micheas* the Prophet, Out of Sion shall come the Law, and the Word of the Lord from *Jerusalem*; and sing a new song, Out of *Wittenburgh* is come the Gospel, and the Word of the Lord from *Zurich* and *Geneva*? may most truly and pertinently be retorted upon himselfe and his faction, who boldly curse and exclude all those Christian Churches from the Body of Christ, and the hope of salvation, who will not receive lawes from *Rome*, nor esteeme the Cathedral determinations of that Bishop (though haply in himselfe an impure, diabolical and intolerable beast, as by their own confessions many of them have beene) to be notwithstanding the infallible Edicts of the Spirit of God, and as undoubtedly the Word of Christ, as if *S. Peter* or Saint *Paul* had spoken it. An arrogancy than which there is scarce any more expresse and characteristical note to discern *Antichrist* by. It is true, that Christs regal power doth alwaies shew forth it selfe in upholding his Catholick Church, and in revealing unto it out of his Sacred Word such necessary truths as are absolutely requisite unto its being and salvation; but to bind this power of Christ to one man, and to one See, (as if, like the Pope, he were infallible only in *S. Peters* chaire) is the meere figment of pride and ambition without any ground at all, raised out of a heap & aggregation of monstrous presumptions, of humane, and some most disputable, others most false conceits; of which, though there be not the least vestigia in sacred Scriptures, yet must they be all first wrested in for indubitate principles, and laid for sure foundations, before the first stone of Papal authority

VERSE I.

B. Jewels Defence of the Apology, part. 4. page 360.

² Idem a Romano pontifice dividi, quod ab universa Ecclesia separari, Baron. tom. 2. A. 254. §. 100.

^b Cranzius in Metrop. l. 5. c. 1 in Bonifacio 6. Stephano 6.

Theodoro, Christophoro, Joanne 12. Silvestro 2. Sigon. de Regno Italia lib. 7.

Anno 964. Guicciard. de Alex. 6. li. Hist.

1. pag. 3. 4. Pes. Bembus de eodem in Hist. Venet. lib. 6.

Platina in Christophoro 1. Joan.

13. Silvestro 2. 6. c.

Vid. Morneau de Ecclesia ca. 9

Reynol. confer. c. 7. divi. 1. & 5

B. Carleton of Jurisdic. cap. 7

B. Wber de statu Ecclesie, cap.

3. 4. 5.

VERSE 1.

c Billar. lib. 4.
de Pontif. Rom.
cap. 9.

can be raised. As first, that the external and visible regiment of the whole Church is Monarchical, and that there must be a predominant Mistris Church set over all the rest, to which in all points they must have recourse, and to whose decisions they must conforme without any hesitancy or suspicion at all; whereas the Apostle tels us, that the unity of the Church is gathered by many Pastors and Teachers, *Eph. 4. 11, 12, 13.* for as if severall needles bee touched by so many severall Load-stones (all which have the self-same specifical vertue in them) they doe all as exactly bend to one and the same point of Heaven, as if they had been thereunto qualified by but one: so in as much as Apostles, Prophets, Evangelists, Pastors, Teachers, come all instructed with one and the same Spiritual truth and power towards the Church, therefore all the faithful, who are any where by these multitudes of Preachers taught; what the truth is in Jesus, do all by the secret sway and conduct of the same Spirit of Grace (whose peculiar Office it is to guide his Church in all necessary & saving truth) with an admirable consent of heart, and unity of judgment incline to the same end; and walke in the same way, acknowledging no Monarch over their consciences but Christ, nor any other ministerial application of his Regall power in the Catholick Church, but only by severall Bishops and Pastors, who in their severall particular compasses are endowed with as plenary and ample Ministeriall power, as the Pope and his Consistory within the See of Rome.

Bacon. an. 33.
sec. 17.
Billar. de Pon.
Rom. lib. 1. c. 10

Secondly, That *Peter* was Prince and Monarch, Rock and Head in this Universal Church, and that hee alone was *custos clavium*, and all this in the vertue of Christs promise and commission granted unto him, Thou art *Peter*, and upon this Rock will I build my Church; feed my sheep, feed my lambs, unto thee will I give the keyes of the Kingdome of Heaven: In which respect *Baronius* cal-

leth him * *Lapidem primum*, the chiefe stone; and againe, though Christ, saith hee, be the Author and Moderator of his Church, yet the Princedome and Monarchy he hath conferred upon ^a *Peter*; and therefore as no man can lay any other foundation than that which is laid, namely, Christ; so no man can lay any other than that which Christ hath laid, namely, *Peter*. And it is wonderfull to consider what twigs and rushes they catch at, to hold up this their Monarchy. ^b Because *Peter* did preach first, therefore he is Monarch of the Church. By which reason his Monarchy is long since expired, for his pretended successors scarce preach at all. And yet if that may be drawne to any argument, it proves only that he was *Lapis primus*, the first in order and in forwardnesse to preach Christ (as it became him who had three times denied him;) but not *Lapis primarius*, the chief in dignity and jurisdiction over the rest: and why should it not be as good an argument to say, that *James* had the dignity of precedence before *Peter*, because *Paul* first names *James*, and then *Cephas*, and that in a place where he particularly singles them out as pillars and princial men in the Church; as to say that *Peter* hath jurisdiction over *James* and the rest, because in their Synods and assemblies he was the chiefe speaker? ^c Because *Peter* cured the lame man that sate at the gate of the Temple, therefore he is universall Monarch. By which reason likewise *Paul*, who in the self-same manner cured a creeple at *Lystra*, should fall into competition with *Peter* for his share in the Monarchy. But the people there were not so acute disputants as these of *Rome*; for though they saw what *Paul* had done, yet they concluded the dignity and precedence for *Barnabas*, they called him *Jupiter*, and *Paul Mercury*. Again, because *Peter* ^d pronounced sentence upon *Ananias* therefore he is Monarch of the Universal Church: and why *Paul* should not here likewise come in for his share, I know not, for hee

VERSE I.

^a Quod non audit Bezzius: Præter Christum (inquit) non potest aliud fundamentum poni, quod sit item primum de sign. Ecclesiæ l. 18 c. 1. ob. 5.

^b Sicur (quod certum est) nemo potest aliud ponere fundamentum, præter id quod positum est, quod est Christus; ita etiam nec aliud quisquam ponet, quam quod posuit Christus, neque convellat quod ipse firmavit, dicens; Tu es Petrus, &c. Bar. An. 33. S. 20.

^c Baron. An. 34. S. 247. Bezzius de sign. Ecclesiæ, lib. 18. c. 1. 2 Bel. de Rom. Pontifici. l. 1. c. 17. 25.

^d Baron. An. 34 S. 264.

^e Baron. Ibid. S. 269.

VERSE I.

Baron. Ibid.
S. 274.

Ibid. S. 275.
An. 35. S. 9. 25.

also passed judgment upon *Elimas* the forcerer (and we no where find that he derived his authority, or had any commission from *Peter* to do so.) And surely if by the same Apostolical and infallible Spirit of Christ (which they both immediately received from Christ himselfe) Saint *Paul* did adjudge *Elimas* to blindness, by the which Saint *Peter* adjudged *Ananias* to death, I see not how any Logick from a parity of actions can conclude a disparity of persons, except they wil say, that it is more Monarchicall to adjudge one to death, than another to blindness. Again, because *Peter* healed the sick by his shadow, therefore *Peter* is Monarch of the universall Church: and even in this point *Paul* likewise may hold on his competition; for why is not the argument as good that *Paul* is Monarch of the Church, because the handkerchiefs and aprons which came from his body did cure diseases, and cast out divels, as that *Peter* is therefore Monarch, because by the overshadowing of his body the sick were healed? But the truth is, there is no more substance in this argument for *Peters* principality, than there is for their supposed miraculous vertue of images and relicks of S.S. because the shadow, which was the image of *Peter*, did heale the sick; for that also is the Cardinals great argument. Again, because *Peter* was sent to *Samaria* to confirm them in the faith, and to lay hands on them that they might receive the holy Ghost, and to confound *Simon Magus* the forcerer, therefore he is primate of the Catholick Church, and hath Monarchicall Jurisdiction. And yet the Pope is by this time something more Monarchicall than *Peter*, for he would thinke scorne to be sent as an Ambassadour of the Churches from *Rome* to the *Indians*, amongst whom his Gospel hath been in these latter ages preached; and doubtlesse they would be something more confirmed than they are by the soveraign vertue of his Prayers and presence. But alas, what argument is it of Monarchy to

VERSE I

to be sent by others in a message, and that too notwithstanding an associate, who joined with him in the confirmation of that Church? and if the confuting or cursing of *Simon Magus* were an argument of primacie, why should not Saint *Pauls* cursing of *Elimas*, and *Hymeneus* and *Alexander*, and Saint *Johns* of *Cerinthus* be arguments of their primacy likewise? Again, because *Paul* went up to *Jerusalem* to see *Peter*, therefore *Peter* was Monarch of the Catholick Church. And why should not by this argument *Elizabeth* be concluded a greater woman than the Virgin *Mary*, and indeed the Lady of all women, because the blessed Virgin went up into the hill country of *Judea*, and entred into the house of *Zacharias* and saluted *Elizabeth*? but we finde no argument but of equality in the Text, for he went to see him as a brother, but not to do homage to him, or receive authority from him as a Monarch; else why went he not up immediately to *Jerusalem*, but staid three yeares, and preached the Gospel by the commission he had received from Christ alone? And how came *S. Paul* to be so free, or Saint *Peter* to be so much more humble than any of his pretended successors, as the one to give with boldnesse, the other with silence and meeknesse to receive so sore a reproof in the face of all the brethren, as many yeares after that did passe between them? Certainly, Saint *Paul* in so long time could not but learne to know his distance, and in what manner to speake to his Monarch and Primate. By these particulars we see upon what sandy foundation this vast and formidable Babel of Papall usurpation and power over the Catholick Church is erected (which yet upon the matter is the sole principle of Romish Religion, upon which all their faith, worship and obedience dependeth.) But wee say, that as *Peter* was a foundation, so were all the other Apostles likewise, *Eph. 2. 20. Rev. 21. 14.* and that upon the same reason. For the Apostles were not foundations of

Baron. An. 39.
S. 6.

VERSE 1.

the Church by any dignity of their persons, as Christ the chief corner stone was, but by the vertue of their *Apostolical* office, which was *universall jurisdiction* in governing the people of Christ, *universall commission* in instructing them, and a Spirit of *infallibility* in revealing Gods will unto them throughout the whole world. And therefore as *Peter* had the keyes of the Kingdome of Heaven to remit or retain the sins of men; so likewise had the other Apostles, *John* 20. 23. That Christs charge to *Peter*, *Feed my sheep, feed my Lambs*, is no other in substance than his commission to them all, *Go teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost*. And that the particular directing of it unto *Peter*, and praying for him, was with respect unto his particular only, by way of comfort and confirmation, as being then a weake member; not by way of dignity; or deputation of Christs owne regall power to him in the visible Church. For all the offices of Christ are intransient and uncommunicable to any other, in as much as the administration and execution of them dependeth upon the dignity of his person, and upon the fulnesse of his Spirit, which no mortal man or immortal Angel is capable of. But all this is not enough to be granted them for the raising their authority. But then thirdly, we must grant them too, that *Peter*, thus qualified, was Bishop of *Rome*, for proof whereof they have no testimony of Holy Scriptures, but only humane tradition, *Cui impossibile non est subesse falsum*. So that in this, which is one of the maine principles they build upon, their Faith cannot be resolved into the Word of God, and therefore is no Divine faith. Fourthly, that he did appoint that Church to be the Monarchicall and fundamentall See to all other Churches; for hee was Bishop as well of *Antioch* as of *Rome*, by their owne confession. And I wonder why some of his personall vertue should not cleave to his Chaire at *Antioch*, but

Bellar. de Rom.
pontif. l. 2. c. 12.
Baron. An. 39
S. 16. 26.

but all passe over with him to another place. Fifthly, that he did transmit all his prerogatives to his successors in that chaire. By which assertion they may as well prove, that they all (though some of them have beene forcerers, others murderers, others blasphemous atheists) were inheritors of S. Peters love to Christ; for from thence our Saviour inferres, *feed my sheep*: to note, that none feed his sheepe, but those that love his Person. Lastly, that that long succession from S. Peter untill now hath ever since been legall, and uninterrupted. Or else the Church must sometimes have been a monster without a head. We grant, that some of the Ancients argue from succession in the Church; but it was while it was yet pure, and while they could by reason of the little space of time betweene them and the Apostles, with evidence resolve their doctrine through every *medium* into the preaching of the Apostles themselves. But even in their personal succession, who knoweth not what *Simonies* and *Sorceries* have raised divers of them unto that degree? And who is able to resolve, that every Episcopall ordination of every Bishop there hath beene valid, since thereunto is requisite both the intention and orders of that Bishop that ordained him. These and a world of the like uncertainties must the faith of these men depend upon, who dare arrogate to themselves the prerogatives of Christ, and of his Catholick Kingdome. But I have been too long upon this argument.

Again, this point of the stability of Christs Kingdom is a ground of strong confidence and comfort to the whole Church of Christ, against all the violence of any outward enemies wherewith sometimes they may seeme to be swallowed up. Though they associate themselves, and gird to the battel, though they take counsell and make decrees against the Lords annointed and against his Spouse, yet it shall all come to nought, and be broken in pieces, all the smoake of hell shall not be able to extinguish,

Tertul. de pra-
script. c. 19. 22.
Aug. Epist. 165
De dissidio Do-
narist.

VERSE I.

tinguish, nor all the power of hell to overturne the Church of God; and the reason is, *Emanuel*, God is with us, *Isa* 8.9.10. That anointing which the Church hath received shall deliver it at last from the yoke of the enemy, *Isa* 10.27. Though it seem for the time in as desperate a condition as a dry stick in the fire, or a dead body in the grave, yet this is not indeed a sepulture, but a semination. Though it seeme to be cast away for a season, yet in due time it will come up and flourish againe, *Zech* 3.2. *Ezek* 37. 11. And this is the assurance that the Church may have; that the Lord can save and deliver a *Second time*, *Isai* 11. 11. that hee is the same God yesterday, and to day, and for ever; and therefore such a God as the Church hath found him heretofore, such a God it shall find him to day, and for ever, in the returnes and manifestations of his mercie. Which discovers the folly, and foretels the confusion of the enemies of Christs Kingdome; they conceive mischief, but they bring forth nothing but vanity, *Iohn* 15. 35. They conceive chaffe, and bring forth stubble, *Isa* 33. 11. They imagine nothing but a vaine thing, their malice is but like the fighting of briars and thornes with the fire, *Isaiab* 27. 4. *Nahum* 1. 10. like the dashing of waves against a rock, like a mad man shooting arrowes against the Sun, which at last returne upon his owne head; like the puffing of the fanne against the corne, which driveth away nothing but the chaffe, like the beating of the wind against the saile, or the foming and raging of the water against a mill, which by the wisdom of the artificers, are all ordered unto usefull and excellent ends. And surely when the Lord shal have accomplished his work on Mount Sion, when he shall by the adversary, as by a fanne have purged away the iniquity of *Jacob*, and taken away his sinne, he will then returne in peace and beauty unto his people againe. Look on the preparation of some large building, in one place

The Intranquillity of the Church.

91

VERSE I.

place you shall see heaps of lime and mortar, in another piles of timber, every where rude and indigested materials, and a tumultuary noise of axes and hammers; but at length the artificer sets every thing in order, and raiseth up a beautifull structure: such is the proceeding of the Lord in the afflictions and vastations of his Church, though the enemy intend to ruine it, yet God intends only to repaire it. Thus far as *Domic* respects Christs Kingdome in it selfe.

Now as it respecteth the enemies of Christ, it notes. First, *The present inconsummatenesse of the victories*, and by consequence the *intranquillity of Christs Kingdome* here upon the earth. All his enemies are not yet under his feet, Satan is not yet shut up, the rage of hel, the persecutions and policies of wicked men, the present immunity of desperate sinners, are evidences that Christ hath yet much work to do in his Church. But doth not the Apostle say, that *all things are put under his feet*? Eph. 1.22. It is true, *quoad iudiciariam potestatem*, but not *quoad exercitium potestatis*. He shall not receive any new power to subdue his enemies which he hath not already; but yet he can execute that power when and how he will. And he is pleased to suffer his enemies in this respite of their reprimand, to rage, and revile, and persecute him in his members. Every wicked man is *condemned already*, and hath the wrath of God *abiding upon him*. John 3.18.36. Only Christ doth suspend the execution of them for many weighty reasons: As first, to shew his patience and long-suffering towards the vessels of wrath, for he ever comes first with an offer of peace, before he draws the sword, Rom. 2.4. Rom. 9.22. Dent. 20. 10, 13. Luke 10. 5, 11. Secondly, to magnifie the power of his protection and providence over the Church in the midst of their enemies; for if the Lord were not on the Churches side when man riseth up against it, if he did not rebuke the proud waves, and set them

VERSE I.

* Jer. 5. 22.
 * *Egyptum mari
 concussit de-
 pressor, & ta-
 men praecep-
 to Creatoris tan-
 quam compedi-
 bus coarctetur
 mare Rubrum.
 ne in Aegy-
 ptum irrumpat.*
 Basil. Mag.
 Hexamer.
 Homil. 4.

them their bounds how farre they should go, there could
 bee no more power in the Church to withstand them,
 than in a leuell * of sand to resist an inundation of the
 Sea, *Psal. 124. 1; 5.* Thirdly, to reserve wicked men
 unto the great day of his appearing, and of the decla-
 ration of his power and righteousness, wherein all the
 world shall be the spectators and witnesses of his just
 and victorious proceedings against them, *Acts 17. 31.*
 Fourthly, to shew forth his mighty power in destroying
 the wicked all together. They who here carried them-
 selves with that insolence, as if every particular man
 meant to have plucked Christ out of his Throne, shall
 there *altogether* be brought forth before him. That as the
 righteous are reserved to have their full Salvation *to-ge-
 ther*, *1 Thes. 4. 17.* so the wicked may be bound up in
 bundles, and destroyed *together*, *Psal. 37. 38. Isaiah 1.*
28. Fifthly, to fill up the measure, and to ripen the sins
 of wicked men: for the Lord puts the wickednesse of
 men into an Epha, and when they have filled up their
 measure, he then sealeth them up unto the execution of
 his righteous judgements. And hence it is that the Scrip-
 ture calleth wicked men *vessels fitted for destruction*, for
 they first fill themselves with sin, and then God filleth
 them up with wrath and shame. Sixthly, to fill up
 the number of his Elect, for he hath many sheep which
 are not yet within his fold, and they many of them the
 posterity of wicked men, *John 10. 16.* Seventhly, to fill up
 the measure of his own sufferings in his members, that
 they may follow him unto his Kingdome through the
 same way of afflictions as hee went before them. *Col. 1.*
24. Revel. 6. 11. Eighthly, to exercise the Faith of his
 Church, to drive the faithful with the Prophet *Habakkuk*
 into their watch-tower, and with *David* into the San-
 ctuary of the Lord, there to wait upon him in the way
 of his judgments, to consider that the end of the righ-
 teous man is peace, and that the pride and prosperity of
 the

the wicked is but as the fat of Lambs, and as the beauty of grasse, that God hath set them in slippery places, and will cast them down at the last, *Hab. 2. 1, 3. Psal. 37. 2. 10. 20. Psal. 73. 18.* Lastly, to weane the faithful from earthly affections, and to kindle in them the desires of the Saints under the Altar, *How long, O Lord, holy and true, dost thou not judge and avenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth? Revel. 6. 10.*

Secondly, as *donce* notes the Patience of CHRIST towards his enemies, so it notes likewise that there are fixed bounds and limits unto that patience, beyond which he will no longer forbear them. There is an appointed day, wherein he will judge the world with Righteousnesse, *Act. 17. 31.* There is a yeer of vengeance, and of recompences for the controversies of Sion, *Isa. 34. 8.* The wild Ase that sucketh up the wind at her pleasure may be found in her month, *Jer. 2. 24.* The Lord seeth that the day of the wicked is coming. It is an appointed time, though it tarry, yet if we wait for it, it will surely wil come, it will not tarry, *Psal. 37. 13. Hab. 2. 3.* Well then let men goe on with all the fiercenesse and excesse of riot they will, let them walk in the way of their heart, and in the sight of their eyes, yet all this while they are in a chaine, they have but a compasse to go, and God will bring them to judgment at the last. When the day of a drunkard and riotous person is come, when he hath taken so many hellish swallowes, and hath filled up the measure of his lusts, his marrow must then lie downe in the dust; though the cup were at his mouth, yet from thence it shall be snatch'd away, and for everlasting he shall never taste a drop of sweetnesse, nor have the least desire of his wicked heart satisfied any more. A wicked mans sinnes will not follow him to hel to please him, but only the memory of them to be an everlasting scourge, and flame upon his conscience. O then take heed of ripening sinne, by custome, by security, by insensibility, by impudence

VERSE I.

puudence and stoutnesse of heart, by making it a mock, a matter of glory and of boasting, by stopping the eare against the voice of the Charmer, and turning the back upon the invitations to mercy, by resisting the Evidence of the Spirit in the Word, and committing sinne in the sight of the Sunne: for as the heate of the Sunne doth wither the fruit that falls off, and ripen that which hangs on the tree; so the Word doth weaken those lusts which a man is desirous to shake off, and doth ripen those which the heart holds fast and wil not part with. When was *Israel* overthrowne, but when they mocked the Messengers of God, and despised his Word, and misused his Prophets, and rejected the remedy of their sinne? and when was *Juda* destroyed, but when they hardened themselves against the Word, and would not take notice of the day of their peace? Alas, what haste doe men make to promote their owne damnation, and to go quickly to Hell! when they will breake through the very Law of God, and through all his Holy Ordinances, that they may come thither the sooner, as if the Gate would be shut against them, or as if it were a place of some great preferment; as if they had to doe with a blind God which could not see, or with an impotent God which could not revenge their impieties. Well, for all this, the Wise mans speech will prove true at the last, *Know, that God will bring thee unto judgement.*

Thirdly, *Donec* notes the infallible accomplishment of Christs victories and triumph over his enemies at the last, when the day is come wherein he will be patient towards them no longer. The Prophet giveth three excellent reasons hereof in one verse, *Isa. 33.22*: The Lord is our judge, the Lord is our Law-giver, the Lord is our King, he will save us. He is our Judge, and therefore certainly when the day of trial is come hee will plead our cause against our adversaries, and will condemne them,

them, *Mich. 7. 9.* But a Judge cannot do what pleaseth himselfe, but is bound to his rule, and proceedeth according to establishd lawes. Therefore he is our Law-giver likewise, and therefore he may himselfe appoint Lawes according to his owne will: But when the will of the Judge, and the Rule of the Law do both consent in the punishing of offenders, yet then still the King hath a liberty of mercy, and hee may pardon those whom the Law and the Judge have condemned. But Christ who shall judge the enemies of his Church according to the Law which himselfe hath made, is himselfe the King, and therefore when he revengeth, there is none besides nor above him to pardon. So at that day there shall be a full manifestation of the Kingdome of Christ, none of his enemies shall move the wing, or open the mouth, or peepe against him.

The second thing formerly proposed in this latter part of the verse was, *The Author* of subduing Christs enemies under his feet [*I the Lord.*] Wicked men will never submit themselves to Christs kingdome, but stand out in opposition against him in his Word and wayes. When Gods hand is lifted up in the dispensation of his Word and threatnings against sin, men will not see, *Isa. 26. 11.* And therefore he saith, *My spirit shall not alwaies strive with men;* to note, that men would of themselves alwaies strive with the Spirit, and never yeild nor submit to Christ. Though the patience and goodnesse of God should lead them to repentance, and forewarn them to flee from the wrath to come, yet they after their hardness and impenitent heart doe hereby treasure up against themselves the more wrath, and because judgment is not speedily executed, their heart is wholly set in them to do mischief. *Let favour,* saith the Prophet, *be shewed unto a wicked man, yet will he not learne righteousness; in the land of uprightness will he deale unjustly, and wil not behold the Majestie of the Lord.* Certainly, if a wicked man

VERSE I.

*Oportet eum ad
tantam eviden-
tiam regnum
sumperducere,
donec inimici
ejus nullo modo
audeant negare
quod regnat,
Aug.*

Rom. 2. 4. 5. 2

Eccles. 8. 11

Isa. 26. 10

VERSE 1.

Exod. 9. 17, 18
34. 35.

Hos. 7. 13, 14

Isa. 9. 13.

Amos 4. 6, 8, 9
10, 11.

man could be rescued out of Hell it selfe, and brought back into the possibilities of mercy againe, yet would he in a second life flie out against God, and while he had time take his fill of lusts againe. We see clay will but grow harder by the fire; and that metal which melted in the Furnace, being taken thence, wil returne to its wonted solidity. When *Pharaoh* saw that the raine and the haile, and the thunders were ceased; (though in the time of them he was like melted metal, and did acknowledge the righteousnesse of God and his own sinne, and make strong promises that *Israel* should goe,) yet then he sinned more, and hardened his heart, he and his servants, and would not let the children of *Israel* goe. Do wee not see men sometimes cast on a bed of sicknesse, brought to the very brink of hell, and to the smell of that sulphury lake, (when by Gods wonderful patience they are snatch'd like a brand out of the fire, and have recover'd a little strength to provoke the Lord againe) when they should now set themselves to make good those hypocritical resolutions of amendment of life, wherewith in their extremity they flatter God, and deceive themselves, suddenly break forth into more filthinesse than before, as if they meant now to be revenged of God, and to fetch back that time which sicknesse took from them by an extremity of sinning; as if they had made a Covenant with Hell to do it more service, if they might then be spared? All the favours and methods which God useth are not enough to bring wicked men home unto him of their own wills. Though I redeemed them, saith the Lord, yet have they spoken lies against mee; they have not cryed unto mee with their heart, when they howled upon their beds. The people turneth not unto him that smiteth them, neither doe they seeke the Lord of hosts. So many judgements did the Lord send upon *Israel* in the neck of one another, and yet still the burden of the Prophet is, *Yet have you not returned unto me*, saith the

the Lord. Damme up the passage of a river, and use all the Art that may be to over-rule it, yet you can never carry it backward in its own channel; you may cut it out into other courses and diverticles, but no Art can drive it unto a contrary motion, and make it retire into its own fountaine: So though wicked men may haply by divers reasons which their lusts will admit, be so farre wrought upon as to change their courses, yet it is impossible to change themselves, or to turne them quite out of their own way into the way of Christ. There is but a *bivium* in the world, a way of life, and a way of death, and the Lord in the Ministry of the Word gives us our option; *I have set before you this day life and death, blessing and cursing*: and *he that believeth shall be saved, hee that believeth not shall be damned*. To the former he invites, beseecheth, entices us with promises, with oathes, with engagements, with prevention of any just objection which might be made; *We beseech you*, saith the Apostle, *in Christs stead, that you be reconciled unto God*. From the other he deters us by forewarning us of the wrath to come, and of the period which death will put to our lusts with our lives. And as *Tertullian* once spake of the Oath of God, so may I of his entreaties and threatnings. O blessed men, whom the Lord himselfe is pleased to sollicite and entice unto happinesse! but, O miserable men they who will not believe nor accept of Gods owne entreaties! And yet thus miserable are we all by nature. There is in men so much Atheisme, infidelity and distrust of Gods Word, so close an adherencie of lust unto the soule, that it rather chuseth to runne the hazard, and to go to hell entire, than to go halt and maimed unto Heaven; yea, to make God a liar, to blesse themselves in their sinnes, when he curseth, and to judge of him by themselves, as if hee tooke no notice of their ways. It is not therefore without just cause that God so often threatneth to remember all the sinnes of wicked

H

men,

Deut. 29. 19.
Psal. 50. 21.

VERSE I.

Hos. 5. 2, 3

Hos. 7. 2, 12

Am. 5. 8, 7

Deu. 32. 34, 35

Pl. 50. 21.

Jer. 17. 1

men, and to do against them whatsoever he hath spoken. Wee see then that men will never submit themselves unto the Scepter of Christ, nor prevent the wrath to come by a *voluntary subjection*. It remaineth therefore that God take the work into his own hands, and put them perforce under Christs feet. They will not submit to his Kingdome of Grace and Mercy, they will not beleieve his Kingdome of Glory and salvation; but they shall be made subject to the sword of his wrath, and that without any hope of escape, or power of opposition, for God himselfe shall doe it immediately by his own mighty Power. He will interpose his own hand, and magnifie the Glory of his owne strength in the iust confusion of wicked men. So the Apostle saith, that *The Lord will shew his wrath, and make his power knowne on the vessels fitted for destruction*, Rom. 9. 22. Two meanes the Apostle sheweth shall be used in the destruction of the wicked, to effect it; *The presence or countenance*, and the glorious *Power* of the Lord, 2 *Thes.* 1. 9. The very terrour of his face, and the dreadful Majesty of his presence shall slay the wicked. The Kings of the Earth, and the great men, and the rich men, and the chief captains, and the mighty men, those who all their life time were themselves terrible, and had beene acquainted with terrours, shall then begge of the Mountaines and Rocks to fall upon them and to hide them from the *Face* of him that sitteth upon the Throne, and from the wrath of the Lambe, *Rev.* 6. 15, 16. *Isa.* 2. 10. whence that usuall expression of Gods resolution to destroy a people, *I will set my face against them*. O then how sore shal the condemnation of wicked men bee, when therein the Lord purposeth to declare *his power* *and* *his wrath*, the glorious strength of his own Almighty arm? Here when the Lord punisheth a people, hee only sheweth how much strength and edge he can put into the Creatures to execute his displeasure. But the extreme terrour of the last day

God immediately punishes the wicked. 99

VERSE I.

day shall be this, that men shall fall immediately into the hands of God himselfe, who hath said, *Vengeance belongeth unto me, and I will recompence, Heb. 10.30.31.* And therefore the Apostle useth this expostulation against Idolaters, *Do we provoke the Lord to jealousy? Are we stronger than he? 1 Cor. 10. 22.* Dare we meet the Lord in his fury, do we provoke him to powre out *All his wrath? Psal. 78.38.* He wil at last stirre up *all his wrath* against the vessels that are fitted for it. And for that cause he will punish them himselfe. For there is no Creature able to bring *all Gods wrath* unto another, there is no vessel able to hold *all Gods displeasure.* The Apostle telleth us, that wee have to doe with God in his Word, *Heb. 4. 13.* but herein he useth the Ministry of weak men, so that his Majesty is covered, and wicked men have a vaile upon their hearts, that they cannot see God in his Word. *When thy hand is lifted up,* namely in the threatnings and predictions of wrath out of the Word, *they will not see:* for it is a worke of faith to receive the word as Gods Word, and therein before-hand to see his Power, and to hear his Rod, *Mich. 6. 9.* Other men belie the Lord, and say it is not he. But though they will not acknowledge that they have to do with God in his Word, though they will not see when his hand is lifted up in the preparations of his wrath, yet they shal see and know that they have to doe with him in his judgments, when his hand falleth down againe in the execution of his wrath. So the Lord expostulateth with them, *Ezek 22. 14.* *Can thine heart endure, or thine hands bee strong in the dayes that I shall deal with thee?* The Prophet *Isaiah* resolves that question, *The sinners in Sion are afraid, fearfulness hath surprized the hypocrites,* (namely, a fearful looking for of judgment and fiery indignation, as the Apostle speakes, *Hebrews 10.27*) *Who amongst us shall dwell with the devouring fire, who amongst us shall dwell with everlasting burnings?*

VERSE I.

Isaiab 33. 14. that is, in the words of another Prophet, *Who can stand before his indignation? and Who can abide in the fierceness of his anger? His fury is poured out like fire, and the rocks are thrown down by him, Nahum 1. 6.*

Levit. 26. 25

Hos. 12. 2.

Psal. 7. 2.

Isa. 65. 3

Confirmations of this point wee may take from these considerations: First, the quarrel with sinners is Gods owne, the controversie his own, the injuries and indignities have been done to himselfe and his own Sonne. the challenges have been sent unto himself and his own Spirit: And therefore no marvel if he take the matter into his own hands; and the quarrel so immediately reflecting upon him, if he bee provoked to revenge it by his own immediate power.

Secondly, revenge is his royalty and peculiar prerogative, *Dent. 32. 35. 41.* from whence the Apostle inferres, *That it is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God, Heb. 10. 30, 31.* And there are these arguments of fearfulness in it; First, it shall be *in judgment without mercy, Jam. 2. 13.* there shall be no mixture of any sweetness in the cup of Gods displeasure, but all poyson and bitterness; there shall not be afforded a drop of water to a lake of fire, a minute of ease to an eternity of torment. Secondly, it shall be *in fury without compassion*: In humane judgements, where the law of the State will not suffer a Judge to acquit or shew mercy, yet the law of Nature will force him to compassionate and grieve for the malefactor whom he must condemn. There is no Judge so senselesse of anothers miserie, nor so destitute of humane affections, as to pronounce a sentence of condemnation with laughter. But the Lord will condemne his enemies in vengeance without any pity: *I will laugh, saith the Lord, at your calamitie, I will mock when your fear cometh, Prov. 1. 26.* Thirdly, it shall be *in revenge and recompence*, in reward and proportion, that is, in a full and everlasting detestation of wicked men, the

the weight whereof shall peradventure lie heavier upon them, than all the other torments which they are to suffer, when they shall look on themselves as scorned and abhorred exiles from the favour and presence of him that made them. For as the wicked did here hate God, and set their hearts and their courses against him *in suo aeterno*, in all that time which God permitted them to sin in : so God will hate wicked men, and set his face and fury against them *in suo aeterno* too, as long as he shall be judge of the world.

Thirdly, this may be seen in the inchoations of hell in wicked men upon the earth. When the door of the conscience is opened, and that sinne which lay there asleep before, riseth up like an enraged Lion to flie upon the soule, when the Lord suffers some flashes of his glittering sword to break in like lightning upon the Spirit, and to amaze a sinner with the pledges and first fruits of hell, when he melteth the stout hearts of men, and grindeth them unto powder, what is all this but the secret touch of Gods own finger upon the conscience ? For there is no creature in the world whose ministry the heart doth discern, in the estuations and invisible workings of a guilty and unquiet spirit.

Fourthly, the torments of wicked angels, whence can they come ? There is no Creature strong enough to lay upon them a sufficient recompence of paine for their sin against the Majestie of God. And for the disputes of School-men touching corporal fire in hell, and the manner of elevating and applying corporal agents to work upon spiritual substances, they are but the intemperate nicities of men ignorant of the Scriptures, and of the terror of the Lord, who is himself a consuming fire. The devils acknowledge Christ their Tormentor, and that when he did nothing but rebuke them : there was no fire, nor any other creature by him applied, but only the Majesty of his own word, power, and person, which

VERSE I.

Mar. 26. 37

Luke 22. 44

John 12. 27

Mark 14. 33, 34

wrong from them that hideous cry, *Art thou come to torment us before the time?* Mat. 8. 29.

Lastly, Consider the heaviness of Christs own soul, his agony, and sense of the curse due unto our sin when he was in the garden, the trouble, astonishment, and extreme anguish of his soul, which wrought out of his sacred body that woful and wonderful sweat; Whence came it all? We read never of any devils let loose to torment him, they were ever tormented at his presence. We read of no other Angels that had commission to afflict him; we read of an Angel which was sent to strengthen him, *Luk. 22. 43.* There is no reason to think that the fear of a bodily death, which was the only thing that men could inflict upon him, was that which squeezed out those drops of blood, and extorted those bitter and strong cries from him. There were not in his innocent soule, in his most pure and sacred body any seeds or principles of such tormenting distempers; his compassion towards the misery of sinners, his knowledge of the guilt and cursedness of sin, was as great at other times as now: What then could it else be, but the weight of his Fathers justice, the conflict with his Fathers wrath against the sins of men, which wrought such extremity of heaviness in his soul? As he was our security, he stood in our stead, that which was done to the green tree, should much more have been done to the dry: if God laid upon him the strokes which were due unto our sin, how much more heavy shall his hand be upon those whom he thoroughly hateth?

But shall not then the Angels be executioners of the sentence of Gods wrath upon wicked men? I answer, The Angels shall have their service in the coming of the Lord First, as *Attendants*, to shew forth the Majesty and glory of Christ to the world, *2 Thes. 1. 7. Mar. 24. 31.* Secondly, as *executioners of his will*, which is to gather together the Elect and the Reprobate, to bind

up the wicked as sheaves or faggots for the fire, *Mat. 13 30. & 24. 31.* But yet still the Lord interposeth his own power. As a Schoolmaster setteth one scholer to bring forth another unto punishment, but then he layeth on the stripes himself.

VERSE I.

But why is it said that the Father shall put Christs enemies under his feet? Doth not Christ himself do it as well as the Father? yes doubtless. *God hath given the Sonne authority to execute Judgment also,* and put into his hands a rod of Iron, to dash his enemies to pieces like a Potters vessel; for, *Whatsoever things the Father doth, these also doth the Sonne likewise,* *Joh. 5. 19. 27.* *Psal. 2. 9.* But we are to note, that the subjecting of Christs enemies under his feet is a work of divine power. And therefore though it be attributed to Christ as an Officer, yet it belongeth to the Father, as the fountain of all divine operations. So God is said to have set forth his Sonne as a propitiation, *Rom. 3. 25,* and yet the Son came downe and manifested himselfe, *Phil. 2. 7, 8.* *Heb. 9. 26.* The Father is said to have raised him from the dead, *Acts 2. 32.* *Rom. 6. 4.* and yet the Son raised himself by his owne power, *Joh. 10. 18.* The Father is said to have set Christ at his own right hand in heavenly places, *Ephes. 1. 20.* and Christ is said to have sate downe himselfe on the right hand of the Majesty on high, *Heb. 1. 3 & 10. 12.* The Father is said to give the Holy Ghost, *Joh. 14. 16.* and yet the Son promisseth to send him himself, *Joh. 16. 7.* so here though the Son have received power sufficient to subdue all his enemies under his feet (for he is able to subdue all things unto himself, *Phil. 3. 21.*) yet the Father, to shew his hatred against the enemies of Christ, and his consent to the victories of his Son, will likewise subdue all things unto him, *1 Cor. 15. 27, 28.*

O then that men would be by the terror of the Lord perswaded to fly from the wrath to come, to consider the weight of Gods heavy hand, & when they see such a

VERSE 1.

storme coming to hide themselves in the holes of that Rock of mercy. It is nothing but Atheisme and infidelity which bewitcheth men with desperate senselesnesse against the vengeance of God. And therefore as the Lord hath seconded his Word of Promise with an oath, that they might have strong consolation who flie for refuge to lay hold on the hope which is set before them, *Heb. 6. 17, 18.* So hath he confirmed the Word of his threatnings with an oath too. *If I lift up my hand to heaven and say, I live for ever — I will render vengeance to mine enemies, I will reward them that hate mee, Dent. 32. 40, 41.* And againe, *The Lord hath sworn by the excellencie of Jacob, surely I wil never forget any of their works, Amos. 8. 7.* And againe, *I have sworn by my self, that unto me every knee shall bow, Isai. 45. 23.* And this he doth, that secure and obdurate sinners might have the stronger reasons to flie from the wrath which is set before them. *O nos miseros, qui nec juranti Deo credimus!* How wonderfull is the stupidity of men, that will neither believe the words, nor tremble at the oath of God? He warneth us to flie from the wrath to come, and we make haste to meet it the rather: wee fill up our measure, and commit sinne with both hands greedily; with uncleane and intemperate courses, we bring immature deaths upon our selves, that so we may hasten to hell the sooner, and make trial whether God be a liar or no. For this indeed is the very direct issue of every profane exorbitancy which men rush into. Every man hath much Atheism in his heart by nature, but such desperate stupidity doth wonderfully improve it, and bring men by degrees to the hellish presumption of those in the Prophets, *The Lord will not do good, neither will he doe evil; It is not the Lord, neither shall evil come upon us; the Prophets shall become winde, and the word is not in them. The dayes are prolonged, and the vision shall faile; this man propheseth of things as farre of, of doomes day, of things which shall*

Jer. 5. 11, 12.

Ezek. 12. 22.

shall be long after our time. Unto these men, I say, in the words of the Apostle, though they sleep, and see nothing, and mock at the promise of Christs coming; yet *their damnation sleepeth not*, but shall come upon them soone enough, even like an armed man. *Be not yet mockers*, saith the Prophet, *lest your hands be made strong*. Atheisme, and scorne of Gods judgments will make him bind them the faster upon us, he will get the better of the proudest of his enemies. We may mock, but *God will not be mocked*. He that shooteth arrowes against the Sunne, shall never reach high enough to violate it, but the arrowes shall returne upon his own head. Contempt of God, and his threatnings, doth but tye our damnation the faster upon us, and make our condition the more remediless. The rage and wrestling of a beast with the rope which bindes him, doth make the knot the faster. Nay, there is no Atheist in the world, but some time or other feeleth by the horrors of his owne bosome, and by the records of his own conscience, that there is a consumption decreed, and a day of slaughter coming for the buls of Bashan.

Againe, others I have knowne acknowledged indeed the terrour of the Lord, but yet goe desparately on in their presumptions, and that upon two other dangerous downfalls: First, they thus argue, peradventure I belong to Gods Election of grace, and then he will fetch mee in in his time, and in the mean time his mercy is above my sins, and it is not for me to hasten his worke till he will himselfe. O what a perversenesse is this, for the wickednesse of man to perturb the Order of God? His Rule is, that we should argue from a holy conversation to our Election, and by our diligence in adding one grace unto another to make it sure unto our selves; not to argue from our election to our calling, nor to neglect all diligence till our Election appeare. It is true, the mercy of Christ is infinitely wider than the very rebellions of men,
and

VERSE I.

1 Pet. 2.3

Isa. 28.22

Gal. 6.7,8.

2 Chre. 36.16.

VERSE I.

*Medium interim
furansur scmpus
& commeasum
faciunt delin-
quendi. Tercul.
Jon. 3. 8, 9.*

Joel 2. 12, 14

Zech. 2. 3

1 Cor. 15. 32

and it may be he will snatch such a wicked disputer as this, like a brand out of the fire. But then know withal, that every desperate sin thou dost now wilfully run into, will at last cost thee such bitter throes, such bloody tears, as thou wouldst not be willing with the least of them to purchase the most sweet and constant pleasure which thy heart can now delight in. And in the meane time it is a bold adventure upon the patience of God, for any man, and on expectation of Gods favour, to steal time from his service, and to turn the possibility of the mercy of God into an occasion of sinning. The Ninivites gathered another conclusion from those premisses; *Let man and beast be covered with sackcloth, and cry mightily unto God; yea, let them turn every one from their evil way, and from the violence which is in their hands:* and the ground of this resolution was this, *Who can tell if God will turn and repent, and turn away from his fierce anger, that we perish not?* And the Prophets teach us to make another use of the possibility of Gods mercy; *Rent your hearts, and not your garments, and turn unto the Lord your God, for he is gracious and merciful, slow to anger, and of great kindnesse, and repenteth him of the evil. Who knoweth if he wil return and repent, and leave a blessing behind him? &c.* And again, *Seek ye the Lord all yee meek of the earth, seek righteousnesse, seek meeknesse, it may be yee shall be hid in the day of the Lords anger.*

But then secondly, There are not wanting desperate wretches who will thus hellishly argue against the service of God. It may be, the decree is gone forth, and I am rejected by God, and why should I labour in vaine, and go about to repeal his will, and not rather, since I shall have no heaven hereafter, take the fill of mine owne wayes and lusts here? Thus we find the wicked Epicures conclude, *We shall dye to morrow. and therefore let us eat and drink to day.* Nay, but who art thou, O

man,

man, who disputest against God? who rather chusest to abuse the secrets of God; that thou mayst dishonour him, then to be ruled by his revealed will that thou mayst obey him? *Let the potsherd strive with the potsherd of the Earth,* but let not the Clay dash it selfe against him that made it. Remember and tremble at the difference which our Saviour makes even amongst the wicked in hell. *It shall be easier for Sodom and Gomorrah, and for Tyre and Sidon in the day of Judgement,* then for those Cities which have heard and despised him. Wicked men are treasuring up of wrath, and hoarding up of destruction against their own souls, every new Oath or blasphemy, heapes a new mountain upon their conscience; every renewed act of any uncleannesse plungeth a man deeper into hell, giveth the diel more holdfast of him, adds more fuel unto his Tophet, squeezeth in more dregs and woful ingredients into the cup of astonishment which he must swallow. Doubtlesse, a sinner in hell would account himselfe a blessed creature, if he did not feel there the weight and worme of such and such particular sinnes, which with much easinesse he might have forborn; nay, which without pain and labour he could not commit. We see *Dives* in hell begged for but a drop of water to cool his tongue in that mighty flame. Now suppose a man to lye in a burning furnace; what great comfort could he receive from but a drop of water against a furnace of fire? Certainly the abatement of so much pain as the constant continuance of one drop of water would remove, could in no proportion amount to the taking away the punishment of the smallest sin, of the least idle word, or unprofitable thought: and yet in that extremity there shall not be allowed a drop of refreshment against a lake of fire. O that men would therefore in time consider what a woful thing it is to fall into the hands, and to rowze up the jealousy of the living God: that because he will do thus and thus unto
obdurate

VERSE I.

obdurate sinners, they would therefore in time humble themselves under his mighty hand, and prepare to meete him in the way of his judgments. For certainly no sooner doth the heart of a sinner yeild to God, but he meeteth him in his return, and preventeth him with goodnesse; his heart likewise is turned within him, and his repentings are kindled together. With much more delight will hee put a man into the armes of Christ, than force him under his feet. *He doth not afflict willingly, nor grieve the children of men; he taketh no pleasure in the death of a sinner, but he delighteth in mercy.*

The last thing observed, was the *Manner of this victory*; expressed in those words, *Ponam, and ponam scabellum*, To put, and to put as a stoole under Christs feete. Now this expression, that the conquest of Christs enemies shall bee but as the removing of a stoole into his place, noteth unto us two things:

Isa. 41. 15.

First, *The easinesse of Gods victory over the enemies of Christ*. They are before him as nothing, lesse than nothing, the drop of a bucket, the dust of a balance, a very little thing. What thing is heavier than a mountaine, what thing easier than a touch, what lighter than chaffe, or softer then wax? and yet they who in the eyes of men are as strong and immoveable as mountaines, if God but touch them, they shall be turned into chaffe, and flow at his presence. If a man had a deadly pestilence and of infallible infection, how easily might that man be avenged on his enemy with but breathing in his face? Now the breath of the Lord is like a streame of brimstone to devoure the wicked; As easily as fire consumeth flax or stubble, as easily as poyson invadeth the spirits of the body, as easily as a rod of iron breaketh in pieces a potters vessel, as easily as a burdensome stone bruisseth that which it falls upon; so, and much more irresistibly doth the wrath of the Lord consume his enemies.

Isa. 64. 3.

Isa. 30. 33.

Isa. 27. 4.

Isa. 47. 14.

Zech. 12. 3, 6

Psal. 2. 9.

: No

Not to insist long on so certaine and obvious a truth. Farre easier wee know it is to destroy, than to build up, there is no such art required in demolishing, as there is in erecting of an edifice; those things which are long and difficultly growing up, are suddenly extinguished. Since therefore God had power and wisdom to make the Creature, no wonder if hee can most easily destroy it.

Againe, Gods power is as it were set on by his *jealousie* and fury against sinners. Anger (we know) is the whetstone of strength, in an equality of other terms, it will make a man prevail. Nothing is able to stand before a fire which is once enrag'd. Now Gods displeasure is kindled, and breaketh forth into a flame against the sins of men, *Deut. 29.20.* like a devouring Lion, or a bereaved Beare, like the implacable rage of a jealous man, so doth the fire of the Lords revenge break forth upon the enemies of his Sonne.

Adde hereunto our *disposition* and preparednesse for the wrath of God. Strength it selfe may be tired out in vaine upon a subject which is incapable of any injurie therefrom. But if the paw of a Bear meet with so thinne a substance as the kall of a mans heart, how easily is it torne to pieces? Every action is then most speedily finished, when the subject on which it workes is thereunto prepared. Farre easier is it to make a print in waxe than in Adamant, to kindle a fire in dry stubble, than in green wood. Now wicked men have fitted themselves for wrath, and are the procurers, and artificers of their own destruction. They are vessels, and God is never without treasures of wrath, so that the confusion of a wicked man is but like the drawing of water out of a Fountaine, or the filling of a bagge out of a heap of treasure.

Lastly, adde hereunto our *despitutenesse* of all help and succour. Even fire amongst pitch might be quenched, if a man could powre downe water in abundance upon it.

But

VERSE I.

*Corpora tardè
augescunt citò
extinguuntur.
Tac.*

*Hof. 13.7,8
Prov. 6.34.
Cant. 8.6.
Ezek. 36.5.*

*Rom. 9.22
Ila. 3.9.
Jer. 2.17
Jer. 4.18
Hof. 13.9.*

VERSE I.

But the wicked shall have no strength either in or about them to prevent or remove the wrath to come. Here indeed they have some helps (such as they are) to stand out against God in his Word. Wealth and greatnesse to be the provisions of their lusts, the countenance of the wicked world to encourage them in their wayes; Satan and the wisdom of the flesh to furnish them with arguments, and to cast a varnish upon uncleannesse: but when the Lion comes, the shepherd can doe the sheepe no good; when the fire comes, the rotten post shall perish with the varnish which covered it. Hee that was here strong enough to provoke God, shall at last bee bound hand and foot, and so have no faculty left either to resist him, or to runne from him.

There is a foolish disposition in the hearts of men to thinke that they shall ever continue in that estate which they are once in. The proud and wicked man hath said in his heart, *I shall never be moved, I shall never be in adversity. God hath forgotten, he hideth his face, he will never see us.* And the Prophet David was overtaken with this grosse error, *I said in my prosperity I shall never be moved.* This was the vaine conceit of the foole in the Gospel, *Thou hast much laid up for many yeers, take thine ease, eat, drinke, and be merry.* This ever hath beene the language of secure and wicked men, *No evill shall come upon us, I shall have peace though I walke in the imagination of mine heart. To morrow shall bee as this day, and much more abundant.* And so also in afflictions; *Hath the Lord forgotten to bee gracious, and shut up his loving kindnesse in displeasure? from day even to night wilt thou make an end of mee. I said, my hope is lost, and I am cut off for my part. I shall never overcome such an affliction, I shall never breake through such a pressure.* And both these come for want of faith touching the power of God to subdue all enemies under Christs feete. If men would but consider how easily God can breake downe

all

Psal. 10. 6, 11

Luke 12. 19

Mic. 3. 11

Deut. 29. 19

Isa. 56. 12

Isa. 38. 12

Ezek. 37. 11

God can easily destroy the wicked.

III

VERSE 1.

all their cob-webs, and sweep away their refuge of lies; how easily hee can spoile them of all the provisions of their lusts, and leave them like a Lamb in a large place; they would be more fearfull of him, and lesse dore upon things which will not profit; they would take heed how they abuse their youth, strength, time, abilities, as if they had a Spring of them all within themselves; and consider, that their good is not in their owne hand, that the scithe can get as well through the greene grasse as the dry stubble; that consuming fire can as well melt the hardest metal, as the softest wax. What is the reason why men in sore extremities make strong resolutions, and vow much repentance and amendment of life, and yet as soone as they are off from the rack, returne againe to their vomit, and wallow in their wonted lusts; but because their sense made them feele that then, which if they had faith they might still perceive, and so still continue in the same good resolutions, namely, that Gods hand was near unto them? But what? *is not God a God as farre off, as well as neer at hand?* doth he not say of wicked men, that in the fulnesse of their sufficiency they shall bee in straites? Cannot hee blast the Corne in the Blade, in the Harvest, in the Barne, in the very mouth of the wicked? Did hee not cut off *Belsazzar* in his cups, and *Herod* in his robes, and *Babylon* and *Tyrus* in their pride, and *Haman* in his favour, and *Jezebel* in her paint? Have but faith enough to say, I am a man, and therefore no humane events should bee strange unto mee, and even that one consideration may keepe a man from outrage of sinning. It may be I have abundance of earthly things, yet am I still but a gilded potsherd: It may bee I have excellent endowments, but I have them all in an earthen vessel. And shall the potsherd strive with the potter, and provoke him that made it? This would teach us to feare and tremble at Gods Power. Though wee looke upon death and judgement as a farre off, yet God can

Job 20. 22
Amos 4. 7
Hos. 12. 9
Hag. 1. 9
Hos. 9. 2.
Psal. 78. 30, 31

VERSE I.

2 Pet. 2.1
 Heb. 6.8
 Hof. 8.1
 Zech. 5.1
 Hof. 5.7
 Hof. 10.15.
 Isa. 47.9.
 Eccl. 8.12,13.

can make them neer when he will, for he hath said that the damnation of wicked men is *swift*, and that they are *neer unto cursing*. His judgements are like *lightning*, and have *wings* suddenly to overtake a sinner. He requires but a *month*, nay but a *morning*, nay but a *moment* to consume his enemies, and bring desolation upon those who said they should sit as a Lady for ever, and did never remember the latter end. *Though a sinner doe evill an hundred times, and his dayes be prolonged*, namely by the patience and permission of God, in whose hands his dayes are, yet it shall go well at last onely with those that fear God; The wicked are not able to prolong their own dayes.

Againe, for Afflictions and Temptations, it is a great fruit of the infidelity of mens hearts, and a foolish charging and chiding of our Maker, to accompt our selves swallowed up of any present pressure. If we did but consider that it is as easie with God to subdue our enemies, and to rebuke our afflictions, as it is with us to put a stoole under our feete, we would then learne to waite on him in all our distresses, and when we cannot answer difficulties, nor extricate our selves out of our owne doubts or fears, to conclude that his thoughts are above our thoughts, and his wayes above our wayes, and so to cast our selves wholly upon his power. Tis an argument which the Lord every where useth to establish his Church withall: *Fear not the fear of men, nor bee afraid, but sanctifie the Lord of hosts himselfe; and let him be your fear.* Who art thou, that thou shouldst bee afraid of a man that shall dye, and of the Sonne of Man which shall be made as grasse; and forgettest the Lord thy maker, and hast feared every day because of the fury of the oppressour? And where is the fury of the oppressour? If it be marvellous in the eyes of the remnant of this people, should it bee marvellous in mine eyes, saith the Lord of Hosts? Behold, I am the Lord the God of all flesh, is there

Isa. 55.8.9

Isa. 8.12, 13.

Isa. 51.12, 13

Zech. 8.6, 7

The wicked's fall a beautiful thing.

113

VERSE I.

any thing too hard for me? Blessed is the man that trusteth in the Lord, and whose hope the Lord is. Hee shall be as a tree planted by the waters, which shall not bee carefull in the yeer of drought. When the poor and needy seeke water and there is none, and their tongue faileth for thirst, I the Lord will hear them, I the God of Israel will not forsake them. Though the fig-tree shall not blossome, neither shall fruit bee in the vines, the labour of the olive shall faile, and the field shall yeld no meat, the flock shall be cut off from the fold, and there shall be no herd in the stalls: yet I will rejoyce in the Lord, I will joy in the God of my salvation. Hee is able to doe abundantly above all that wee can ask or thinke. God would never so frequently carry men to the dependance upon his power, if they were not apt in extremities to judge of God by themselves, and to suspect his power.

Jer. 32. 27.
Gen. 18. 14.
Jer. 17. 7, 8.
Isa. 42. 17, 18
Hab. 3. 17, 19

Secondly, as this Putting of Christs enemies like a stoole under his feet noteth *Easinesse*, so also it noteth *Order or Beauty* too. When Christs enemies shall bee under his foote, then there shall bee a right Order in things, then it shall indeed appear that God is a God of Order; and therefore the day wherein that shall be done, is called the *Time of the restitution of all things*, *Act. 3. 21.* The putting of Christs enemies under his feete is an *Act of justice*, and of all other, Justice is the most orderly vertue, that which keepeth beauty upon the face of a people, as consisting it selfe in a symmetrie, and proportion. Again, every thing out of its own place is out of order, but when things are all in their proper places and due proportions, then there results a beauty and comeliness from them. In a great house there are many vessels, some of wood and brasie, others of gold and silver, some for honourable, others for base and fardid uses; Now if all these were confusely together in one room, a man would conclude that things were out of order, but when the plate is in one place, the brasie and wood in another,

τὸ δίκαιον νό-
μιμον ἡῖσιν,
τὸ δ' ἀδίκον
παράνομον ἡ
ἀνίσιν.
Arist. Ethic. lib.
5. cap. 1.

VERSE I.

Ezek. 18. 25
Mal. 3. 14. 15.

Hof. 14. 9

another, wee acknowledge a decency and cleanness in such a house. Let a body be of never so exact tempera-
ture, and delicate complexion, yet if any member therein be misplaced, the eye in the roome of the eare, or the cheek of the forehead, there can be no beauty in such a body: So in the Church, till God set every one in his right place, the order thereof is but imperfect. Therefore when Judas was put under Christs feet, he is said to have gone *ἐκ τῆς ἰδίου τόπου*, unto his own place, *Act. 1. 25.*

Why then should any man murmur at the prosperity of wicked men, or conceive of Gods proceedings as if they were irregular and unequal, as if there were no profit for those who walk mournfully, but the proud, and wicked workers were set up? This is to revile the workman while hee is yet in the fitting of his worke. The pieces are not yet put together in their proper joints, and therefore no marvel if the evenesse and beauty of Gods workes be not so plainly discovered. For every thing is *beautiful in its time*; what though the corne in the field hang downe the head, and the weeds seem to flourish and overtop it; stay but till the harvest, and it will then appeare which was for the garner, and which for the fire. Go into the Sanctuary of the Lord, and by faith looke unto the day of the revelation of Gods righteous judgments, and it will appeare *that the wayes of the Lord are right, though the transgressors stumble in them, or be offended at them.*

Secondly, from hence every man may learn how to bring beauty and order into himselfe, namely, by subduing those enemies of Christ, those lusts and evil affections which dwell within him. Lawes wee know are the ligaments and sinews of a State, the strings as it were, which being touched and animated by skilful governors, do yeeld that excellent harmonie which is to be seene in well constituted common wealths; the more they prevaile, so much the more unitie is preserved and faction abated,

What is to be under Christs feete.

115

abated, and community cherished in the mindes of men : Even so where the Scepter of Christ, the Law of the minde, the roiall Law of Liberty and grace do more prevaile over the lusts of the heart, by so much the more excellent is the harmonie and complexion of such a soule.

Now the last thing in this verse is, *Scabellum pedibus tuis, A stoole under thy feet.* Things are *under Christs feete* two manner of wayes : Either by way of subjection, as *Servants* unto him; and so he hath dominion over all the works of Gods hands, and hath *all things put under his feete.* So the Apostle saith, that God hath set him at his owne right hand in heavenly places, farre above all principality, and power, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named, not onely in this world, but also in that which is to come; *And hath put all things under his feete*, and gave him to be the head over all things to the Church. Which St. Peter expresseth in a like manner : He is gone into heaven, and is on the right hand of God, *Angels, and authorities, and powers being made subject to him* : Or secondly, by way of victory and insulcation, and so all Christs enemies are put under his feet; Which is the most proper way: For the members of Christ are indeed under the head. So we finde that the sheepe of Christ are *in his hands.* No man shall pluck them out of my hand. And the Lambs of Christ are in his armes, and *bosome.* He shall gather the Lambs with his arme, and carry them in his bosome. But the enemies of Christ are *under his feet* to be trampled upon, till their blood be squeezed out, and his garments stained with it. All the multiplied multitudes of the wicked in the world shall be, but as so many Clusters of ripe grapes to be cast into the great wine-presse of the wrath of God, and to be troden by him who went forth on a white horse conquering and to conquer, till the bloud come out of the wine-presse even unto the horse

VERSE I

Psal. 8.6

Eph. 1. 21. 22

1 Pet. 3. 22

John 10. 28
Esai. 40. 11
Esai. 63. 1, 3
Joel 3. 13. 14
Revel. 14. 20

VERSE I.

Gen. 3. 14.
 Luke 10. 19
 Rom. 16. 20
 Psal. 68. 23

1 Sam. 12. 31
 2 Kings 9. 33
 Lam. 1. 15

Heb. 5. 8
 Heb. 2. 17, 18

horse bridles. And this is an usual expression of a total victory in holy Scripture, the laying of an adversary even with the ground, that he may be crushed and trampled upon. This was the curse of the Serpent, that he should crawl with his belly upon the dust of the earth, and that the seed of the woman should bruize his head. And it is the curse of Gods enemies, that they should lick the dust, and that the feet of the Church and the tongue of her dogs should be dipped in the blood of her enemies. Thus *David* put the people of *Rabbah* under harrowes; and *Jehu* trod *Jezabel* under his horses feet. And therefore the Church chuseth that phrase to expresse the greatnesse of her calamity by. The Lord hath trodden under foote all my mighty men in the midst of me; he hath called an assembly against me to crash my young men. The Lord hath trodden the Virgin, the Daughter of Juda as in a wine-presse.

Now this putting of Christs enemies as a stoole under his feet, notes unto us in regard of Christ two things: First, his *Rest*; and secondly, his *Triumph To stand*, in the Scripture Phrase (as I have before observed) denoteth *Ministry*, and to *Sir, Rest*; and there is no posture more easie than to sit with a stoole under ones feet. Til Christs enemies then be all under his feet, he is not fully in his Rest. It is true, in his own person he is in Rest, he hath finished the worke which was given him to doe, and therefore is entred into his rest. He hath already ascended up on high, and led captivity captive; yet in his members he still suffers, though not by way of *paine* or *passion*, yet by way of *Sympathy* or *compassion*, he is touched with a feeling of our infirmities, Heb. 4. 15. As by the things which he suffered, he learned obedience toward God, so by the same sufferings he learned compassion, and thereupon mercy and fidelity towards his members; for no man can be more tenderly faithful in the businesse of another, than he who by his owne experience

perience knoweth the consequence and necessity of it. And therefore he is said to be *afflicted* in all the *afflictions* of his people. And the Apostle tells us, that the *afflictions* of the Saints fill up the remainders, or that which is behind, of the sufferings of Christ; for as the Church is called the *fulnesse of Christ*, who yet of himself is so full, as that he filleth all in all (neither doth the Church serve to supply his defects, but to magnifie his mercy:) so the Churches sufferings are esteemed the fulnesse of the sufferings of Christ, although his were of themselves so full before, as that they had a *Consummationes*, to seal up both their measure and their merit. And therefore our sufferings are called his, not by way of addition, or improvement unto thoe; but by way of honour and dignity unto us, they shew Christs compassion towards us, and our union and conformity to him; but no way either any defect of vertue in his, or any value of merit in ours, or any Ecclesiastical treasure or redundancy out of a mixture of both: very profitable they are for the edification of the Church, but very base and unworthy for the expiation of sin: very profitable for the comfort of men, but very unprofitable to the Justice of God. So then, though Christ rest from suffering in himselfe, yet not in his Saints; though the Serpent cannot come to the head, yet it is still bruising of his heele. Here then the Apostles inference is good, there remaineth therefore *rest* unto the people of God and that such a glorious rest as must arise out of the ruine of their enemies. When the wicked perish, they shall see it, and rejoyce, and shall wash their feet in the blood of their adversaries. The revenge of God against his enemies is such, as shall bring an ease with it: *Ab*, saith the Lord, *I will ease me of mine adversaries, I will avenge mee of mine enemies, Isai. 1. 24.* This is the comfort which the Lord giveth his people; that they shall be full, when their enemies shall be hungry, and that hee

VERSE I.

Isaiah 63. 9
Col. 1. 24Isaiah 65. 13
66. 7

VERSE I. will appear to their joy, when their enemies shall be ashamed.

2 Thess. 1. 6,7

1 Pet. 4. 13

1 Cor. 6. 2,3
Alex. ab Alex.
Gen. dier. lib. 6.
cap. 6.
Rosin. Antiq.
Rom. 1. 10. c. 29

This must teach wicked men to take heed of persecuting the members of Christ, for they therein are professed enemies to him whom yet they would seeme to worship. This is certain, that all the counsels and resolutions which are made against the subjects or Lawes of Christs Kingdom, are but vain imaginations which shall never be executed. He will at last avenge the quarrel of his people, and in spite of all the power or malice of hell, make them to sit *actually* in heavenly places with him, whom he hath *virtually* and representatively carried thither already. And it should comfort the faithful in all their sufferings for Christs sake: Because hereby they are, First, *Conformable* unto him. Secondly, they are *Associated* with him. Thirdly, they are assured that they are in a way to rest: for saith the Apostle, it is just with God to recompence tribulation to them that trouble you, and to you who are troubled rest, when the Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven. And in as much, saith S. Peter, as you are partakers of Christs sufferings, when his glory shall be revealed, ye shall be glad also with exceeding joy. And this joy shall be so much the greater, because it shall grow out of the everlasting subjection of the enemy under Christs feet, and those whom here they persecuted and despised, shall there with Christ be their Judges.

Secondly, As it noteth the rest, so likewise the *Triumph of Christ*, when he shall set his feet on the neck of his enemies. The Apostle saith, that he triumphed over them in his Crosse, Col. 2. 15. And there are two words which have an allusion unto the formes of Triumph, *Expoliation* and *Publication*, or representation of the pomp unto the world of the Faithful. He spoiled principalities and powers; that is, He took from them all their armour wherein they trusted; and divided the spoiles. Luke 11. 22. The armour of Satan was principally the hand.

writing

writing of the Law which was against us, or contrary unto us; so long as we were under the full force and rigour of that, so long we were under the possession and tyranny of Satan. But when Christ nailed that unto the Crosse, and took it out of the way, then all the other panoply of Satan was easily taken from him: he was then spoiled of all his weapons and provisions of lust; for the World, and therewithal the things which are in the World, were unto us crucified in the Crosse of Christ. So that now by Faith in him we are able to overcome the World, to value it aright, to esteem the promises thereof thin and empty, and the threatnings thereof vaine and false; the treasures thereof baser then the very reproaches of Christ, and the afflictions thereof not worthy to be compared with the glory which shall be revealed in us, as being in their measure but light, and but momentary in their duration. The power and wisdom of Satan was likewise in the Crosse of Christ most notably befooled and disappointed; for when he thought that he had now swallowed up Christ, he found a hook under that bait, he found that which neither himselfe, nor any of his instruments could have suspected, that Christ crucified was indeed the wisdom of God, and the power of God; and that through death he chose to destroy him who had the power of death. *1 Cor. 1. 24. Heb. 2. 14.* Again, he made a *show, or publick representation* of this victory, and of these his spoiles openly unto the world. As the Crosse was his triumphal chariot, so was it likewise *fericulum pompe*, the pageant, as it were, and table of his spoiles. For though to a carnal eye there was nothing but ignominy and dishonour in it, yet to those that are called, there is an eye of faith given to see in the Crosse of Christ Hell disappointed, Satan confounded, his Kingdom demolished, the earthly members of the old man crucified, affections and lusts abated, and captivity al-

Gal 6. 14

1 John 5. 4. 5

Heb. 11. 26.

Rom. 8. 18

VERSE I.

ready led captive. And indeed what triumph of any the most glorious Conqueror was ever honoured with the opening of graves, the resurrection of the dead, the conversion of enemies, the acclamation of mute and inanimate creatures, the darkness of the Sun, the trembling of the earth, the compassion of the rocks, the amazement of the world, the admiration of the Angels of heaven, but only this triumph of Christ upon the Cross? And if he did so triumph there, how much more at the right hand of the Majesty on high, where he is crowned with glory and honour; and at that great day, which is therefore called the day of the Lord Jesus, because he will therein consummate his triumph over all his enemies, when he shall come with the attendance of Angels, in a chariot of fire, with all the unbelievers of the world bound before his Throne, and with the clamor, applause and admiration of all the Saints?

And this is a plentiful ground of comfort to the faithful in all their conflicts with Satan, sin, temptations, or corruptions, they fight under his protection, and with his Spirit, who hath himselfe already triumphed, who accounteth our temptations his, and his victories ours; who turned the forest perplexities which the world shall ever see, into a Doctrine of comfort unto his Disciples, *Luke 21. 25, 28.* When ever then we are assaulted with any heavy temptation to discomforts, fears, fainting, weariness, despair, sinful conformities, or the like; let us not tesse over our own store, nor depend upon any strength or principles of our own, but look only by faith unto the victories of Christ, and to this great promise which is here made unto him, as Head and Captain of the Church, by whom we shall be able to do all things; and though we were surrounded with enemies, to escape, as he did, through the midst of them all. We know the Cats *Unum magnum* in the Fable, was more worth then the Foxes thousand shifts, notwithstanding

ing all the which he was caught at the last. Our enemies come against us in armies, with infinite methods and stratagems to circumvent us, this only is our comfort, that we have *unum magnum*, one refuge which is above all the Wisdom of the enemy, to climb up unto the Cross of Christ, and to commit the keeping of our souls unto him, out of whose hands no man can take them. When *David* went forth against *Goliath*, he did not grapple with him by his own strength, but with his sling and his stone at a distance overthrew him. It is not good to let Satan come too close unto the soul, to let in his temptations, or to enter into any private and intimate combat with him (this was for our Captain only to do, who we know entered into the field with him, as being certain of his own strength) but our only way to prevail against him, is to take faith as a sling, and Christ as a stone, he will undoubtedly find out a place to enter in and to sink the proudest enemy. We are beset with enemies, yea, we are enemies unto our selves the burden of the flesh, the assaults of the World, the fiery darts of Satan, treason within, and wars without, swarms of Midianites, troops of Amalekites, the Sea before us, the Egyptians behind us; sin before, Satan and the World behind, either I must run on and be drowned in sin, or I must stand still, and be hewed in pieces with the persecutions of wicked men, or I must revolt and turne back to Egypt, and so be devoured in her plagues. In these extremities the Apostle hath given us our *Unum magnum*, Look upon *Jesus*; he that is the Author, will be the finisher of our faith: It is yet but a little while, he will come and will not tarry, he is within the view of our Faith, he is within the cry of our Prayers; he *sitteth at the right hand of power*; nay, he there standeth, and is risen up already in the quarrel of his Saints, *Acts 7. 56*. The nearer the Egyptian is to Israel, the nearer he is to ruine, and the nearer Israel is to deliverance. Though
Moses

Heb. 12. 1, 2
10. 36, 37

VERSE I.

Isaiah 11.1

Zech. 3.8

Exod. 33.14, 6

Mic. 7.19, 20

Psalm 65.3

*Quod in profundum maris
abjicitur penitus non exstat.*

Theodoret.

Psalm 103.12

Isaiah 43.25

Isaiah 44.22

Mal. 3.6

Isaiah 2.11

Moses have not Chariots, nor multitudes of weapons, yet he hath a *Rod*, a *Branch*, an *Angel of Gods* presence, which can open the *Sea*, and give an issue to the greatest dangers, which can turn the enemies rage into his own ruine. There is no enemy so close, so dangerous, so unavoidable as our own lusts. Now the Lord promisseth to deale with the sins of his people, as he did with the Egyptians; we know their tyranny he subdued with many plagues, their first-borne, the strength and flower of the Land he slew before, and those who afterwards joyned themselves against his people he drowned in the bottom of the Sea; so saith the Prophet, *He will subdue our iniquities*; he will purge them away, the power and strength of them he will abate by his Spirit; and as for those remainders thereof, which are yet behind, and rebel against his Grace, he will cast all of them into the depths of the sea; that is, he will remove them utterly away from us, he will drown them in everlasting forgetfulness, he will not only blot them out that they may not be, but he will not remember them neither, which is in some sort to make them even not to have been. And, which yet makes the assurance of all this the stronger, the ground of it all is only in God himself, his Covenant and mercy. Now though our condition alters, yet his mercy is still the same: If the root of the Covenant were in us, then as we change, that also would vary too; but the root is in Gods own grace, whose mercy is therefore without repentance in himself, because it is without reason or merit in us.

Now lastly, This *Foot-stool* under Christs feet, in regard of his enemies, noteth unto us four things. First, *The extreme shame and confusion* which they shall everlastingly suffer, the utter abasing & bringing down of all that exalteth it self against Christ. In victories amongst men, the part conquered goes many times off upon some honourable termes; at the very worst when they are led

led Captives, yet they go like men still: But to be made a stool for the Conquerour to insult over, to lick the dust like a Serpent, and move out of holes like the worms of the earth, to be so low, as not to have any further degree of calamity or dishonour left unto which a man may be debased; this is the *extremity of shame*. It is noted for the greatest indignity which *Bajazet* the Grand Signior ever suffered, when *Tamerlane* his adversary trampled upon his neck; and of * *Valerian*, that cruel persecutor of the Church, that he was trod under foot by *Sapores* the *Persian* King, and after flayed like a beast. It notes the extremest degree of revenge, which hath no mixture of mercy or compassion in it. So that by this we see the enemies of Christ and his Kingdome shall be put to utter and everlasting shame: That as the faithful in that great day of their Redemption shall lift up their heads, and have boldnesse in the presence of the Lamb; so the wicked shall fall flat upon their faces and cleave unto the dust; when the books shall be unsealed, and the consciences of men opened, and the witnesses produced, and the secrets of uncleannesse revealed on the house top, and the mouthes of the wicked, who here for a little while dispute against the wayes of Christ, and cavil at his commands, shall be everlastingly stopped; when men shall be like a deprehended theefe (as the Prophet speaks) then shal their faces be as ashamed, full of trembling, confusion and astonishment. The very best that are, find shame enough in sin, how much more they who give themselves over unto vile and dishonourable affections?

Secondly, Hereby is noted the *burden* which wicked men must bear: The foot-stool beareth the weight of the body, so must the enemies of Christ bear the weight of his heavy and everlasting wrath upon their soules. Sin in the committing seemes very light, no bigger then the *load* which the Prophet shewed his servant, but at last

VERSE I.

Psal. 72. 9

Micah 7. 17

Isaiah 49. 23

Qui Constanti-
ni toties perier-
ruit urbem,
Sub Tamberlano
sella canisq; fuit
** Aurel. Victor*
& Eutropius.

Jerem. 2. 26

Ezra 9. 6

Dan. 9. 7, 8

Rom. 6. 21

VERSE I.

Jer. 2. 24

Matth. 21. 44

Revel. 6. 16

last it gathers into such a tempest, as, if the soul make not haste, it will be swept away and overwhelmed by it. Weighty bodies do with much difference affect the sense according to the difference of places, wherein they are. That vessel or piece of timber, which when it is on the water may be easily drawne with the hand of man, on the land cannot be stirred with much greater strength. So it is with sin upon the conscience, in the time of committing it, nothing more easie; but in the time of judging it, nothing more unsupportable. A wild Ass in the time of her lusting, traverseth her wayes with much petulancy, and snuffeth up the wind at her pleasure, no man can turn her; but *in her mouth*, that is, when she is burdened with her foale, she then feelth the event of her former lustfulness, and will easily be overtaken: so the wicked in sin, however for the time they may beare it out with much mirth, and cheer up their hearts in the dayes of their pleasure, yet when sin is come to the birth and so fully finished, that it is now ready to bring forth death unto the soul, they shall then find that it is but like the roll which the Prophet swallowed, sweet to the palate, but bitter in the belly; like a cup of deadly poison, pleasant in the mouth, but torment in the bowels. *On Whomsoever the Son of man shall fall with the weight of his heavy displeasure, he will grind him to powder.* That must needs be a heavy burden which men would most joyfully exchange for the weight of rocks and mountaines to lye everlastingly upon their backs: And yet the wicked at that great day shall all in vaine begge of the mountaines and rocks to fall upon them, and to hide them from the wrath of the Lamb; shall rather chuse to live eternally under the weight of the heaviest creature in the world, then under the fury of him that sitteth upon the Throne.

Thirdly, Herein likewise is noted the relation of a just and equal recompence unto ungodly men. The Lord saith

VERSE I.

useth often to fit punishments to the quality and measure of the sins committed. He that on the earth denied a crumb of bread, in hell was denied a drop of water. Man who being in honor would needs affect to be as God, was thereby debased to become like the beasts that perish. *Nadab* and *Abihu* offered strange fire, and perished by strange fire from the Lord. ^a *Sodome* and *Gomorrah* burnt in unnatural lusts, and they were drowned in an unnatural tempest of fire. ^b That apostate in *S. Cyprian*, who opened his mouth against Christ in blasphemie, was immediately smitten with dumbnesse that he could not open it unto Christ for mercy. ^c *Euthropius* the *Eunuch* when he perswaded the Emperor to take from malefactors the benefit of refuge at the Altars, did therein prevent his owne mercy, and beg away the advantage of an escape from himselfe, the priviledge whereof he did afterwards in vaine lay hold on. And thus will Christ deale with his enemies at the Last day. Here they trample upon Christ, in his Word, in his wayes, in his members. They make the Saints ^d bow downe for them to goe over, and make them as the pavements on the ground. They tread under foot the blood of the covenant, and the Sanctuary of the Lord, and put Christ to shame here: and there their owne measure shall be returned into their own bosome, they shall be constrained to confesse as *Adonibezek*, as I have done, so God hath requited me. Yea, this they shall suffer from the meaneest of Christs members, whom they here insulted over. They shall then as witnesses, and as it were co-assessors with Christ, judge the very wicked Angels, and tread them under their feet. They shall take them captives whose captives they were, and shall rule over their oppressors. All they that despised them shall bow themselves at the soles of their feet. They who gathered themselves against *Sion*, and said, let her be defiled, and let our eye see it, shall themselves be gathered as sheaves into the floor.

^a Ο τῆς κοιλίας
σεως τρεπόμενος
τῆς ἀπορίας
μεταμύνηται
Chrysost.

^b Hom. 20 ad pop.
Antioch.

^c Inde penna cap-
pit unde capis
et Crimen. Cy-
prian. de lapsis.
Socrat. Histor.

^d lib. 6. cap. 5. et
Socrat. lib. 8. c. 7.

^e Ezay 51. 23
Heb. 10. 29

^f Ezay 63. 18
Rev. 11. 2

Heb. 6. 6
Judg. 1. 7

1 Cor. 6. 23
Rom. 16. 20

Esai. 14. 2
Mich. 4. 11, 12, 13

Mich. 7. 10

VERSE I.

^a *Valentius* Humana perversè utendo bonus, fit malus: ille Ordinate etiam malis usendo, permanet bonus. *Aug. Epist. 120.* Sicut ergo ipsi benigritate, & patientia, id est, Bonis Dei male utuntur, dum non corriguntur; si contra, Deus etiam malis eorum bene utitur, non solum ad justitiam suam, quæ eis digna in fine retribuet, sed etiam ad excitationem & profectum factorum suorum, ut ex ipsa etiam malorum perversitate, boni proficiant, & probentur, & manifestentur. *Idem, epist. 141.*

^b 2 Tim. 2. 20.

^c Isa. 10. 5, 6, 7

^d Rom. 9. 17

^e Matth. 18. 7.

^f 1 Cor. 11. 19.

^g Isa. 37. 28, 29

floor, and the Daughter of Sion shall arise and thresh them with hornes of iron, and with hooves of brasse. Then (saith the Church) see, that is, mine enemies shall see it, and shame shall cover her which said unto me, Where is the Lord thy God? Mine eyes shall behold her; Now shall she be troden downe as the mire of the streets. Even so let all thine enemies perish O Lord; but let them which love thee be as the Sunne when he goeth forth in his might.

Lastly, herein we may note the great power and wisdom of Christ in turning the malice and mischief of his enemies into his owne use and advantage; and in so ^a ordering wicked men, that though they intend nothing but extirpation and ruine to his Kingdome, yet they shall be useful unto him, and, against their owne wills, serviceable to those glorious ends, in the accomplishing whereof he shall be admired by all those that believe. As in a great house there is necessary use of vessels of dishonour, destinated unto sordid and meane, but yet daily services: so in ^b the great house of God, wicked men are his utensils and household instruments, as footstools, and staves, and vessels wherein there is no pleasure, though of them there may be good use. The ^c Assyrian was the Rod of his anger, his axe wherewith hee pruned, and his Saw wherewith he threatened his people. ^d Pharaoh was a vessel fitted to shew the glory and power of his name. ^e It is necessary, saith our Saviour, that offences come, and there ^f must be heresies, saith the Apostle. Because as a skillful Physician ordereth poysonful and destructive ingredients unto useful services: So the Lord by his wisdom doth make use of wicked mens persons and purposes to his owne most righteous and wonderfull ends, & secretly and mightily directing their wicked designs, to the magnifying of his owne power and providence, and to the furthering of his people in faith and godlinesse.



VERSE 2.

VERSE 2.

The Lord shall send the Rod of thy strength out of Sion : Rule thou in the midst of thine enemies.



His Verse is a continuation of the former touching the Kingdome of Christ, and it contains the form of its spiritual administration. Wherin is secretly couched another of the Offices of Christ, namely, his Prophetical office. For that is as it were the dispensation and execution of his regal Office in the militant Church. The sum of this administration consists in two principal things : First, in matters military, for the subduing of enemies, and for the defence and protection of his people. Secondly, in matters civil and judicial, for the government, preservation and honour of his Kingdome. And both these are in this *Psalm*: The former in the latter part of this verse, *Rule thou in the midst of thine enemies.* The other in the third verse, *Thy people shall be willing.* &c. and the way of compassing and effecting in the former words of this verse, *The Lord shall send forth the Rod of thy strength out of Sion.*

Every King hath his *jura Regalia*, certaine roial prerogatives and peculiar honours proper to his own person, which no man can use but with subordination unto him. And if wee observe them, we shall finde many of them as exactly belong unto Christ in his Kingdome, as to any secular prince in his. First, unto Kings doe belong *Armamentaria publica*, the Magazines for military provision, and the power and disposition of publick armes. There.

Greg. Tbolo. de
Repub. lib. 9.
cap. 1.

VERSE 12.

Rom. 13. 4

1 Sam. 10. 16, 17

Gal. 6. 2

Jam. 2. 8

Jam. 1. 25

Psa. 91. 11

Prov. 10. 29

Esa. 26. 13

Rom. 13. 6, 7

Psal. 56. 8

Therefore he is said by the Apostle to *Bear the sword*, because armes properly belong unto him, and unto others under his allowance and protection. So to Christ alone doth belong, and in him only is to be found the publick armorie of a Christian man. The weapons of our warfare are mighty onely through him. Nay, he is himselfe the armour and panoply of a Christian, and therefore we are commanded to *put on the Lord Jesus*. Again, *via publica is via regia*; the high way is the Kings way, wherein every man walketh freely under the protection of his Sovereigne. So that Law of faith and obedience under which we are to walke, which S. Paul calleth the Law of Christ, is by S. James called *Lex Regia*, a royal Law, and a *Law of Libertie*, in which while any man continueth, he is under the protection of the promises and of the Angels of Christ. Again, *Bona ade-
spota seu incerti Domini*, Lands that are concealed and under the evident claime of no other person or Lord, doe belong unto the Prince, as he that hath the supreme and universal dominion in his countries. And this is most certainly true of Christ in his Kingdome, if any man can once truly say, Lord, I am not the servant of any other Master, no other King hath the rightful dominion, or peaceable possession of my heart; he may most truly from thence inferre, Therefore Lord I am thy servant, and therefore Lord my heart is thine. True it is, Lord our God, that other Lords besides thee have had dominion over us: but now by thee onely will we make mention of thy name. Again, *Vestigalia*, and *Census*, Tributes, and Customes, and Testifications of homage and fidelity are personal prerogatives belonging unto Princes, and as the Apostle saith, *Due unto them*, for that Ministrie and Office which under God they attend upon. So in Christs Kingdome there is a worship which the Psalmist saith is *Due unto his name*. They which came unto the Temple, which was a type of Christ, were not

to come empty handed, but to bring Testimonies of their reverence, and willing subjection unto that worship. When *Abraham* met *Melchisedec*, a figure of Christ, as from him he received a blessing, so unto him he gave an expression of a loyall heart, the tenth of the spoils.

VERSE 2.

*When the people of Israel entred into the land of Canaan (which was a type of Christs Church which he should conquer unto himselfe) if any people accepted of the peace which they were first to proclaime, they were to become tributaries and servants unto Israel: So it is said of *Salomon* (whose peaceable kingdome was a type of Christs after his many victories) that he ^a *Levied a tribute of bond-service* upon all the nations about Israel; and ^b that those Princes with whom he held correspondence brought unto him presents, as testimonies of his greatness and wisdom. So ^c when the wise men, (the first fruits of the Gentiles, after Christ exhibited) came to submit unto his Kingdome, they opened their treasure and presented him with gifts, gold, frankincense and myrrh. Again, *Monetarum, leges & valores*, the authorizing and valuations of publick coines belongeth unto the Prince onely, it is his image and inscription alone which maketh them currant. Even so unto Christ only doth belong the power of stamping and creating as it were new ordinances in his Church, nothing is with God, nor should be currant with us, which hath not his image or expresse authority upon it. Neither can any man falsify or corrupt any commandment of his without notable contempt against his royal prerogative. Again, *Judicium* or *potestas judiciaria*, a power of judging the persons and causes of men is a peculiar royalty, the administration whereof is from the prince as

**Josb. 11. 19.* For though there be an exception made of the Canaanites, *Deut. 20. ver. 16, 17.* yet I conceive the equity of that Law did even amongst them pertain to all those who did not owe of hardnesse of heart stand out against Israel, but relinquishing their owne idolatries, and abominations, did willingly yeeld up their land to the possession, and their hearts to the religion of Gods People. *vid. Theodorici. qu. 15. in Josb. Aug. qu. 13. 4 in Josb. Hic se-*

var in Josb. cap. 6. quast. 43. Et cap. 9. quast. 8. Magnum in Josb. cap. 6. p. 117. Hug. Grotium de Jure Belli. lib. 2. cap. 13. S. 4. Pet. Cuneum de Repub. Heb. lib. 2. cap. 20. Wechse of the Judicial Lawes cap. 9. out of Grotius. Jan. in Deut. 20. 16. Deut. 20. 11. 1 King 4. 21. 1 King 9. 21. 10. 10. Matth. 2. 11. Primitia Gentium sacramentalia munera proferunt de Thesauris. Hieron. serm. de stell. & Magis Briffon. De Reg. Persarum. l. 1. 16.

VERSE 2.

John 5. 22, 27.

2 King. 11. 12.
1 King. 10. 18.Liv. lib. 30
Tacit. Ann. 1. 4.
Dionys. Hallic.
lib. 3.Heb. 1. 9.
Psal. 45. 6, 8.Insigne maje-
tatis regia.
Hieron.

the fountain of all humane equity (under God) deposited in the hands of inferiour officers, who are as it were the mouth of the Prince to publish the lawes, and to execute those acts of Justice and Peace, which principally belong to his own sacred brest. And so Christ saith of himselfe, *The Father hath committed all judgement unto the Sonne, and hath given him authority to execute judgment.* Again, *Jus vita & necis*, A power to pardon condemned persons, and deliver them from the terror of the Lawes sentence, is a transcendent mercy, a gem which can shine only from the diadems of Princes. Now unto Christ likewise belongeth in his Church a power to forgive sinnes, it is the most sacred royalty of this Prince of peace, not onely to suspend, but for ever to revoke, and as it were, annihilate the sentence of malediction under which every man is born. There are likewise *Ornamenta Regia*, regal Ornaments, a Crowne, a Throne, a Scepter, and the like. Thus we finde the Romans were wont to send to those forraign Kings with whom they were in league, as testimonies and confirmations of their dignity *scipionem sturneum, togam pictam, sellam curulem*, an ivory scepter, a royal robe, and a chaire of state. And the like honors we find in the Scriptures belonging unto Christ, that hee was crowned with *Glory and Honour*, and that hee had a *Throne and righteous Scepter* belonging to his Kingdome. Thus we have scene in several particulars how Christ hath his Royalties belonging to his Kingdome. Some principal of them we find in this place; a *Throne*, a *Scepter*, *Ambassadors*, *Armies* for the right dispensing of his sacred power. We will first consider the words, and then raise such observations as shall offer themselves.

First, what is meant by the *Rod of Christs strength*, or his *Strong Rod*? It notes a thing which a man may lean upon, or lay the whole weight of his body on in his wearinesse. But being spoken of Christs Kingdome, we take it for a scepter or rod of Majesty. I will not hold you with the

The Rod of Christ out of Sion.

131

VERSE 2.

Theodorct.
Arnobius.
Aug. & Prosp
Euthymius.

the variety of acceptions in Expositors. Some take it for the branch that groweth out of that roor of Jesse. Some for the wood of the Crofs. Some for the body of Christ borne of a Virgin. Some, for the Kingdome of Christs Power, taking the sign for the thing signified. Some for the power of his mighty works and preaching. That of the Body, and of the Croffe of Christ, except by them we understand the vertue of Christ crucified, I conceive to be not so pertinent to the purpose of the Prophet. The rest agree in one. But for the more distinct understanding of the words, we may consider out of the holy Scriptures, what things were sent out of Sion. And we find there two things: First, the Word of the Lord, or his holy Gospel. The Law shall proceed out of Sion, and the Word of the Lord from Jerusalem, Mic. 4. 2. Secondly, the Spirit of the Lord, which was first sent unto Sion; for at Jerusalem the Apostles were to wait for the promise of the Father, Act. 1. 4. and from thence was shed abroad into the world upon all flesh, Act. 2. 17. And both these are the power or strength of Christ. His Word, a Gospel of Power unto salvation; and his Spirit, a Spirit of Power, which is therefore called the finger and the arme of the Lord, Luk. 11. 20. Matth. 12. 28. Isa. 53. 1. so by the Rod is meant the Gospel and the Spirit of Christ.

Rom. 1. 16.
2 Cor. 4. 7.
10. 4.
1 Cor. 2. 4
2 Tim. 1. 7.

Secondly, What is meant by Gods sending this Rod of Christs strength? It notes, the manifestation of the Gospel, we knew it not before it was sent; the donation of the Gospel, we had it not before it was sent; the revelations of the Gospel, we were without God in the world; and strangers from the Covenant of promise, before it was sent. The Commission of the Dispensers of the Gospel, they have their patent from heaven, they are not to speak until they be sent.

Thirdly, what is meant by sending it out of Sion? It is put in Opposition to mount Sinai, from whence the Law was sometimes sent with thunders and fire, and much

VERSE 2.

terrour unto the people of Israel. *Ye are not come*, saith the Apostle, *unto the mount that burned with fire, nor unto blacknesse and darknesse, and tempest, &c. but ye are come unto mount Sion, and unto the City of the living God, the Heavenly Jerusalem, and to an innumerable company of Angels, and to Jesus the Mediator of the new Covenant, &c. Heb. 12. 18. 24.* and the Apostle else-where sheweth us the meaning of this Allegorical opposition betweene Sina and Sion, between Sarah and Hagar, namely, the two covenants of the Law and of Grace, or of bondage and liberty, *Gal. 4. 24. 25.* Sion was the place whither the Tribes resorted to worship the Lord, the place towards which that people prayed, the place of Gods mercifull residence amongst them, the beauty of holinesse, the place upon which first the gift of the holy Ghost was powred forth, and in which the Gospel was first of all preached after Christs Ascension. We may take it by a *Synechdeche* for the whole Church of the Jewes, unto whom the Lord first revealed his Covenant of Grace in Christ.

Rule Thou] that is, *Thou shalt rule*: Which is an usual forme to put the Imperative for the future Indicative. It is not a command, which hath relation unto any service: but it is a promise, a commission, a dignity conferred upon Christ.

In the midst of thine enemies.] Some understand it of changing the hearts of his enemies, and converting them as captives unto his obedience. Other understand the wonderful effects of the Power of Christs Kingdome, that he can by his Word and Spirit hold up his Church in despite of all the enemies thereof round about. The Church ever was and will be pester'd with divers kindes of adversaries, Hereticks and Hypocrites, and false brethren, with profanenesse, temptations, persecutions, spiritual wickednesse; and in the midst of all these the Church of CHRIST groweth as a Lilly amongst the Thornes. Now this *In medio*, noteth two things; *Domi-*

A&. 3. 26.
A&. 13. 4. 6.
Rom. 2. 10.

Qui alieni erant, tui esse incipient. Dignare esse Dominus inimicorum tuorum. Hieron.

The Rod of Christ out of Sion.

133

VERSES 2.

niam plenum, and dominum securum, A perfect and full government without mutilation, without impediment, the Church being amongst the wicked as a rock in the midst of the Sea, or as a Garrison in an Enemies town, Media dominantur in urbe, is an expression of such a rule as can no way be hindred or removed. The Church of God is a burdensome stone, they who go about to remove it out of that place where Christ will plant it shall be cut in pieces, though all the people of the earth should gather together against it, Zeeb: 1.2,3. A secure and confident government, so in the Scripture phrase, In the midst notes confidence and security. When the Prophet asked the Shunammite, would it thou be spoken for to the King, or to the Captain of the host? she answered, I dwell amongst mine own People, that is, I am safe and have enough already, 2 King: 4. 13. When they of the Synagogue would have cast Christ down head-long from the brow of a hill, it is said, that he passed through the midst of them, and went his way, that is, with much confidence, safety, and assurance he withdrew himselfe. Luke 4. 29, 30. And as the Prophet was full of security and quietnesse in the midst of the Syrian siege, 2 King: 6. 14. 16.

The words being thus unfolded, we may observe in them three of Christs principall Regalities, *Sceptrum, Solum, and Imperium*. The Scepter, the Throne, and The Power or government of his Kingdom. His Scepter is the word of his Gospel, animated by the Power of his holy Spirit, and accompanied with the blessing and authority of God the Father, who sendeth it abroad into the world. His Throne, from whence this his Scepter is extended, *Sion, the Church of the Jews*; His victorious, plenary, and secure government, *Rule thou in the midst of thine Enemies.*

First, the Scepter, here is the Gospel and the Spirit of Christ, Christ is a Shepherd towards his Flock the

p 133 - 1.

p 269 - 2.

p 278 - 3.

VERSE 2

Church. *Isaiab 40. 11. A great Shepheard, Hebr: 13. 20.* that notes his *Power and Majesty* over them: and a *good Shepheard, Job: 10. 14* that notes his care and *tenderneſſe* towards his Sheep. Kings in the Scripture are called *Shepheards* to lead and to feed, & to govern the people. So *David* is ſaid to have been taken from the ſheepfolds, to feed *Jacob and Iſrael, Ps. 78. 71. 2 Samt 5. 2.* And thus *Chriſt is a Shepheard and a King, I will ſet up one Shepheard over them, and he ſhall feed them, Even my ſervant David.*—I the Lord will be their God, and my ſervant *David a Prince among them, Ezek. 34. 23, 24* Prophets & Teachers are in the Scripture likewiſe called *Shepheards, Jer: 23. 1, 4.* and ſo *Chriſt is a Shepheard and a Biſhop.* Ye were as ſheep going aſtray, but now ye are returned unto the *Shepheard and Biſhop of your ſouls, 1 Pet: 2. 25.* And therefore we find in the Scripture that *Chriſt hath two paſtorall ſlaves, to note his great care, and double office in his Church. The Lord is my Shepheard, I ſhall not want.*—*I will fear no evil, for thou art with me, thy Rod and thy Staffe they comfort me, Pſalm 23. 4.* I took unto me two ſlaves, the one I called *Beauty, and the other I called Bands, and I fed the flock, Zeek: 11. 7.* So then the *Rod of Chriſts ſtrength* or his ſtrong ſtaff doth in theſe ſeveral relations note unto us three things: As it is a *ſtaff of ſtrength*, ſo it notes the power of Chriſt. As it is the *Scepter of a King*, ſo it notes the *majeſty* of Chriſt. As it is the *ſtaff of a Biſhop, or Prophet*, ſo it notes the care and *ſuperintendency* of Chriſt over his Church. So then this firſt particular of the *Rod of Chriſts Kingdom* affords unto us three obſervations: *Firſt*, that Chriſt in his *Gospel and Spirit* is full of power and ſtrength towards the Church. *Secondly*, that Chriſt in his *Gospel and Spirit* is full of *Glory and Majeſty* towards his Church. *Thirdly*, that Chriſt in his *Gospel and Spirit* is full of care and of *tenderneſſe* towards his Church.

1. p 135.

2. p 162.

3. p 228.

Firſt,

The Power of the Gospel.

135

VERSE 2.

First, *The word of the Gospel with the spirit is full of power and strength.* No man will deny that Christ in his own person is full of power. And as the power of a Prince is principally seen in his Laws, edicts, pardons, and gracious patents: so is the power of Christ wonderfully magnified towards the Church in his Gospel, which unto us is both a Covenant of mercy, and a law of obedience. We may observe how Christ is frequently pleased to honour his Gospel with his own Titles and Attributes. And therefore the Apostle speaks of him and his word, as of one and the same thing. *The word of God is quick and powerful* — a discerners of the thoughts and intents of the hearts, neither is there any Creature which is not manifest in his sight, but all things are naked and open unto the eyes of him with whom we have to do. That which is the word in one verse is Christ himself in another, which hath given occasion to some learned men (without any constraining reason (as I conceive) to take the word there for the essential Word of God, or the person of Christ himself, to whom I think that appellation is not given by any of the sacred writers, but only by his beloved Disciple Saint John. We know that Christ was crucified at Jerusalem, and yet the Apostle saith, that he was crucified amongst the *Galatians*, certainly, in that he died *but once unto sinners*. St Paul could not do that himself, which he curseth others for doing, crucify again the Lord of Glory. So then at Jerusalem he was crucified in his own person, and at *Galatia* in the Ministry of his word. One and the same crucifying was as lively set forth in Saint Pauls preaching, as it was really acted upon Christs person: for Christ is as really present to his Church now in the spiritual dispensation of his ordinances, as he was corporally present with the Jews in the days of his flesh. And therefore I say it is that we find the same attributes given to both, *Christ the power of God, and the wisdom of God, and*

Heb: 4. 12. 13.

Gal: 3. 1.

a 1 Cor. I. 24.

VERSES.

b Rom: 1. 16.
 c 1 Cor: 2. 6, 7.
 d 1 Cor: 2. 8.
 e 1 Tim: 1. 11.
 f Act: 3. 15.
 g 1 John 1. 1.
 h Phil: 2. 16.
 i John 5. 27.
 k Joh. 12. 48.
 l Luk: 1. 69, 77.
 m Luk: 2. 30.
 n Eay 62. 11.
 o Gen: 49. 18.
 p Joh: 4. 22.

n Heb: 2. 2, 3.
 2 Cor: 3. 9.

o Act: 28. 28.

p Act: 13. 46.

q Jam: 1. 21.

r 2 Cor: 4. 6.

the Gospel else where the *b* Power of God and the *c* wisdom of God in a mystery to them that are perfect. Again, *d* Christ the Lord of glory, and the Gospel the *e* Gospel of glory, or the glorious Gospel. *f* Christ the Prince of life, yea the *g* Word of Life, and the *h* Gospel the Word of life too, *i* Christ a Judge, and the *k* Word of Christ a Judge too. The word which I have spoken, the same shall judge you at the last day. *l* Christ a Saviour and Salvation unto men. Mine eyes have scene thy salvation: And the *m* Gospel of Christ a Salvation too; we know, saith Christ to the Woman of Samaria, what we worship, for Salvation is of the Jews. The force of the reason leads us to understand by Salvation the Oracles of God which were committed unto that People, for out of them only it is, that we know what and how to worship, and this is not usuall in holy Scriptures. *n* If the Word, saith the Apostle, spoken by Angels was stedfast, and every transgression and disobedience received a just recompence of reward: How shall we escape if we neglect so great Salvation, which as the first began to be spoken by the Lord? &c. Where we find Salvation set in opposition to the Word spoken by Angels, which was the Law of God, or the ministry of condemnation, and therefore it must needs signifie the Gospel of Christ. *o* Be it known unto you, saith the Apostle to the unbelieving Jews, that the salvation of God, that is, the Gospel of God (as appeareth plainly in the like parallel speech in *p* another place) is sent unto the Gentiles, and that they will beare it. So the Apostle saith that *q* the engrafted Word is able to save the soules of men. All which and many other the like particulars note unto us, that as Christ is the power and Image of his Father, so the Gospel is in some sort of Christ: For which reason the Apostle, as I conceive, calleth the Gospel *r* the face of Jesus Christ: God, who commanded the light to shine out of darkness hath shined in our hearts, to give the light of the knowledge of the

The Power of the Gospel.

I 37

VERSE 2.

the glory of God in the face of Jesus Christ. Where is it that we behold the glory of God but *sin a glass?* and what is that *glass?* but the word of God, as *St. James* calls it? *Jam. 1. 22.* Christ is not pleased any other ways ordinarily to exercise his power, or to reveal his glory but in these ordinances of his which we dispense. Therefore he walketh in his Church with a *a sword in his mouth,* and with a *b Rod in his mouth,* to note that he giveth no greater testification of his strength than in the Ministry of his Gospel; which is therefore sometimes called a *c sword,* a *d hammer,* a *fire,* sometimes only a *e saviour* of life and death, to note the mighty working thereof, that can kill as well by a sent, as by a wound; as well by a breath, as by a blow.

To consider this point a little more distinctly. This Power of the Gospel of Christ appears in both those regards, as it is a savor of life unto life, & as it is a savor of death unto death. Towards his Church who shall be saved, and towards his enemies who shall perish. Many wayes is the Gospel of Christ and his Spirit a Rod of strength unto his Church.

First, in their *Calling and conversion* from the power of Satan unto God. Satan is a strong man, and he is armed, hath a whole panoply and full provision of military instruments, and (which is a great advantage) hath both the first possession, and the full love of the hearts of men before Christ attempts any thing upon them. And therefore that which pulleth a man from under the paw of such a Lion, and forceth him away from his own palace, must needs be much stronger than he. And therefore the Apostle commendeth the power of the word by this argument, that it is a sword fit to overcome principalities and powers, and rulers of the darkness of this world, & spiritual wickednesses in heavenly places. Again, the old man in our nature is a strong man too a reigning King, which setteth himself mightily against the

1 2 Cor: 3. 18.

a Revel: 1. 16

b Esay: 11. 4

c Eph: 6. 17.

d Jer: 23. 29.

Jer: 5. 16.

e 2 Cor: 2. 16.

Luk: 11. 20, 21

Eph: 2. 2.

2 Tim: 2. 26.

Eph: 6. 12. 17.

VERSE 2.

αὐτοῦ ἐν τῷ
 ὄρει ἐαυτοῦ, καὶ
 ἐπὶ τῆς θύρας
 ἡμῶν ἐμνήσθη
 ves, Greg. Naz.
 Orat. 1.

Mark 4.39, 41

Ila. 57. 20.

Psal. 114. 5, 6.

the Word and will of Christ, and cherisheth the disease against the remedy. And by that likewise the Apostle commendeth the power of the Gospel, that it is mighty through God to the pulling down of strong holds, and imaginations of fleshly reasonings. When Christ still'd the Winds, and the Sea with but two words, *Peace, be still*, they were exceedingly amazed at his power, and said one to another, *what manner of man is this, that even the winds and the Sea obey him?* The conversion of a man is a far greater work than the stilling of the Sea, that will sometimes be calm of it self when the fury of the wind ceaseth. The wicked indeed are like the Sea, but not at any time, but *like a troubled Sea when it cannot rest*. The Sea we know is subject unto several motions. An inward boyling and unquietnesse from it self, its ordinary fluxes and refluxes from the influence of the Moon, many casual agitations from the violence of the winds, and from its own wayes, one wave precipitating, impelling, and repelling another: So are the hearts of wicked men by the foaming estuasions, and excesses of natural concupiscence, by the provisions and materials of sinful pleasures, by the courses of the world, by the sollicitations & impulsions of Satan, by a world of hourly casualties and provocations so tempestuous that they alwayes cast out upon the words and actions of men mire and dirt. Now in the dispensation of the word by the ministry of a weak man Christ stilleth the raging of this Sea, quells the furies, correcteth the distempers, scattereth the temptations, worketh a smoothnesse and tranquillity of spirit in the soul of a man. Surely when this is done the soul cannot but stand amazed at its own recovery, and admire that wonderful and invisible power which could so suddenly rebuke such raging affections, & reduce them unto calmnesse & beauty again. *What ailed thee, O thou Sea, that thou fleddest, and thou Jordan that thou wert driven back? ye mountains that*

The Power of the Gospel.

139

VERSE 2.

that ye skipped like Rams, and ye little hills like Lambs? It is an expression of Gods power towards his people in their triumphal entrance into the Land of *Canaan*. We may apply it to the conquest and possession which the word takes of the souls of men. What ailed a man that he was driven back from his own channel, and made suddenly to forget his wonted course? What ailed those strong & mountainous lusts, which were as immovably settled upon the soul as a hill upon his base, to fly away at the voice of a man like a frightened sheep? What ailed those smaller corruptions and intemperancies, which haply had before lost their names, and were rather customs, and infirmities, than sins, to fly away like Lambs from the Word of Christ? A man went into the Church with a full tide and stream of lusts, every thicket in his heart, every reasoning and imagination of his soul did before shelter whole flocks of evill affections: when he came out the tide was driven back, the stream turned, the center of his heart altered, his Forrest discovered, his lusts scattered and subdued. What ails this man? He hath but heard an hours discourse, the same which others hear, & their tide riseth the higher by it. Certainly these Devils were not cast out, these streams were not turned back but by the finger of God himself. When the Minister of Christ shall whisper in the ears of a dead man, whom no thunder could have awakned, and he shall immediately rise up & give glory to God, when Christ shall call men to deny themselves, to get above themselves, to hate Father and Mother, and Wife and Children, and their own Life, to sell all that they have, to crucifie, and be cruel to their own members, to pull out their right eyes, to cut off their right hands, to part from those sins which before they esteemed their choicest ornaments, and from those too which before they made their chiefest support & subsistence, to stand at defiance with allurements or dis-

ACT. 17.32.34

con-

VERSE 2.

couragements of the world, to beset up for signes and wonders, for very proverbs of scorn, and objects of hatred to those of their own house; to receive persecutions as rewards, and entertain them not with patience only but with thankfulness and rejoycing; to be all their life long in the midst of enemies, put to tedious conflicts with the powers of the world and of darknesse; to believe things which they have not seen, and to hope for things which they do not know; and yet maugre all this to refuse to consult with flesh and bloud, to stand still more in aw of Gods word, than of any other thing: certainly that which with the voyce of a weak man bringeth such great things to passe, must needs be *Virga virtutis*, a Rod of strength. A Rod like the Rod of *Moses*, which can lead us through such seas as these, to one whom we have never seen nor knowne before, *Esay* 55. 5.

Secondly, the Gospel of Christ is a Rod of strength in the justification of man, as it is *Sceptum iustitie*, a Scepter of Righteousnesse, a word of Reconciliation, a Gospel of Salvation, a Law of the Spirit of life, a ministration of the Spirit of life, and of Righteousnesse, an opening of prisons, & a proclaiming of liberty unto captives, in these respects likewise it is full of power. There was a mighty power in the Law of God typified in those thundrings & terrors with which it was administered upon mount *Sina*; the Apostle calleth it a School-master to scourge and drive us unto Christ, and the Psalmist an *iron Rod* able to break in pieces all the potsherds of the earth. And we know boyes in a School do not apprehend so much terror in the King, as in their Master. Yet in comparison of the power of the Gospel, the law it self was very *weake*, and *unprofitable*, able to make nothing perfect. The Power of the Law was only to destruction, the Power of the Gospel for edification. The law could only hold under him that was

down

^a Heb: 1. 8.^b 2 Cor: 5. 19.^c Eph: 1. 13.^d Rom: 8. 2, 3.^e 2 Cor: 3. 6, 8, 9.^f Esay 61. 1.^g Gal: 3. 24.^b Psal: 2. 9.ⁱ Rom: 8. 3.

Heb: 7. 18, 19.

down before, it could never raise him up againe. Now the power is farre greater to raise than to kill, to forgive sinnes, than to bind them. Herein is the mighty ^k strength of Gods mercy scene, that it can passe by iniquities, transgressions and sinnes. To ¹ preach the Gospel of Christ in his Name and Authority, is an evident argument of that plenary power which is given unto him both in Heaven and Earth. And the very dispensing of this word of reconciliation which is committed unto the Ministers of the Gospel (how basely soever the ungrateful world may esteem of them) hath honoured them with a title of as great power as a man is capable of, to be called *Saviours*, to have the custody of the keyes of heaven, ministerially and instrumentally under Christ and his Spirit, to save the soules, and to cover the sins of men. Now then, that word which from the mouth of a weake man is able to reconcile a child of wrath unto God, and by the words of one houre to cover and wipe out the sinnes of many yeeres, which were scattered as thick in the soules of men as the starres of the firmament, must needs be *virga virtutis*, a Rod of strength.

VERSE 2.

Exod. 34. 5.
6, 7
Mich. 7. 18, 19.
Math. 9. 6.
Mat. 28. 18,
19.

Obad. ver. 21.
John 20. 23.
1 Tim. 4. 16.
James 5. 20.

John 17. 17
1a. 54. 13.
Gal. 4. 19.
2 Cor. 3. 2

Thirdly, the Gospel of Christ is a *Rod of strength in the sanctification of men*, as it is *Sceptrum cum unctiōe*, a Scepter which hath ever an unction accompanying it. As it is a sanctifying truth, an Heavenly teaching, a forming of Christ in the soule, a making of the heart as it were his Epistle, by writing the Law therein, and manifesting of the power and image of Christ in the conscience. If a man should touch a marble or adamant stone with a seale, and taking it off, should see the print of it left behind, hee could not but conceive some wonderfull and secret vertue to have wrought so strange an effect. Now our hearts are of themselves as hard as the neather millstone; when then a holy word, so meekly and gently laid on upon them, shall leave there an impression of its own purity, when so small a thing as a graine of mustard-seede

VERSE 2.

seede shall transform an earthly soule into its own nature: when the eyes, and hands, and mouth of Christ being in the ministry of his Word spread upon the eyes, and hands and mouth of a Child, shall revive the same from death; when by looking into a glasse we shall not only have a view of our own faces, but shall see them changed into the image of another face which from thence shineth upon us, how can we but conclude that certainly that word by which such wonders as these are effected, is indeed *virga virtutis*, a Rod of strength?

Fourthly, the Gospel of Christ is a Rod of strength, in the Preservation and Perseverance of the Saints, as it is *Virga germinans*, a Rod like Aarons Rod, which blossomed, and the blossomes perished not, but remained in the Arke for a Testimony of Gods power. For as those buds, or the Manna in the Ark did not perish, so neither doth the Word of the Gospel in the hearts of the faithfull. The Apostle saith, that we are kept by the power of God unto salvation, and S. Jude, that Gods power keepeth the Saints from falling, and presenteth them faultlesse before the presence of his Glory; and what is this power of God whereby he doth it, but the Gospel of Christ, which S. Peter calleth *semen incorruptibile*, uncorruptible seed; and the Spirit of Christ, which S. John calleth *semen manens*, an abiding seed? If I should see a tree with perpetual fruit, without any variation from the difference of seasons, a tree like that in Saint Johns Paradise, which every month did bring forth fruit of twelve severall kinds, I should conclude that it had an extraordinary vitall power in it: so when I finde Christ in his Word promising, and by the planting and watering of his Laborers in the vineyard, making good that promise unto his Church; That every branch bringing forth fruit in him, shall not onely bee as Aarons Rod, have his fruite preserved upon him, but shall bring forth more fruite, and shall have life more abundantly, how can I but conclude, that

1 Pet. 1. 5.
Jud. 7. 24.

1 Pet. 1. 24.
1 John 3. 9.

John 15. 2.
John 10. 10.

that that Word which is the Instrument of so unpensurable a condition, is indeede *Virga virtutis*, a Rod of strength, a Rod cut out of the Tree of life it self?

Fifthly, the Gospel of Christ is a *Rod of strength* in comforting and supporting of the faithfull, as it is *Virga pulchritudinis & colligationis*, a Rod of beauty and of Binding; as it is a word which doth binde that which was broken, and give unto them which mourne in *Sion* beauty for ashes, and the garment of praise for the Spirit of heaviness: as it quencheth all the fiery darts, and answereth all the bloody reasonings of Satan against the soul, as it is a staffe which giveth comfort, and substance in the very vallis of the shadow of death. The shadow of death is an usual expression in the Scripture for all feares, terrors, affrightments, or any dreadfull calamities either of soul or body. The whole misery of our naturall condition is thereby signified, *Luk. 1. 79.* Many wayes doth the Prophet *David* set forth the extremities he had been driven unto, My bones are vexed, and dried like a potsherd, and turned into the drought of Summer; my couch swimmeth with tears, mine eye is consumed and waxen old with griefe. I am powred out like water, all my bones are out of joint, my heart is like melted wax in the midst of my bowels. Thine arrowes stick fast in me, thine hand presseth me sore, there is no soundnesse in my flesh, my wounds stink and are corrupt, I am feeble and sore broken, I have roared by reason of the disquietnesse of my heart. Innumerable evils compasse me about, I am not able to look up. Fearfulnesse and trembling are come upon me, and horror hath overwhelmed me. My soule is among Lions, I lie amongst them that are set on fire. The waters are come in unto my soule. I sinke in deep mire; the floods overflow me, &c. These all, and the like are comprehended in that one word, *The shadow of death.* And in that, it was onely the Word, and the Spirit of God which did support him; *This is my comfort*

VERSE 2.

Isa. 61. 1, 3.

Psal. 123. 4.

Psa. 119. 50. 92.

VERSE 2.

*in my affliction, saith he, for thy Word hath quickened me. When my afflictions had brought me to the very brinke and darknesse of the grave, thy Word revived me again, and made me flourish. Unlesse thy Law had bene my delights, I should have perished in mine affliction. Now then, when I see a man upon whom so many heavy pressures doe meete, the weight of sinne, the weight of Gods heavy displeasure, the weight of a wounded Spirit, the weight of a decayed body, the weight of scorn and temptation from Satan and the World, in the midst of all this nor to turne unto lying vanities, nor to consult with flesh and blood, nor to relie on the wisdome or helpe of man, but to leane only upon this word, to trust in it at all times, and to cast all his expectations upon it, to make it his onely Rod and Staffe to comfort him in such sore extremities, how can I but confesse that this Word is indeed *Virga virtutis*, a Rod of strength?*

2 Chron. 3 2. 8.

Matth. 4. 4.

1 Tim. 4. 5.

Lastly, the Gospel of Christ is a Rod of strength in sanctifying and blessing of our Temporal things. As it is *Baculus Panis*, A staffe of bread; *Man liveth not by bread alone, but by the Word which proceedeth out of Gods mouth*; not by the creature, but by the blessing which prepareth the creature for our use. Now it is the Word of God, namely his promises in Christ of things concerning this life as well as that which is to come, that doth sanctifie the creatures of God to those who with thankfulness receive them. The fall of man brought a pollution upon the creatures, a curse upon the stone and timber of a mans house, a snare upon his table, a poison and bitterness upon his meat, distractions and terrors upon his bed, emptinesse and vexation upon all his estate; which cleaves as fast thereunto as blacknesse to the skinne of an Ethiopian, or sinne to the soule of man. For all the creatures of God are by sinne mischievously converted into the instruments and provisions of lust. The Sunne, and all

Rom. 13. 14.

1 John 2. 16.

The Power of the Gospel.

145

VERSE 2.

all the glorious lights of nature but instruments to serve the pride, covetousnesse, adultery, vanity of a lustful eye. All the delicacies which the earth, air or Sea can afford, but materials to feed the luxurie and intemperance of a lustful body. All the honours and promotions of the world but fuel to satisfie the thoughtinesse and ambition of a lustful heart. That word then which can fetch out this leprosie from the creatures, and put life, strength, and comfort into them againe, must needs be *Virga virtutis, a Rod of strength.*

Secondly, the Gospel and Spirit of Christ is a rod of strength, in regard of his and his Churches enemies. Able both to repel, and to revenge all their injuries; to disappoint the ends and machinations of Satan, to triumph and get above the persecutions of men, to get a treasure which no malice nor fury of the enemy can take away, a noblenesse of minde which no insultation of the adversary can abate, a security of condition, and calmnesse of spirit, which no worldly tempests can any more extinguish, than the darknesse of a cloud or the boisterousnesse of a wind can blot out the lustre, or perturb the order of celestial bodies; a heavenly wisdom able to prevaile against the gates of hell, and to stop the mouthes of every gain-sayer. The Word hath ever a *Readinesse to revenge disobedience*, as the Apostle speaks; it hardens the faces of men, and armes them, that they may breake all those who fall upon them.

This power of the Word towards wicked men, sheweth it selfe in many particulars: First, in a mighty work of *Conviction*. The Spirit was therefore sent into the world to convince it by the ministry of the Gospel, which one word convinceth the ground of the whole strength heres spoken of; for all which the word bringeth to passe, is doth it by the conviction of the Spirit. This Conviction is twofold: A *Conviction unto powder*, whereby the hearts of men are wonderfully over-

2 Cor. 10. 6
Jer. 1. 8, 9
Jer. 6. 27
Ezek. 3. 8, 9
Matth. 21. 44.

L

ruled

VERSE 2.

ruled by that invincible evidence of the Spirit of truth, to feel and acknowledge their woful condition by reason of sinne so long as they continue in unbeliefe, to take unto themselves the iust shame and confusion of face which belongs unto them; to give unto God the glory of his righteous and iust severity if hee should destroy them; and hereupon to be secondly by the terror of the Lord perswaded to count worthy of all acceptation any deliverance out of that estate which shall be rendred unto them: To admire, adore, and greedily embrace any termes of peace and reconciliation which shall be offered them. To submit unto the righteousness, and with all willing and meek affection to bend the heart to the Scepter of Christ, and to whatsoever forme of judicature and spiritual government he shall please to erect therein. And this magnifies the strength of this Rod of Christs Kingdome, that it maketh men yeeld upon any termes: when we see the little stone grow into a mighty mountaine, and eat into all the Kingdomes of the world; when wee see Emperours and Princes submit their necks and scepters to a doctrine at first every where spoken against, and that upon the words of a few despicable persons; and that such a doctrine too, as is diametrically contrary to the natural constitution of the hearts of men, and teacheth nothing but selfe-denial; and this for hope of reward from one whom they never saw, and whom if they had seen, they should have found by a natural eye no beauty in him for which he should be desired; and this reward too, what-ever it be, deferred for a long time, and in the interim no ground of assurance to expect it, but onely faith in himselfe that promiseth it, and in the meane time a world of afflictions for his names sake; How can we thinke that a world of wise and of great men, should give care most willingly unto such termes as these, if there were not a demonstrative and constraining evidence of truth and goodnesse therein.

The Power of the Gospel.

147

VERSE 2

in, able to stop the mouths, and to answer the objections of all gain-sayers? Of this point I have spoken more copiously upon another Scripture. Secondly, there is a *Conviction unto condemnation* of those who stand out against this saving power of the Gospel and Spirit of grace, driving them from all their strong holds, and constraining them perforce to acknowledge the truth which they do not love. Thus wee find our Saviour disputing with the Jewes, till no man was able to answer him a word; and as hee did so himselfe, so he promised that his messengers should do so too, *I will give you a mouth and wisdom, which all your adversaries shall not be able to gain-say, nor resist*: And this promise wee finde made good; the enemies of Steven were not able to resist the Spirit by which hee spake: And Apollos mightily convinced the Jewes, shewing by the Scriptures that Jesus was Christ: And this the Apostle numb'reth amongst the qualifications of a Bishop, that he should be able by sound doctrine to convince the gain-sayers, and to stop the mouthes of those unruly deceivers, whose business is to subvert men; for this is the excellent vertue of Gods Word, that it *concludeth or shutteth men in*, and leaveth not any gap or evasion of corrupted reason unanswered, or unprevented. Thus wee finde how the Prophets in their ministry did still drive the Jewes from their shifts, and presse them with *Dilemma's*, the inconveniences whereof, they could on no side escape: either there must be a fault in you, or else in God who rebuketh you; but now *what iniquity*, saith the Lord, *have your fathers found in me, that they are gone far from mee? Have I been a Wildernesse unto Israel, or a land of darknesse? Wherefore say my people, We are lords, we will come no more unto thee? O my people, what have I done unto thee, and wherein have I wearied thee? testifie against mee. I raised up of your sons for Prophets, and of your young men for Nazarites; Is it not even thus, O yee children of*

Matth. 22. 46

Luke 21. 29

Acts 6. 10.

Act. 18. 28

Tit. 1. 9, 11

Gal. 3. 12

Jer. 2. 5. 31

Mic. 6. 3. 4

Amos 2. 11

VERSE 2.

Jer. 1. 7.

Je. 9. 7.

Isa. 5. 3.

John 18. 6.

*Quid iudicatu-
rus faciet, qui
iudicandus hoc
fecit? quid reg-
naturus poterit,
qui moriturus
hoc potuit? Aug.*

John 14. 12

Tit. 3. 11.

Wild. 17. 11, 16

Luk. 19. 22.

Israel? Here the Scripture useth that figure which is cal-
led by the Rhetoritians *Communicatio*, a debating and
deliberation with the adverse party, an evidencing of a
cause so cleerly, as that at last a man can challenge the
adversary himself to make such a determination, as
himself shall in reason judge the merits of the cause to
require: *How shall I pardon thee for this? and how shall I
do for the daughters of my people?* Set me in a way, de-
termine the controversie your selves, and I will stand to
the issue which your own consciences shall make. *O in-
habitants of Jerusalem, and men of Judah, judge I pray
you between me and my Vineyard:* that is, doe you your
selves undertake the deciding of your own cause. When
a band of armed men came against Christ to attach him,
and at the pronouncing but of two words, *I am he*, fell
all downe backward to the earth; we must needs con-
fesse that there was some mightie power and evidence of
Majesty in him that uttered them: what thinke wee,
can he doe when he reigneth and judgeth the world,
who did let out so much power when he was to die and
to be judged by the world? Now Christ reigneth and
judgeth the world by his Word, and that more mightily
after his ascending up on high, and therefore he promi-
seth his Apostles that they should doe greater workes
than himself had done. When I shall see a man armed
with scorne against Christ in his Word, standing proud-
ly upon the defence of his own wayes by his owne wise-
dome, and wraping up himselfe in the mud of his owne
carnal reasonings; by a few *postulata*, and deductions
from Gods Word, to be enforced to stoppe his owne
mouth, to be condemned by his own witnesse, to be-
tray his own succors, and to be shut up in a prison
without barres; when I shall force such a man by the
mighty penetration and invincible evidence of Gods
Word, to see in his owne conscience a hand subscribing
to the truth which condemnes him, and belying all those
delusions

deceptions which he had fram'd to deceive himselfe withal; who can deny but that the rod of Gods mouth is indeed *Virga virtutis*, a rod of strength, an iron rod, able to deale with all humane reasonings, as a hammer with a potsherd, which though to the hand of a man it may feele as hard as a rocke, yet is too brittle to endure the blow of an iron rod? strange it is to observe how boldly men venture on sinnes under the names of custome, or fashions, or some other pretences of corrupted reason, contrary to the cleer and literal evidence of holy Scriptures (* the most immediate and grammatical sense whereof, is ever soundest, where there doth not some apparant and unavoidable error in doctrine, or mischief in manners, follow thereupon.) Men will justifie the cause of the wicked for reward, and by dexterity of wit put a better colour upon a worser businesse (as hath been observed of *Protagoras* and *Carneades*) and yet the Lord saith expressely, *Thou shalt not speake in a cause to wrest judgements, thou shalt keep thee farre from a false matter;* for God (whom thou oughtest to imitate) will not justifie the wicked. Men will follow the sinful fashions of the world, in strange apparel, in prodigious haire, in lustful and unprofitable expence of that pretious moment of time, upon the abuse of right improvement whereof dependeth the severall issues of their eternall condition: though the Lord say expressely, *Be not conformed to this world;* they that walke according to the course of the world, walke according to the Prince of the power of the ayre. The Lord will punish all such as are clothed with strange apparel, who take up the fashions of idolaters, or other nations, or other sexes (as that place is differently expounded.) ^a Nature it selfe teacheth that it is a shame for a man to weare long haire; nay Nature it selfe taught that honest Heathen to stand at defiance with the sinnes of his age, and not comply with the course of the world, upon that slight apology, as if the

VER. 25. 2

Jer. 19. 11

* *Aquin. pars 2. qu. 1. q. 10. ad primum.*

Alphons. 2 Castro contra Hares. lib.

1. Cap. 3. Glass. Philolog. Sacra.

1. 2. p. 338.

Hepher. l. 5. S. 59

Τὸν ἡὺν λόγον καὶ ἡὺν ποιεῖν.

A. Gell.

Esay 5. 23

Exod. 23. 27

Rom. 12. 2

Ephes. 2. 2

Zeph. 1. 8

Hieron.

Theodoret.

Ribera.

^a *1 Cor. 11. 14*

VERSE 2.

^b Nec virtutem
aut vitium secu-
lum vocavit.

Tacit. in Agric.
Homicidium
cum admittunt
singuli crimen
est. virtus voca-
tur cum publice
geritur. Cyp.

l. 2. epist. 2.
^c 1 Cor. 6. 9
Esay 41. 21
Esay 28. 17

2 Cor. 2. 16

Levit. 16. 36

1 Kin. 22. 27, 28
Jer. 37. 16, 17
Acts 24. 25

^b commonnesse had taken away the illnesse; and that which committed by one would have bin a sin; being imitated after by a multitude, were but a fashion. To conclude this particular: The Apostle is peremptory, ^c Neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor effeminate, nor covetous, nor thieves, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the Kingdome of God: and the consciences of many men, who yet will never yeild to the conclusion, cannot chuse but subsume, as the Apostle goes on, *such are some of we, nay, and such we will be too.* But now if we should bespeake these men in the word of the Prophet, *Produce your cause, saith the Lord, bring forth your strong reasons, saith the King of Jacob;* they should find at the last their reasons to be like themselves, vanity, and lighter than nothing, that the word of the Lord will at last prevaile, and sweep away all their refuge of lyes.

Secondly the power of the Word towards wicked men is scene in *Affrighting of them*; there is a spirit of bondage, and a favour of death, as well as a spirit of life, and liberty which goeth along with the Word. Guilt is an inseparable consequent of sin, and feare of the manifestation of guilt: If the heart be once convinced of this, it will presently faint and tremble, even at the shaking of a leafe, at the wagging of a mans own conscience; how much more at the voice of the Lord, which shaketh mountaines, and maketh the strong foundations of the earth to tremble? If I should see a prisoner at the barre passe sentence upon his judge; and the judge thereupon surpris'd with trembling, and forced to subscribe and acknowledge the doome, I could not but stand amaz'd at so inverted a proceeding, yet in the Scripture we finde presidents for it, *Michaiiah*, a prisoner, pronouncing death unto *Ahab*, a King; *Jeremie*, a prisoner, pronouncing captivity unto *Zedekiah*, a King: *Paul* in his chain preaching of judgement unto *Felix* in his robes, and making his own judg to tremble. It is not for

want

The Power of the Gospel.

151

want of strength in the Word, or because there is stoutnesse in the hearts of men to stand out against it, that all the wicked of the world do not tremble at it, but meerly their ignorance of the power and evidence therof. The Divels are stronger and more stubborne creatures than any man can be, yet because of their full illumination, and that invincible conviction of their consciences from the power of the Word, they believe and tremble at it. Though men were as hard as rocks, the Word is a hammer which can breake them; though as sharpe as thornes and briars, the Word is a fire which can devoure and torment them; though as strong as kingdomes and nations, the Word is able to root them up, and to pull them down; though as fierce as Dragons and Lions, the Word is able to trample upon them, and to chaine them up.

Thirdly, the power of the Word is seene towards wicked men, in that it doth judge them. *Sonne of man, wilt thou judge, wilt thou judge the bloodie Citie, saith the Lord? yea, thou shalt shew them their abominations.* To note, that when wicked men are made to see their filthinesse in the Word, they have thereby the wrath of God, as it were seal'd upon them. *He that rejecteth mee, the Word which I have spoken the same shall judge him at the last day,* saith our Saviour: And if all prophecie, saith the Apostle, and there come in one that believeth not, or one unlearned, *he is convinced of all, he is judged of all,* and the secrets of his heart are made manifest. Nay, the Word doth in some sort execute death and judgement upon wicked men. Therefore it is said, that the Lord would *smite the earth with the rod of his mouth, and with the breath of his lips would slay the wicked:* And againe, *I have bewed them by the Prophets, I have slaine them by the Word of my mouth.* And therefore the Word of the Lord is called fury by the Prophet, to note, that when wrath and fury is powred out upon a land, they are the effects of Gods Word. If a pestilence devoure a city.

L 4

and

VER. 2

James 2. 19

Jer. 23. 29

Jer. 5. 14

Ezek. 1. 6

Deut. 33. 2

Jer. 1. 10

Ps. 91. 13

Ezek. 22. 2

John 12. 48

1 Cor. 14. 24

Esaiah 11. 8

Hos. 6. 5

Jer. 6. 11

V
E R S E 27

Mich. 6. 9

John 9. 39

Luke 9. 56

and a sword come and gleane after it, it is the Word only which slayes, they are but the instruments, which are as it were actuated and applyed by the Word of God to their severall services. Therefore it is that the Prophet saith, that wise men see the voice of God, and heare his rod. A rod is properly to be seene, and a voice to be heard, but here is a transposition, and as it were, a communication of properties between the Word of God, and his punishments; to note, that towards wicked men there is a judging and tormenting vertue in the Word; For judgement, saith our Saviour, am I come into this world, that they which see not might see, and that they which see might be made blinde. If it be here objected, that Christ saith of himselfe, *The Sonne of man is not come to destroy mens lives, but to save them; and that he came not to condemn the world, but that the world through him might be saved*; I answer, that there are two events of Christs coming, and by consequence of his Gospel. The one principal, and by him intended; the other accidental and occasional, growing out of the ill disposition of the subject unto whom he was sent. The maine and essentiall businesse of the Gospel is to declare salvation, and to set open unto men a doore of escape from the wrath to come; but when men wilfully stand out, and neglect so great salvation, then secondarily doth Christ prove unto those men a stone of offence, and the Gospel a savour of death unto death; as that potion which was intended for a cure by the Physician, may upon occasion of the indisposednesse of the body, and stubborne radiation of the disease, hasten a mans end sooner than the disease it selfe would have done: So that to the wicked the Word of God is a two-edged sword indeed, an edge in the Law, and an edge in the Gospel; they are on every side beset with condemnation; if they goe to the Law, that cannot save them, because they have broken it; if they go to the Gospel, that will not save them

The Power of the Gospel.

153

them, because they have contemned it.

Fourthly, the Power of the Word towards wicked men is seen in this, that it doth ripen their sins, and make them so much the more sinful, and so much the sooner fill up their measure. *If I had not come, saith Christ, and spoken unto them, they had had no sinne; but now they have no cloake for their finnes.* A tree which is fastned unto a wall, in which the heat of the Sunne is more permanent and united, will bring forth ripe fruit before the ordinary season: so a people upon whom the light of the Gospel hath constantly shined, and which doth often drinke in the raine which falleth upon it, must needs bring forth *Summer-fruit*, finnes speedily ripe, and therefore be so much the nearer unto cursing. There is but a yeere between such a tree and the fire: we shall never finde that the finnes of Israel, and of Judah (for which they were at any time plagued with captivity) were so long in ripening as the finnes of the Canaanites, upon whom there did no light shine. The Land had rest sometimes fortie yeeres, and sometimes fourescore yeeres, but we never finde that they were suffered to provoke the Lord to his face foure hundred yeeres together: We finde, when to Ninive he sent a Prophet to reveale unto them the guilt and merit of their finnes, he then set them a very short time, in which they should either forsake or ripen them, *Yet forty dayes, and Ninive shall be destroyed.*

Fifthly, the Power of the Word towards wicked men is seene even in the rage and madnesse which it excites in them. It is a signe that a man hath to do with a strong enemy, when he buckleth on all his harnesse, and calleth together all his strength for opposition. When I see a river without any sensible noise or motion, I am ready to esteeme it a standing poole, but when I looke further and there observe what huge engines it carrieth about, and what weighty bodies it rolleth before it, I then be-

leive

VERSE 2.

John 15. 22

Heb. 6. 8

Amos 8. 1

Luke 13. 8, 9

VERSE 2.

Luke 4. 28
 Luke 6. 11
 Acts 5. 17
 Acts 13. 45
 Acts 7. 54
 John 8. 59
 Acts 6. 10. 11
 Acts 7. 57. 58

leave a strength in it, which I did not see: so when I see the Word of Christ rouse up the rage and lusts of men, and force them to set up against it strong holds, and high imaginations, even the wisdom and strength of the gates of hell to keep it out, I must needs then conclude that it is indeed *Virga virtutis, A Rod of strength*. The most calme and devout hypocrites in the world have by the power of his word beene put out of their demure temper, and mightily transported with outrage and bitterness against the majesty thereof. One time filled with wrath; another time filled with madness; another time filled with envie and indignation, another time filled with contradiction and blasphemie; another time cut to the heart, and like reprobates in hell, gnashing with their teeth. Such a searching power, and such an extreme contrarietie there is in the Gospel to the lusts of men, that if it doe not subdue, it will wonderfully swell them up, till it distemper even the grave, prudent men of the world with those brutish and uncomely affections of rage and fury, and drive disputers from their arguments unto stones. Sin cannot endure to be disquieted, much lesse to be shut in and compassed with the curses of Gods Word. Therefore as an hunted beast, in an extremity of distress will turne back, and put to its utmost strength to be revenged on the pursuers, and to save its life: so wicked men to save their lusts, will let out all their rage, and open all their sluices of pride and malice to withstand that holy truth which doth so closely pursue them. Thus as beggerly masters deale with their servants, or bankrupts with their creditors, when they should pay them their money (which they are unable to doe) they then picke quarrels, and create pretences to withhold it: or as froward men in suits of Law, when their cause failes, endeavour to piece it out with rage and passion; so do wicked men deale with God in his Word, when they should pay him that service which he there-

in requireth of them, and which they have neither will nor power to doe, when he produceth his cause, and entrench into controversie with them, convincing them in the court of their own consciences, so that they are not able to stand out, they have then no other refuge left, but either to submit (which they will in no wise endure) or to flie into the face of the word and withstand it with malice when they cannot with reason. Till men can be perswaded to lay apart all filthinesse and superfluitie of naughtinesse, they will never receive the engrafted word with meeknesse. For till then it is a binding word, which sealeth their guilt and condemnation upon them.

Lastly, the mighty power of the word towards wicked men is seene in *altering them*: in their semiperswasions and semiconversions unto goodnesse, in restraining them from those lusts which they dearely love, and in forcing them to those external conformities which have no inward principles to support them. The humiliation of *Ahab*, the observation of *Herod*, the incomplete perswasion of *Agrippa*, the forced obedience and flatteries of the dissembling Jewes, the essays and offers of hypocrites towards religion, the velleities and hankerings of unresolved wills after Christ, are notable evidences of the Power and Majestie which is in the Gospel. If I should see a mil-stone in the aire not falling constantly and swiftly downe, but swag, and waver, and floate about in a kinde of unresolved motion, as if it were in a deliberation which way to goe, one while yeilding to its owne weight, another while lingering, and by fits attempting to ascend; how could I sufficiently wonder at that secret vertue, and those strange impressions which did retardate the natural descent of so weighty a body? so when I see men, who still retaine the principles of their owne corrupt nature, which carry them with as strong an impulsion to sinne and hell, as a mil-stone is moved unto its Center, hanker notwithstanding after goodnesse,

VERSE 2.

Jam. 1. 21
Mat 18. 18
Mark. 16. 16

1 Kings 23. 27
Mar. c 6. 20
Acts 26. 28
Psal. 78. 34. 36
Luke 9. 57. 61.

VERSE 2.

nesse, and when they yeild unto their lusts, do it not without much hesitancy and conflict of a natural conscience, I must needs acknowledge a mightie strength in that word which setteth bounds to the raging of so proud a sea.

From hence then the Messengers of Christ who are entrusted with the dispensation of this *Rod of strength*, may be instructed how to behave themselves in that ministry. Few men will lose any thing of that power which is given them, for every thing in its kinde doth affect power. Now Christ hath committed unto us the custody of his owne power, and therefore we ought to manage it as a *word of power*, able alone by it selfe without the contemperations of humane fancies, or the superstruction of humane opinions to work mightily to the Salvation of those that believe, and to the conviction of gaine-sayers. Our Commission is to charge even the great men of the world. It is true, the Ministers of the Gospel are *Servants to the Church*; In *compassion* to pity the diseases, the infirmities, the temptations of Gods people: in *Ministrie*, to assist them with all needfull supplies of comfort, or instruction, or exhortation in righteousness; in *humilitie*, to waite upon men of lowest degree, and to condescend unto men of weakest capacitie. And thus the very Angels in heaven are servants to the Church of Christ. But yet we are servants onely for the Churches good, to serve their soules, not to serve their humours. And therefore we are such servants as may command too. *These things command and teach, Let no man despise thy youth. And againe, These things speake, and exhort, and rebuke with all authority; Let no man despise thee.* No ministers are more despicable than those who by ignorance, or flattery, or any base and ambitious affections betray the power and majesticall simplicity of the Gospel of Christ. When we deliver Gods message we must not then be the servants of men; If I yet please men,

1 Tim. 6. 17

2 Cor. 4. 5

1 Tim. 4. 11, 12

Tit. 2. 15

1 Cor. 7. 23

The Power of the Gospel.

157

men, I were not then the servant of Christ, saith the Apostle. To captivate the truth of God unto the humours of men, and to make the Spirit of Christ in his Gospel to bend, comply and complement with humane lusts, is with *Jonah* to play the runnagates from our office, and to prostrate the Scepter of Christ unto the insultation of men. There is a wonderful majesty and authority in the word when it is set on with Christs Spirit. He taught men *ὡς Θεολογίας*, as one who had power and authority, or privilege to speake, as one that cared not for the persons of men; and therefore where-ever his spirit is, there will this power and liberty of Christ appeare, for he hath given it to his ministers, that they may commend themselves in the consciences of those that heare them, that they may harden their faces against the pride and scorne of men, that they may goe out in armies against the enemies of his Kingdome, that they may speake boldly as they ought to speake, that they may not suffer his word to be bound, or his Spirit to be straitened by the humors of men.

VERSE 2.

Mat. 7. 29
Mat. 22. 16
1 Cor. 2. 4
2 Cor. 3. 17
2 Cor. 13. 10
2 Cor. 4. 2
Jer. 1. 6, 7, 8
Ezek. 3. 8, 9
Psal. 110. 3
Eph. 6. 20

Againe, we should all labour to receive the word in the power thereof, and to expose our tender parts unto it. A Cocke is in comparison but a weake Creature, and yet the crowing of a Cocke will cause the trembling of a Lion. What is a Bee to a Beare, or a Mousse to an Elephant? and yet if a Bee fasten his sting in the nose of a Beare, or a Mousse creepe up and gnaw the trunk of an Elephant, how easily do so little Creatures upon such an advantage torment the greatest? Certainly, the proudest of men have some tender part into which a sting may enter. The conscience is as sensible of Gods displeasure, as obnoxious to his wrath, as subject to his word in a Prince as in a beggar. If the word, like *Davids stone*, finde that open and get into it, it is able to sinke the greatest *Goliath*. Therefore we should open our consciences unto that word, and expect his spirit to come

VERSE I.

Jer. 5. 12

come along with it, and receive it as *Josiah* did, with humility and trembling. We should learne to feare the Lord in his word, and when his voice cryeth in the city, to see his name and his power therein. *Will ye not feare me, saith the Lord, will ye not tremble at my presence, who make the sand a bound to the sea.* No Creature so swelling and of it selfe so strong and inroaching as the sea; nothing so small, weake, smoothe, and passable as the sand; and yet the sand (a creature so easily removed, and swept away) decreed to hold in so raging an Element. What in appearance weaker than words spoken by a despised man? and what in the experience of all the world stronger than the raging of an army of lusts? and yet that hath the Lord appointed to tame and subdue these, that men might learne to feare his power.

Psal. 19. 7

2 Pet. 1. 19

Acts. 13. 34

1 Tim. 6. 17

2 Chro. 16. 8, 9

2 Chr. 17. 9, 10

Againe, it should teach us to *Rest upon God in all things*, as being unto us all-sufficient, a sunne, a shield, an exceeding great reward in the truth and promises of his Gospel. The word of God is a *sure thing*, that which a man may cast his whole weight upon, and leane confidently on in any extremity. All the Creatures in the world are full of vanity, uncertainties and disappointments, and then usually do deceive a man most when he most of all relies upon them; and therefore the Apostle chargeth us *not to trust in them*. But the Word of the Lord is an *abiding word*, as being founded upon the Immutability of Gods owne truth; he that maketh it his refuge, relieth on Gods omnipotencie, and hath all the strength of the Almighty engaged to help him. *Asa* was safe while he depended on the Lord in his promises against the hugest host of men that was ever read of; but when he turned aside to collateral aides, he purchased to himselfe nothing but perpetual warres. And this was that which established the throne of *Jehoshaphat*, and caused the feare of the Lord to fall upon the kingdoms of the lands which were round about him, because

cause he honoured the Word of God, and caused it to be taught unto his people. Whensoever Israel and Judah did forget to leane upon Gods Word, and betooke themselves to humane confederacies, to correspondence with Idolatrous people, to facility in superstitious compliances, and the like fleshly counsels, they found them alwaies to be but very lies, like waxen and wooden seats, made specious of purpose to delude ignorant comers; things of so thinne and unfolliid a consistence as were ever broken with the weight of those who did leane upon them. Let us not therefore rest upon our owne wisdom, nor build our hopes or securities upon humane foundations; but let us in all conditions *take hold of Gods Covenant*, of this staffe of his strength, which is able to stay us up in any extremities.

Esaie, 56. 2, 4, 6

Againe, since the Gospel is a word of such soveraigne power, as to strengthen us against all enemies and temptations, to uphold us in all our wayes and callings, to make us strong in the Grace of Christ, (for ever a *Christian mans knowledge of the Word is the measure of his strength and comfort*) we should therefore labour to *acquit our selves with God in his Word*, to hide it in our hearts, and grow rich in the knowledge of it. In heaven our blessednesse shall consist in the knowledge and communion with the Father and with his Sonne Jesus Christ. So that the Gospel and the Spirit, are to us upon earth the preludes and supplies of heaven; for by them onely is this knowledge and communion begun. And that man doth but delude himselfe and lye to the world, who professeth his desire to goe to heaven, and doth not here desire to know so much of God as he is pleased to afford to men on the earth. The Gospel is the *Patent and Charter of a Christian*, all that he hath to shew for his salvation; the *measure* of his wealth and priviledges, all that he hath to boast in, either for this life or another; the *armory of a Christian*, all that he hath to

to

VERSE 2.

Jer. 10. 25

Eph. 4. 17, 20

Rom. 2. 28, 29

Col. 2. 11

Phil. 3. 3

to hold up against the temptations and conflicts of his for enemies; the only *toole* and instrument of a Christian, all that he hath to doe any action of piety, charity, loyalty, or sobriety, withall; the onely *glasse* of a Christian, wherein he may see his owne face, and so learne to deny himselfe; and wherein he may see the face of God in Christ, and so learne to desire and to follow him. So that upon the matter, for any man to be ignorant of the Gospel, is to unchristian himselfe againe, and to degenerate into a heathen. *Powre out thine indignation upon the heathen that know thee not.* Ignorance makes a man a very heathen. *This I say and testifie, saith the Apostle, that you henceforth walke not as other Gentiles walke, in the vanity of their mind:—for you have not so learned Christ.* It is not the title, nor the profession which maketh a man a real Christian, and distinguisheth him from other heathen men, but the *learning of Christ* in his Spirit and Gospel. For as he who was onely outwardly and in the flesh a Jew, might be uncircumcised in his heart: so he who is onely in title and name a Christian, may be a heathen in his heart; and that more fearefully than Sodome and Gomorrah, or Tyre and Sydon, because he hath put from himselfe the Salvation of the Lord, and judged himselfe unworthy of eternal life.

Lastly, if there be indeed such power in the Gospel, we should labour to *bear witness unto the testimony which God giveth of his word in a holy conversation.* It is a reproach cast upon the ordinances of God, when men do in their lives denie that vertue which God testifieth to be in them. Wicked men are said to crucifie Christ againe, to put him to shame, to make God a liar; not that these things can so really be, but because men in their evil lives carry themselves, as if indeed they were so. And in this sense the Gospel may be said to be weake too, because the pride of men holds out against the saving power thereof

The Power of the Gospell.

161

VERSE 2.

thereof. But these men must know that the word returneth not empty unto God, but accomplisheth some work or other, either it ripeneth weeds or Corne. There is thunder and lightening both in the word; if the one breake not a heart, the other will blast it; if it be not humbled by the word, it will certainly be withered, and made fruitlesse. Shall the clay boast it selfe against the fire, because, though it have power to melt waxe, yet it hath not power to melt clay? Is it not one and the same power which hardneth the one and which softneth the other? Is not the word of a sweet savor unto God as well in those that perish as in those that are saved? Certainly there is as wonderful a power in adding another death to him who was dead before (which upon the matter is to kill a dead man) as in multiplying and enlarging life. And the Gospell is to those that perish a *Savor of death unto death* such a word as doth cumulate the damnation, of wicked men, and treasure up wrath upon wrath. If it do not convert, it will certainly harden; if it do not save, it will undoubtedly judg and condemn. The Lord doth never cast away his Gospell: he that gave charge to gather up the broken meat of loaves and fishes that nothing might be lost, will not suffer any crumme of his Spirituall Manna to come to nothing. Yet we find the Lord giveth a charge to his Prophets to preach even there where he foretold them that their words would not be heard. *Thou shalt speake all these words unto them but they will not hearken to thee; thou shalt also call unto them, but they will not answer thee.* Son of Man I send thee to the Children of Israel, to a rebellious Nation, they are impudent Children and stiffe-hearted, Yet thou shalt speak my words unto them, whether they will heare, or whether they will forbear, for they are rebellion it selfe. *They will not hearken unto thee, for they will not hearken unto me.* For all the house of Israel are impudent and heard headed. Certainly when the Lord

Ier. 7. 27.

Ezek 2. 3. 4. 7.

Ezek. 3. 7.

VERSE 2.

EZ. 3. 3. & 2. 10.

Jer. 17. 16. &
28. 6.

Jer. 15. 6.

taketh paines by his Prophets to call those who will not heare, he doth it not in vaine; they shall know at length that a Prophet hath been amongst them. Therefore, as the Apostle saith, that the Gospell is a sweet Saviour even in those that perishi; So we find those messages which have contained nothing but curses against an obstinate people, have yet been as honey for sweetnesse in the mouth of those that preached them. I did eate the roule saith the Prophet, and it was in my mouth as honey for sweetnesse; and yet there was nothing in it written, but lamentations and mourning, and woe. *Jeremy* did not desire the woefull day, but did heartily say Amen to the false Prophets, in their predictions of safety; yet in regard of his ready service unto God, and of that Glory which God would worke out unto himselfe in the punishment of that sinfull people, the word of Prophecie which was committell unto him was the joy and rejoycing of his heart; so that in all respects the Gospell of Christ is a Word of power, and therein we do and must rejoyce.

We observed before that this Rod of strength is both *Sceptrum Majestatis*; and *Pedum pastorale*. Both the Scepter of Christ as he is a king, and his Pastorall staffe as hee is a Bishop. It denoteth the administration of Christs Kingdome, which consisteth in the dispensing of his Gospell, as it is a word of Majesty and of care. So then here are (as I before observed) two observations yet remaining to be noted out of these words, *Virga Virtutis*, the Rod of thy strength.

The first, that the Gospell of Christ accompanied with his Spirit is a word of great Glory and Majesty. For we must ever make these concomitants, We preach the Gospell saith Saint Peter, with the Holy Ghost sent down from Heaven, 1 Pet. 1. 12. And indeed the Spirit is peculiar to the Gospell, and not belonging to the law at all, if we consider it alone by it self, under the relation of a distinct

covenant

The Glory of the Gospell.

163

VERSE 2.

covenant. For though as it proceedeth out of *Sion*, that is, as it is an appendix and additament unto the Gospell, it tends unto liberty, and so cometh not without the Spirit; yet by it selfe alone it gendreth nothing but bondage. And therefore when the Apostle sheweth the excellency of the Gospell above the Law, he calleth one a Ministration of death and of the letter, the other a Ministration of the Spirit and Life. To shew that properly the Spirit belongeth unto the Gospell of grace. Now then this Spiritual Gospell of Christ is the Scepter of his Kingdom, and therefore as it is *insigne regium*, an ensigne of royalty, it importeth Glory and Majestie. It is a *Gospell full of Glory*. Wee may observe that the very *Typicall prefigurations* of that mercy, which is the sole businesse of the Gospell of Christ, are in the Scriptures honoured with the name of *Glory*. The garments of the Priests, being Types of the Evangelical ^a Righteousnesse of the Saints, were ^b made for glory and beauty. The Tabernacle, which was ordained for an evidence and seale of Gods Evangelical presence with that people, is called by the Prophet David ^{a c} *Tabernacle of honour*, the place which God did use to fill with his own Glory. The Ark of God, which was nothing else but *Evangelium sub velo*, the Gospel under veiles and shadowes, is called by an excellency ^d *The Glory of Israel*, which is the attribute of Christ; ^e *All kings shall see thy Glory*. The Temple at Jerusalem was the place of Gods Rest, ^f *This is my Rest for ever, here will I dwell*. Arise O Lord God into thy resting place, show and the *Arke of thy strength*. It was so called, to note, first the ^g *stability* of Gods Evangelical covenant in Christ, it was not to be changed, nor to be repented of; but to be *sure* and fixed in Christ for ever. His Kingdome, ^h *a Kingdome which was not to be shaken*, his Priesthood ^{a i} *a Priesthood which was not to passe away*, his teaching ^k *a teaching which was to continue to the worlds end*. And secondly, to note the *de-*

Mic. 4. 2.
Rom. 8. 3.
Iam. 1. 25.
Gal. 4. 24.
2 Cor. 3. 6. 7

^a Revel. 6. 11, 17.
14 19. 8
^b Exod. 28. 2
40.
^c Psal. 26. 8.
Exod. 40. 34.

^d 1 Sam 4. 22
^e Esay. 62. 2.
^f Psal. 132. 8. 14
2 Chro. 6. 41.

^g Esay. 55. 3. 54
9. 10.
Heb. 8. 6. 13.

^h Heb. 12. 23.
ⁱ Heb 7. 24.
^k March 28 20
1 Matth. 3. 17.

M 2

light

VERSE 2.

Jer. 9. 24.
Mich. 7. 18.
m Isay 11. 10.
Jer. 17. 12.
Esay. 60. 7.
Esay. c 4. 11.
1 King 8. 11.

n Mal. 4. 2.

o Hag. 2. 7. 9

p Heb. 9. 13. 14.

q Esay 40. 5.
Esay 66. 18.
Luk. 2. 32.
r Col. 1. 27.
James. 2. 8.
2 Cor. 3. 8. 9.
1 Thes. 2. 12.

(1 Pet. 1. 12

light of God in Christ, and in the mercy which through him was unto the world revealed; Therein the Lord resteth and repositeth himselfe, as in the crown and accomplishment of all his workes. And this Temple is called a glorious rest, a glorious high Throne, a house of Glory, of beauty and of holiness. It is said at the first Dedication thereof; that the *Glory of the Lord filled it*. It was not the gold or silver (wherewith before that Dedication it was beautified) wherein the glory thereof did consist, but in the evidence of Gods presence; which at that time was but a cloud; whereas the true glory thereof himselfe was a *Shew* as the Prophet calls him. And with this did the Lord fill the second Temple, which for this cause is said to have been more glorious than the former, though in the magnificence of the structure far inferior. Now then as the Apostle in a case of just alike proportion, useth a *πλεον μᾶλλον*, a terme of excesse, when he speaketh of the substance in comparison of the Type: If the blood of bulls and goats did sanctifie to the purifying of the flesh, *How much more* shall the blood of Christ? So may we in this case. If the Types of Evangelicall things were thus glorious, how much more glorious must the Gospell it selfe needs be? And therefore, as I before observed in other things, so in this is it true likewise, that Christ and his Gospell have the same attribute of Glory frequently given unto them. *Christ is called the Glory of the Lord, and of his people Israel: And the Gospell a Glorious Mystery, a Royall Law, Ministration of Glory; Nay, Glory it selfe*, for so I understand that place of the Apostle, that ye would walke worthy of God, who hath called you unto his Kingdome and Glory, that is, unto the knowledge of his Gospell, for of that in all the antecedent parts and in the verse immediately following doth the Apostle speak. A *Glory* which draweth the study and amazement of the most glorious creatures of God unto it.

The Glorie of the Gospell.

164

V. 1. 1. 2.

To consider this point more particularly of the glory and Majestic of the Gospell of Christ appeareth principally in foure things: in the *Author* of it: in the *Pro mulgation* and publishing of it: in the *Manner* which it containes: and in the *Ends* purposes for which it serves.

First, in the *Author* of it. Many things of small worth have yett grown famous by the Authors of them, and like the unprofitable children of renowned Progenitors, hold their estimation and nobilitie from the parents which begeth them. And yett from men who are unclean; there will ever descend some uncleannes upon the workes which they doe. But the Gospell is therefore indeed a glorious Gospell, because it is the Gospell of the blessed God. There is glory in all the workes of God, because they are his, for it is impossible that so great a workman should ever put his hand to an ignoble worke: And therefore the Prophet David useth his glory and his handy worke promisedously for the same thing; *The heavens declare the glory of God, and the firmament sheweth his handy worke*: to note that there is an evidence of glory in any thing which hee put his hand unto. And yett the Prophet there sheweth that there is more glory in the law of his mouth, than in the workes of his hands. The Lord is better known by Sion, and his name greater in Israel, than in all the world besides: the more God doth communicate himselfe unto any of his workes, the more glorious is it. Now there is nothing wherein God hath so much put himselfe, wherein he may be so fully known, communicated with, depended upon, and praised, as in his Gospell. This is a glasse in which the blessed Angels doe see and admire that unsearchable riches of his mercy to the Church, which they had not by their own observation found out from the immediate view of his glorious presence. In the Creatures we have him a God of power and wisdom, working wondrous things in number,

and

M 3

weight

VERSE 2

weight, and measure; by the secret vigour of his providence upholding that being which he gave them; and ordering them to those glorious ends for which he gave it. In the law we have him a God of vengeance, and of recompence; in the publication thereof threatening, and in the execution thereof inflicting wrath upon those that transgressed it. But in the Gospel, we have him a God of bountie and endlesse compassion, humbling himselfe that he might be mercifull to his enemies, that he might himselfe beare the punishment of those injuries which had beene done unto himselfe, that hee might not offer onely but beseech his owne prisoners to bee pardoned and reconciled againe. In the Creature he is a God above us, in the Law he is a God against us; onely in the Gospel he is *Immanuel*, a God with us, a God like us, a God for us.

There is nothing doth declare God so much to bee God as his mercy in the Gospel. He is invisible in himselfe, we cannot see him but in his Sonne. Hee is unapproachable in himselfe, wee cannot come unto him but by the Son. Therefore, when hee maketh himselfe knowne in his glory to *Moses*, hee sendeth him not to the Creation, nor to mount Sinai, but putteth him *inse a rocke* (being a resemblance of Christ) and then maketh a proclamation of the Gospel unto him. *Moses* his prayer was, *I beseech thee shew me thy glory*. How doth the Lord grant this prayer? *I will make all my goodnesse to passe before thee*, and then revealeth himselfe unto him almost all by mercy: *The Lord, the Lord God, mercifull and gracious, long-suffering, and abundant in goodnesse and truth, keeping mercy for thousands, forgiving iniquity, transgression and sin*, to note unto us that the glory of God is in nothing so much revealed as in his goodnesse. *Who is a God like unto thee, that pardoneth iniquity, and passeth by the transgression of the remnant of his people?*

Besides, though the Law be indeed from God, as from
the

Exod. 33.18,19

Exod. 34.6,7.

Mich. 7.18.

The Glory of the Gospell.

167

VERSE 2.

the Author of it, so that in that respect there may seeme to bee no difference of excellencie betweene that and the Gospell, yet wee must observe that by the remainders of Creation, though God should not have revealed his Law again unto *Moses* in the mount, much of the Law, and by consequence of God himselfe might have beene discover'd by humane industry, as wee see by notable examples of the Philosophers and grave heathen. But the Gospell is such a mystery as was for ever hidden from the reach and very suspicion of nature, and wholly of divine revelation. *Eye hath not seene, nor eare heard, neither have entred into the hearts of men the things which God hath prepared for them that love him; the Apostle speaketh it of the mystery of the Gospell; noting that it is above the observation, or learning, or comprehension of nature, so much as to suspect it; nay, the naturall inquirie of the Angels themselves could never have discovered it, even unto them it is made knowne by the Church; that is, if it had not beene for the Churches sake that God would reveale so glorious a mysterie, the Angels in heaven must have been for ever ignorant of it. So extremely desperat was the fall of man, that it wanted the infinite and unsearchable wisdom of God himselfe to finde out a remedie against it. If the Lord should have proceeded thus farre in mercy towards man and no farther; Thou art a wretched Creature, and I am a righteous God; yea, so heavie is my wrath, and so wofull thy condition, that I cannot choose but take compassion upon thee; and therefore I will put the matter into thine owne hands; requisite it is that my pittie towards thee should not swallow up the respects to mine owne justice and honour, that my mercy should bee a righteous and a wise mercy. Consult therefore together all ye children of men, and invent a way to reconcile my justice and mercy to one another, set mee in a course to shew you mercy, without parting from mine*

Rom. 16. 25.
1 Cor. 2. 7, 9.

Ephes. 3. 9. 10

VERSE 17

own right and denying the righteous demands of mine offended justice, and I will promise you to oblige it; I say, if the mercy of the Lord should have confin'd it selfe within these bounds, and referred the method of our redemption unto humane discoverie; we should for ever have continued in a desperate estate, everlastingly unable to conceive, or so much as in fancy to frame unto our selves a way of escape. As the Creatures before their being could have no thought or notion of their being educted out of that nothing which they were before. So man fallen could not have the smallest conjecture or suspicion of any feasible way to deliver himselfe out of that misery into which he fell. If all the learning in the world were gathered into one man, and that man should imploy all his time and studie to frame unto himselfe the notions of a sixth or seventh sense, which yet are expressly fashioned amongst those infinite *Idea's* of Gods power and omniscience, as these five which are already created, he would be as totally ignorant of the conclusion he sought at last as hee was at first. For all humane knowledge of naturall things is wrought by a reflection upon those Phantasmes or *Ideas*, which are impressions made from those senses wee already use, and are indeed nothing else but a kinde of notional existence of things in the memory of man, wrought by an externall and sensible preception of that reall existence which they have in themselves. And yet in this case a sixth or a seventh sense would agree in *genere proximo*, and so have some kinde of Cognation with those wee already enjoy. But a new Covenant, a new life, a new faith, a new salvation are things *totò genere*, beyond the straine and sphere of nature, That two should become one, and yet remaine two still, as God and Man doe in one Christ, that hee who maketh, should bee One with the thing which himselfe, hath made; that hee who is above all should humble himselfe, that he who

filleth

The Glorie of the Gospell.

169

VERSES

All men should emptye himselfe; that hee who bleſſeth
 all should be himselfe a curse; that hee who ruleth all
 should be himselfe a servant, that he who was the prince
 of life, and by whom all things in the world doe consist,
 should himselfe be dissolved and dye, that mercy and
 justice should meet together, and kisse each other, that
 the debt should be payed and yet pardoned, that the fault
 should be punished and yet remitted, that death like
Sampsons Lion should have life and sweetness in it, and
 be used as an instrument to destroy it selfe; these and the
 like Evangelicall truths are mysteries which surpass the
 reach of all the princes of learning in the world. It is to
 be beleevd by a spirituall light, which was not so much
 as possible to a humane reason. We may observe that
 ever person in the Trinitie setteth himselfe to teach the
 mystery of the Gospell. The ^b Father revealeth it unto
 men, *File* and *blond* hath not revealed it unto thee, but my
 Father which is in heaven. It is written in the Prophets;
Thy shall be all taught of God, Every man therefore that
hath heard and learned of the Father, cometh unto me.
 The Son likewise teacheth it unto men, therefore hee is
 called the ^c Angell of Gods Covenant and Counsell, that
 is, the Revealer thereof because unto the world he made
 known that deep Project of his Fathers counsell tou-
 ching the restoring of mankind. ^d No man hath seen God
 at any time, the onely begotten Sonne which is in the bosome
 of the Father, he hath declared him. He onely it is who ope-
 neth the bosome of his Father, that is, who revealeth the
 secret and mysterious counsels, and the tender and compas-
 sionate affections (for the bosome is the seat of secrets and
 of Love) of his Father unto the world. And therefore he
 is said to be a ^e Teacher sent from God, and to be ^f the Lord
 which speaketh from heaven in the ministry of his Gospell;
 and the doctrine which he teacheth is called a ^g heavenly
 doctrine, and a ^h heavenly calling, and a ⁱ high calling, and
 oft by the Apostle to the Hebrewes ^k *is* *tragedia* heavenly
 things

a Non humana
 ratione possibi-
 sed spiritus effi-
 cacia credibile.
 Ambros. Ideo
 certum quia
 impossibile. Tent
 b Mat. 16. 17
 Iohn 6. 45.
 c Officii non na-
 tura vocabula
 quia magnum
 cogitatum pa-
 tris super homi-
 nis restitutione
 annuntiavit se-
 culo Tertuli-
 d Ioh. 1. 18.

e John. 3. 2.
 f Heb. 12. 25.
 g Ioh. 3. 12.
 h Heb. 3. 1.
 i Phi. 3. 14.
 k Heb. 8. 5.
 Heb. 9. 23.

VERSE 32.

1 Iam. 3. 17.

n Ioh. 16. 8. 1

n 1 Cor. 2. 10.
11, 12.

Rom. 8. 2.

p 2 Cor. 3. 8.

q Ephel. 1. 17.

epi 3. 16. 19.

Pet. 1. 11, 12.

1 I Cor. 1. 3.

Mat. 12. 14.

Ioh. 8. 48.

1 I Cor. 1. 24.

u 2 Thel. 2. 13.

14.

Ad. 16. 14.

Deus nos adiu-
uat & ut scia-
mus, & ut ame-
mus. Aug.
Epist. 143.

things, to note that they are not of a naturall or earthly condition, and therefore not within the comprehension of an earthly understanding. It is a wisdom which is from above: The holy Ghost likewise is a Revealer of the Gospell unto the faithfull. He was sent that hee might convince the world not onely of sin, but of righteousness and judgement too, which are Evangelicall things. The Spirit searcheth all things, even the deepe things of God, that is, his unfearchable love, wisdom and counsell in the Gospell. Therefore the Gospell is called • The Law of the spirit of life, and the ministracion of the spirit, and the Revelation of the spirit, and No man can call Iesus Lord but by the holy Spirit, that is, though men may out of externall conformity to the discipline and profession under which they live, with their mouthes acknowledge him to be the Lord; yet their hearts will never tremble, nor willingly submit themselves to his obedience, their conscience will never set to its seale to the spirituall power of Christ over the thoughts, desires, and secrets of the soul, but by the over-ruling direction of the holy Ghost. Nature taught the Pharisees to call him Beelzebub and Samaritan, but it is the Spirit onely which teacheth men to acknowledge him a Lord: Christ is not the power nor the wisdom of God to any, but to those who are called, that is, to those unto whose consciences the Spirit witnesseth the Righteousnesse which is to be found in him. So then the Publication of the Gospell belongeth unto men, but the effectuall teaching and revelation thereof unto the soul is the joynt worke of the holy Trinitie, opening the heart to attend, and perswading the heart to beleve the Gospell, as a thing worthy of all acceptation: Thus the Gospell is a Glorious thing in regard of the Originall and Author of it.

From whence wee may inferre, that what-ever men thinke of the ministerie and dispensation of the Word, yet

The Glory of the Gospel.

171

VERSE 2.

Ioh. 12. 43.

yet undoubtedly the neglect and scorne which is shewed unto it, is done unto Christ himselfe, and that in his glory: he that receiveth not his Word, rejecteth his person; and the sinne of a man against the words which we speake in the name and Authoritie of Christ, and in the dispensation of that Office wherewith he hath entrusted us, is the same with the finnes of those men who despised him in his own person. You will say Christ is in heaven, how can any injuries of ours reach unto him? Surely though he be in heaven, (which is now the Court of his royall residence) yet hee hath to doe upon earth, as one of the chiefe territories of his dominion, and, in the ministrie of his Word, hee speaketh from heaven still. Hee it was, who by his Ambassador Saint Paul, came and preached Peace to the Ephesians, who were as far off. His spirit it was which in the Prophets did testifie of his sufferings and glory. Hee it was who gave manifest proof of his own power, speaking in his Apostles. He then who refuseth to obey the words of a Minister in the execution of his office, when hee forewarneth him of the wrath to come, and doth not discern the Lords voyce therein, but in despite of this ministeriall citation unto the tribunall of Christ, will still persist in the way of his own heart, and as he hath been, so resolveth to continue, a swearing, blasphemous, luxurious, proud, revengefull, and riotous person, thinking it basenesse to mourne for sin, and unnecessary strictnesse to humble himselfe to walke with God; and yet, because all men else doe so, will professe his faith in the Lord Jesus; that man is a notorious liar, yea (as the Apostle speaketh) he maketh God a liar too, in not believing the record which he giveth of his Sonne, which is, that hee should wash away the filth, and purge out the bloud of his people with a spirit of judgment, and a spirit of burning: that he should be as a refiner and purifier of silver, purging his priests, that they might offer unto the Lord an offering in righteousness.

Hee

H b. 12. 25.

Eph. 2. 17.

1 Pcr. 1. 11.

2 Cor. 13. 3.

I Ioh. 5. 10.

Esa. 4. 4.

Mal. 3. 3.

VERSE 7

Ezek. 36. 25.
27.

Psal. 19. 9.

Heb. 9. 14.

Esaï. 32. 15.
Añ 15. 9.

1 Tim. 1. 5.

Hee walketh contrary to that Covenant of mercy, which he professeth to lay hold on; for this is one of the great promises of the Covenant, *I will sprinkle cleane water upon you, and you shall be cleane from all your filthines; and from all your iniquities will I cleanse you. I will put my spirit within you, and cause you to walke in my statutes;* Hee walketh contrary to the quality of that feare of God, which yet he professeth to feel as well as others: For the feare of the Lord is a cleane thing. He walketh contrary to the vertue of that blood, with which notwithstanding hee professeth to bee sprinkled: for the blood of Christ cleanseth not onely the liues, but the very consciences of men from dead works: that is, makes them to inwardly labour for purity of heart, as that they may not be conscious to themselves of any, though the most secret allowed sin. He walketh contrary to the fruitfulness of that grace which alone he professeth to boast in: for the Spirit of grace which is poured from on high, maketh the very wilderness a fruitful field. He walketh contrary to the properties of that faith, by which alone hee hopeth to be saved, For true faith purifieth the heart; and therefore a pure heart and a good conscience are the inseparable companions of an unsained faith. And therefore what ever verball and ceremonious homage hee may tender unto Christ, yet in good earnest he is a shamed of him, and dares not preferre the yoke of Christ before the lusts of the world, or the reproaches of Christ before the treasures of the world.

Why should it be treason to kill a Iudge in his ministerie on the bench? or esteemed an injurie to the state to doe any indignitie to the Ambassadour of a great prince? but because in such relations they are persons publike and representative, *ut eorum bona malaque ad Rempublicam pertineant*? why should the supreme officer of the kingdome write *Teste meipso* in the name and power of his Prince, but because he hath a more immediate

diate

diate representation of his sacred Person, & commission thereunto? Surely the case is the same betweene Christ and his ministers in their holy function. And therefore we finde the expressions promiscuous sometimes *εὐαγγέλιον τοῦ Χριστοῦ*, the Gospell of Christ; and sometimes *εὐαγγέλιον μὲν*, My Gospell; sometimes *τὸ κηρύγμα ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ*, The Preaching of Iesus Christ; and sometimes *τὸ κηρύγμα μὲν*, My Preaching, in the vertue of which *synergie* and copartnership with Christ and with God, as he saveth, so we save as he forgiveth sins, so we forgive them; as he judgeth wicked men, so we judge them; as he beseecheth, so we also beseech, saith the Apostle, that you bee reconciled, and receive not the grace of God in vaine. Wee by his Grace, and he by our Ministry. He therefore that despiseth any conviction out of the Booke of God (and he that obeyeth not doth despise, for the Lord calleth disobedience, rebellion, stubbornnesse and a rejecting of his word, 1 Sam. 15, 22:23.) He that persisteth in any knowne sin, or in the constant omission of any evident duty, fighteth against Christ himself, throweth away his own mercy, stoppeth his eares at the entreaties of the Lord, and commiteth a sin directly against Heaven. And if he so persist, God will make him know that there is flaming fire prepared for those that obey not the Gospell of our Lord Iesus Christ, 2 Thes. 1, 8.

Therefore whensoever we come unto the Word read or preached, we should come with an expectation to heare Christ, himselfe speaking from heaven unto us, and bring such affections of submission and obedience as become his presence. *Let him that hath an eare heare what the Spirit saith unto the Churches. I will heare what God the Lord will speake, for he will speake peace unto his people. Christs sheepe discern his voyce* in the dispensation of the Gospell, and wil not know the voyce of strangers. And this was the honour of the Thessalonians and the men of Berea, that in the preaching of the Word they

VERSE 2:

Rom 15 19
Rom. 2. 26.
Rom. 16. 25.
1 Cor. 2. 4.
1 Cor. 3. 9.
2 Cor. 6. 1.
1am 5. 20
Iohn. 20. 23.
Ezek. 20 4.
2 Cor. 5. 20.

* *ὁ ἰησοῦς ὁ Χριστός*
τὸ εὐαγγέλιον ἀπαγγέλλων
ἐξουσίαν ἔχων, Chrylost.

Revel. 2. 7.
Psal 85. 8.

Iohn. 10. 4. 5.

1 Thes. 2. 13.
Afts. 17. 11.

VERSE 2.

Ier. 13. 15, 17.

Iam: 3. 21.

Mal. 1. 13.

Mal. 3. 13.

πνευματι το
 αγιω αμνι-
 σμετε.

Acts. 7. 51.

Iam. 1. 19, 20.

they did set themselves as in Gods presence, expecting in
 it his authority, and receiving it in his Name. Dareth
 any man to rush with a naked weapon into the presence
 of his Prince, and with scorne to throw back his own
 personall commands into his face againe? And shall we
 dare to come armed with high thoughts, and proud rea-
 sonings, and stubborn resolutions against the Majesty of
 the Lord himselfe, who speaketh from heaven unto us? *Receiue with meeknesse, such the Apostle, the ingrafted
 Word, which is able to save your souls.* The Word doth
 not mingle nor incorporate and by consequence doth
 not change nor save the soul, but when it is received
with meekenesse, that is, when a man cometh with a reso-
 lution to lay down his weapons, to fall down on his face
 and give glory to God; he that is *swift to wrath*, that is,
 to set up stout and fretfull affections against the purity
 and power of the Word, to snuffe against it, and to fall
 backward like petrish children which will not be led,
*will be very slow to heare or to obey it, for the wrath of
 man doth not work the righteousness of God.* A proud
 hearer will be an unprofitable liver. Ever therefore come
 unto the Word with this conclusion; It may be this day
 will God strike me in my master veine, I am an usual
 profaner of his glorious Name: a Name which I should
 feare for the greatnesse and love for the goodnesse, and
 adore for the Holinesse of it; he will peradventure lay
 close to my conscience that guilt which himselfe hath
 declared to be in this great sin; that whatsoever is more
 than yea and nay is sin unto me, and whatsoever is sin,
 is Hell to my soul. I am a vaine person, a companion of
 loose and riotous men; It may be the Lord will urge
 upon my conscience the charge of his own Word, not to
 company with fornicators; to have no fellowship with
 the unfruitfull works of darknesse, not to follow a mul-
 titude to do evill, and that though hand joyne in hand,
 yet sin shall not go unpunished. I am unprofitable,

loose,

The Glory of the Gospel.

175

VERSE 2.

loose, and rotten in my discourse, and he will ply me with his own authority; that for every idle word I must render an account: I am full of oppression & unjust gain, and the Lord wil now urge the instructions of *Nehemiah*, and the restitution of *Zathru* upon me. In these or any other the like cases, if a man can come with *S. Pauls* temper of heart, *not to consult with flesh and blood*, but *Lord what wilt thou have me to do?* Or with the answer of *Samuel*, *Speak Lord, for thy Servant heareth*; or with the resolution of *Cornelius*, *I am here present before God to heare all things that shall be commanded of God*. I am come with a purpose of heart to cleave unto thy Holy Will in all things. Here I am in my sins, strike where thou wilt, cut off which of mine earthly members thou wilt. I will not arme it, I will not extenuate it, I will not dispute with thee, I will not rebell against thee, I will second thee in it, I will praise thee for it; this is to give God the glory of his own Gospel. It is not to part from a little mony towards the maintenance of the Word, or to vouchsafe a little countenance to the dispensers of it (and yet alas how few are there who repay unto the Ministers of the Gospel that double honor which God, and not they, hath given unto them?) but to part from our lusts, and to suffer our old man to be crucified, which giveth honour to the Word. If a man had thousands of *Rammes*, and ten thousand rivers of *Oile*, and would be content to part from them all for Gods worship: If a man had children enow, and in a famine of the word, would buy every Sermon which he heareth with the sacrifice of a son: yet all this would not give glory enough to the ordinance of God. Men naturally love their lusts, the issue of their evill hearts, better than their lands, or the children of their body (if *Herods* son stand in the way of his ambitious security, it were better to be his Hog than his Child. The losse of cattle and fruites, and water, and light, and the first borne of all the land,

Neh. 5. 11, 12.
Luk. 19. 8.
Gal. 1. 16.
Acts. 9. 6.
1 Sam. 3. 10.
Acts. 10. 33.

VERSE 2.

was not enough to make *Pharaoh* let go his sinne, hee will once more rush into the midst of a wonderfull deliverance of Israel, and venture his own and his peoples lives, for but the bondage of his enemies, and the satisfaction of his lust) To do justly then, to love mercy, and to walke humbly before God, to acknowledge his Name in the voice of the Minister; and to put away the treasures of wickednesse out of our hands, this onely is to give God the glory which is due unto his Word, *Mic. 6. 6, 10:*

Secondly, the Gospell is *glorious in the Promulgation* and publishing of it unto the world, And this may appeare, whether we consider the *initiall Promulgation* in Christs own personall preaching, Or the *plenary Revelation* thereof in the sending of the Holy Ghost to those selected vessels who were to cary abroad this treasure unto all the world. For the former, we may note that there was a resemblance of State and Glory observ'd in the preaching of Christ. *A Forerunner sent to prepare his way*, and to beare his sword before him, as a Herald to proclaime his approach, and then at last is revealed the Glory of the Lord. And thus we may observe how he sent his Harbingers *before his face into every City and place whither he himselfe would come:* that so men might prepare themselves, and lift up their everlasting gates against this Prince of Glory should enter in. When one poore ordinary man intendeth to visit another, there is no state nor distance, no ceremonies nor solemnities observ'd; but when a Prince wil communicate himselfe unto any place, there is a publication, and officers sent abroad to give notice thereof, that meet entertainments may be provided. So doth Christ deale with men, he knoweth how unprepared we are to give him a welcome, how soule-bor hearts, how barren our consciences, and therefore he sendeth his Officers before his face with his own Provision, his Graces of humilition, Repentance,

Desire

Esay. 40. 3, 4, 5

Mal. 13. 1, 4, 5.

Luke. 10.

Desire, Love, Hope, Joy, hungering and thirsting after his appearance; and then when he is esteemed worthy of all acceptation, he cometh himselfe.

VERSE 2.

Look upon the more consummate publication of the Gospel (for Christ in his owne Personal preaching is said but *to have begun to teach*) and we shall see that as Princes in the time of their solemne Inauguration doe some special acts of Magnificence and Honour, open Prisons, proclaime Pardons, create Nobles, stamp Coyn, fill Conduits with wine, distribute Donatives and Congiaries to the people: So Christ, to testifie the Glory of his Gospel, did reserve the full publication thereof unto the day of his instalment and solemne re-admission into his Fathers Glory againe. *When he ascended up on high, hee then led captivity captive, and gave gifts unto Men,* namely the Holy Ghost, who is called the *Gift of God*, *Act. 2.38. Act. 8.20. John 4.10.* and in the plural number *Gifts*, as elsewhere he is called *seven Spirits*, *Rev. 1.4.* to note the plenty and variety of Graces which are by him shed abroad upon the Church. Wisdome, and Faith, and Knowledge, and Healings, and Prophesie, and Discerning, and Miracles, and Tongues; *All these work one and the self-same Spirit, dividing to every man severally as he will.* And these gifts were all shed abroad for Evangelical purposes, for the perfecting of the Saints, for the worke of the Ministry, and for the edifying of the Body of Christ. And this Spirit Saint Peter telleth us is a *Spirit of Glory*, and therefore that Gospel, for the more plentifull promulgation whereof hee was shed abroad, must needs be a Gospel of Glory too.

Acts 1.1.
Heb. 2.3.

1 Cor. 12.8, 11.
Eph. 4.12, 13.

1 Pet. 4.14.

And this further appears, because in this more solemne publication of the Gospel, there was much more *Abundance of glorious Light and Grace* shed abroad into the world. The Sonne of Righteousnesse in his estate of humiliation, was much eclipsed with the similitude of sinful flesh, the Communion of our common infirmities,

VERSE 2. the poverty of a low condition, the griet and vexation of the sinnes of men, the overshadowing of his Divine vertue, the form and entertainment of a servant, the burden of the guilt of sinne, the burden of the Law of God, the ignominie of a base death, the agony of a cursed death. But when he ascended up on high, like the Sun in his glory, he then dispelled all these mists, and now sendeth forth those glorious beames of his Gospel and Spirit, which are the *two wings* by which he cometh unto the Churches, and *under which the healing and salvation of the world is treasured*: John Baptist was the last and greatest of all the Prophets who foretold of Christ, a greater had not been born of women, and yet he was lesse then the least in the Kingdom of Heaven; that is, than the least of those upon whom the promise of the Spirit was shed abroad, for the more glorious manifestation of the Kingdome of his Gospel. All the Prophets and the Law prophesied until John: but at the coming of Christ they seemed to be taken away, not by way of abrogation and extinguishment, as the ceremonies, but by way of accessse and excellency, *ut Stella exiliores ad exortum solis*, as the Orator speaks; so saith the Apostle, *Even that which was made glorious, had no glory in this respect, by reason of the glory that excelleth*. Therefore the full Revelation of the Gospel is called an *effusion of the Spirit*, not in dew, but in showers of rain, which multiply into *rivers of living water* (for the raine of the Spirit floweth from heaven as from a Spring) and into *wells of Salvation*, and into a *sea of Knowledge*. Which Attributes note unto us two things: First, the abundance of spiritual grace and knowledge by the Gospel, it should be a River. Secondly, the growth and increase thereof, it should be living water, multiplying and swelling up like the waters of the Sanctuary, till it came to a bottomlesse and unmeasurable sea of eternal life. And to touch that which was before spoken of, very glorious are

Malachi 4.2

Ezek. 47.8, 9

Isai. 35.5, 6, 7

Mat. 4.13, 14

2 Cor. 3.10

Tit. 3.6

Hebrews 6.7

John 7.38

4.14

Isaiah 11.9

Isaiah 44.3

Ezek. 47.3, 4, 5

are the vertues of the Spirit in the Gospel, intimated in this similitude of *living water*. To quench the wrath of God, that otherwise consuming and unextinguishable fury, which devoureth the adversaries with everlasting burnings. To satisfie those desires of the thirsty soul which it self begetteth: for the Spirit is both for medicine and for meat; for medicine, to cure the dull and averse appetites of the soul; and for meat, to satisfie them. The Spirit is both a *Spirit of supplication*, and a *spirit of grace and satisfaction*. A Spirit of Supplication, directing us to pray; and a Spirit of Grace, supplying those requests, and satisfying those desires which himself did dictate. ^a To cleanse, to purifie, to mollifie, to take ^b away the barrenness of our natural hearts. To ^c overflow and communicate it self to others. To ^d withstand and subdue every obstacle that is set up against it. To continue, and to multiply to the end.

By this then we learn the way *how to abound in grace and glory*, and how to be transformed into the Image of Christ. The beam and light of the Sunne is the *vehiculum* of the heat and influence of the Sunne; so the light of the Gospel of Christ, is that which conveyeth the vertue and gracious working of his Spirit upon the soul. And therefore we are to seek those varieties of Grace, which are for meat to satisfie the desires, and for medicine to cure the bruises of the soul, onely upon the banks of the waters of the Sanctuary; that is, in the knowledge of the word of Truth, which is the Gospel of Salvation. The more of this glorious light a man hath, the more proportion of all other graces will he have too. And therefore the Apostle puts the growth of these two together, as contributing a mutual fauour unto one another. *Grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ*. Your grace will enlarge your desires of knowledge, and your knowledge will multiply your degrees of grace. And Saint Paul makes the knowledge

VERSE 2

1saiah. 33. 14
John 4. 10
Ez 47. 12
Zech. 12. 10

^a Ezek. 36. 25
^b Isai. 35. 6, 7
Ezek 11 19
^c Mal. 3. 16.
Gal. 6. 1, 2
^d Gal. 5. 17
Phil. 1. 27

Ezek. 47. 12

2 Pet. 3. 18

VERSE 2

Col. 1. 9, 10

Phil. 3. 8, 14

2 Cor. 3. 18

of the will of God in wisdom, and after a spiritual manner, to be the ground of fruitfulness in every good work, and that again an inducement to increase in knowledge; as in the twisting together of two cords into one rope, they are by Art so ordered that either shall bind and hold in the other. As in the heavens, the inferior Orbs have the measure and proportion of their general motion from the Supreme: So in the motions of grace in the soul, the proportion of all the rest ariseth from the measure of our spiritual and saving light. The more distinctly and thoroughly the spirit of a mans mind is convinced of the necessity, beauty and gloriousness of heavenly things, the more strong impressions thereof will be made upon all subordinate faculties; for we move towards nothing without preceding apprehensions of its goodness, which apprehensions, as they more seriously penetrate into the true and intimate worth of that thing so are the motions of the soul thereunto proportionably strengthen'd. As the hinder wheels in a Coach ever move as fast as the former which lead them; so the subordinate powers of the soul are over-ruled in their manner and measure of working towards grace, by those spiritual representations of the truth and excellency thereof, which are made in the understanding by the light of the Gospel. Thus the Apostle telleth us, that the *excellency of the knowledge of Christ* was that which made him so earnest to win him, the knowledge of the power of his Resurrection, and fellowship of his sufferings, was that which made him reach forth, and press forward unto the mark and price of that high calling which was before him.

Thirdly, The glory of the Gospel of Christ with his Spirit may be considered in regard of the matters which are therein contain'd, namely, the glory, the Excellencies, the Treasures of God himself: *We all* saith the Apostle, *with open face, behold as in a glass* (that is, in the spiritual ministration of the Gospel, having the vail of carnal stupidity

stupidity taken away by the Spirit) *The glory of the Lord.* What glory do we here behold, but that which a glasse is able to represent? Now *in speculo nisi imago non cernitur*, nothing can be seen in a glasse but the image of that thing which sheddeth forth its species thereupon; and therefore he immediately addeth, *We are changed into the same Image, from glory to glory*; and he elsewhere putteth these two together, *Man is the image, and the glory of God*; for nothing can have any thing of God in it, any resemblance or form of him, but so far it must needs be glorious. But how do we in the Gospel see the Image of God who is invisible? The Apostle expresseth that elsewhere, *God who commanded the light to shine out of darkness, hath shined in our hearts, to give the light of the knowledge of the glory of God, in the face of Jesus Christ.* Christ is the Image and expresse Character of his Fathers glory, as the impression in the wax is of the form and fashion of the Seale: there is no excellency in God, which is not completely, adequately and distinctly in Christ; so that in that glasse wherein we may see him, we may likewise see the glory of the Father. Now *the Gospel is the face of Jesus Christ*, that which as lively setteth forth his grace and Spirit to the soul, as if he were present in the flesh amongst us. Suppose we, that a glasse could retain a permanent and unvanishing species of a mans face within it, though he himself were absent, might we not truly say, this glasse is the face of that man, whose image it so constantly retaineth? So, in as much as Christ is most exactly represented in his Gospel (so that when we come into his personal and real presence, to know even as we are known, we shall be able truly to say, this is indeed the very person who was so long since in his Gospel exhibited to my Faith *sic ille manns, sic oragereb. &c.*) it is therefore justly by the Apostle called, *the face of Jesus Christ*; and therefore the *Glasse wherein we see the Image and Glory of God*, as it is the same light

1 Cor. II. 7

2 Cor. 4. 4, 5, 6

VERSE 2.

Rom. 1. 19

1 Cor. 15. 1

Acts 20. 25

Ephes. 3. 8

Ephes. 3. 10

1 Cor. 1. 24

1 Cor. 2. 6, 7

Rom. 5. 8

which shineth from the Sun upon a glasse, and from a glasse upon a wall; so it is the same glory which shineth from the Father upon the Son, and from the Son upon the Gospel; so that in the Gospel we see the unsearchable treasures of God, because his treasures are in his Son: Therefore that which is usually called, *Preaching the Gospel*, is in other places called, *Preaching the Kingdom*, and *the riches of Christ*, to note the glory of those things which are in the Gospel revealed unto the Church.

It containeth the *glory of Gods wisdom*, and that wisdom is *πολυτοιμία & σοφία*, a manifold and various wisdom, as the Apostle speaketh, who therefore calleth Christ and his Gospel by the name of *Wisdom*; we preach Christ crucified, to those that are called the *Power of God*, and the *Wisdom of God*: and we speak *Wisdom amongst them that are perfect*; Wisdom to reconcile his own attributes of mercy and truth; righteousness and peace, which by the fall of man seemed to be at variance among themselves; Wisdom in reconciling the world of obstinate and rebellious enemies unto himselfe; wisdom in sanctifying the whole creation by the blood of the Crosse, and repairing those ruins which the sin of man had caused; wisdom in conincorporating Christ and his Church, things in their own distinct natures as unapt for mixture, as fire and water in their remotest degrees; wisdom in uniting the Jews and Gentiles, and reducing their former jealousies and disaffections unto an intimate fellowship in the same common mysteries; In one word, wisdom above the admiration of the blessed Angels, in finding out a way to give greater satisfaction to his offended justice, by shewing mercy & saving sinners, then he could ever have received by either the confusion or annihilation of them. It containeth the *glory of Gods goodness & mercy*, of that *εὐδοκία*, *goodwill towards men*, which brought glory to God, and

and to the earth peace: for the Gospel is as it were a Love-token or commendatory Epistle of the Lord unto the Church. God left not himself without witnesses of his care, and evidences of *some love* even of those whom he suffered to walk in their own wayes, without any knowledg of his Gospel; he did them good, he gave them rain from Heaven and fruitful seasons; so even they had experience of *some of his goodnesse*, the goodnesse of his providence, for he is the Saviour of all men; but the Gospel containeth all Gods goodnesse, as a heap and miscellany of universal mercy: *I will make all my goodnesse passe before thee, and I will proclaim the name of the Lord before thee, and will be gracious to whom I will be gracious, and I wil shew mercy to whom I will shew mercy.* Gods special and gracious mercy, the mercy of his promises in Christ, doth convey unto the soul an interest in all his goodness, nay, it maketh all things good unto us, so that we may call them ours, as gifts and legacies from Christ. He hath given to us all things that pertaine to life and godlinesse, the world, and life, and death, and things present, and things to come; *All are yours*, saith the Apostle. Death it self and persecutions are amongst the Legacies of Christ unto the Church, and a portion of all that goodnesse with which in the Gospel she is endowed. It containeth the glory of Gods power and strength, for it is the Power of God unto salvation, as hath been declared. It containeth the glory of Gods grace. The grace of his favour towards us, and the grace of his Spirit in us. *The Law was given by Moses, but grace came by Christ; that is, favour in stead of Gods fury, and strength in stead of mans infirmity; for because man was unable to fulfil the Law, therefore the Law came with wrath and curses against man; but in the Gospel of Christ, there is abundance, even a whole Kingdom of grace (the Apostle saith, that by Jesus Christ grace raigned) there is Grace to remove the curse of the Law, by Gods favour to-*

VERSE 2.

Acts 14 16, 17

2 Pet. 1. 3, 4

1 Cor. 3. 18

John 1. 17

Rom. 8. 21

E. C. E. 2.

4. 5. 6

Mat. b. 13. 19
 Mark 1. 14
 Luke 8. 10

wards us (so that on all sides the Law is weak, unable, by reason of mans sin, to save; and unable, by reason of Gods favour, to condemn) and there is *grace to remove the weaknesse of men by Gods Spirit in us*: for though our own spirit lust unto envy, or set it self proudly against the Law of God; yet he giveth *more grace*; that is, strength enough to overcome the counterlustings of the flesh against his will, and to enable us in sincerity, and Evangelical perfection, to fulfil the commands of the Law. Lastly, it containeth in some sort the *glory of Gods Heavenly Kingdom*, in that therein are let in the glimpses and first fruits, the seals and assurances thereof unto the soul by the Promises, Testimonies and Comforts of the Spirit. And therefore it is frequently called the *Gospel of the Kingdom*, and the *Mysteries of the Kingdom of God*, namely, that Kingdome which beginneth here, but shall never end. As if a man borne in *Ireland* be afterwards transplanted into *England*, though he change his Country, he doth not change his King or his Law, but is still under the same Government: so when a Christian is translated from Earth to Heaven, he is still in the same Kingdom, in Heaven it is the Kingdom of Glory (mended much by the different excellency of the place and preferment of the person) in Earth it is the same Kingdome, though in a less amene and comfortable climate, the Kingdome of the Gospel. These and many other the like things are the glorious matters which the Gospel containeth.

Here then we see how and wherein we are to look upon God, so as that we may abide his glory, and be comforted by it: we must not look upon him in his own immediate brightnesse and essence, nor by our sawcy curiosities pry into secrets of his unrevealed Glory, for he is a consuming fire, an invisible and unapproachable light, *we may see his back parts*, in the proclaiming of his mercy; and we *may see the hornes of*
bright

Deut. 29. 29
 Exod. 9. 21
 Exod. 33. 23

The glory of the Gospel.

185

VER. S. B. 2.

Hab. 3. 4

John 17. 3

1 John 1. 3

John 1. 18

Col. 1. 15

John 14. 6

Ephes. 2. 18

and 3. 12

Heb. 10. 19, 22

Hab. 3. 3, 4

Deut. 1. 2

bright beamer of his hands, in the publishing of his Law : but yet all this was under a cloud, or under the hiding of his power ; his face no man can see and live : We must not look upon him only in our selves. Though we might at first have seen him in our own nature, for we were created after his Image in Righteousnesse and true Holinesse ; yet now that Image is utterly obliterated, and we have by nature the Image only of Satan and the old Adam in us : we must not look upon him only in Mount Sinai, in his Law, lest the fire devour us, and the dart strike us through ; we can find nothing of him there but rigor, inexorablenesse, wrath and vengeance. But we must acquaint our selves with him in his Son ; we must know him, and whom he hath sent together ; there is no fellowship with the Father, except it be with the Son too : we may have the knowledg of his Hand, that is, of his works, and of his punishments, without Christ : but we cannot have the knowledg of his bosome, that is, of his counsels and of his compassions ; nor the knowledg of his Image, that is, of his Holinesse, Grace, and Righteousnesse ; nor the knowledg of his presence, that is, of his comforts here, and his glory hereafter, but only in and by Christ : we may know God in the World, for in the Creation is manifest το γνωσθαι το Θεον, that which may be known of him, namely, his Eternal power and God-head. But this is a barren and fruitlesse knowledg, which will not keep down unrighteousnesse : for the wise men of the World when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, but became vain in their imaginations, and held that truth of him which was in the Creation revealed, in unrighteousnesse. We may know him in his Law too, and that in exceeding great glory, When God came from Teman, and the Holy One from Mount Paran (whereabout the Law was the second time repeated by Moses) his glory covered the Heavens, and the Earth was full of his praise, his brightness was as the light, &c. But this is a killing knowledge, a know-

VERSE 2.

Deut. 33. 2.
Deut. 5. 22
Gal. 3. 10
Rom. 12. 20

knowledg which makes us flye from God, and hide our selves out of his presence, and fight against him as our worst enemies, and come short of his Glory: therefore the Law is called, *A fiery Law*, or a *fire of Law*, to shew not only the Original thereof, for it was spoken out of the midst of the fire; but the nature and operation of it too, which of it selfe is to heap fire and curses upon the soul; and therefore it is called the *ministration of Death*, 2 Cor. 3. 7. But now to know the Glory of God in the face of *Jesus Christ*, is both a fruitful and a comfortable knowledg; we know the pattern we must walk by, we know the life we must live by, we know the treasure we must be supplied by, we know whom wee have believed, we know whom we may be bold with in all straits and distresses, we know God in Christ full of love, full of compassion, full of cares to hear us, full of eyes to watch over us, full of hands to fight for us, full of tongues to commune with us, full of power to preserve us, full of grace to transforme us, full of fidelity to keep Covenant with us, full of wisdom to conduct us, full of redemption to save us, full of glory to reward us. Let us therefore put our selves into this rock, that Gods goodnesse may pass before us, that he may communicate the mysteries of his Kingdom and of his glory unto us, that by him our persons may be accepted, our prayers admitted, our services regarded, our acquaintance and fellowship with the Lord increased, by that blessed Spirit which is from them both shed abroad in his Gospel upon us.

Now lastly, the Gospel of Christ is *glorious* in those ends, effects, or purposes for which it serveth. And in this respect principally doth the Apostle so often magnifie the glory of the Gospel above the Law. The Law was a glorious ministry, as appears by the thunderings and lightnings, the shining of *Moses* his face, and trembling at Gods presence, the service of the Angels, and sound of the

Exo. 19. 16, 21

VERSE 2.

ὅτι τὸ ἀπέ-
λυσεν μόνον
τὸ θεῖον, καὶ
ἐχρημάτισεν
τοὺς ἁγίους πνεύ-
ματι. Greg.
Naz. Orat.
1 Pet. 1, 12

Ἡμεῖς οὖν φη-
σιν αἱ λόγοι
καὶ τὸ ἑλληνί-
ζειν, ὅτι καὶ τὸ
σέβειν Θεὸς ὁ
μὴ ἢ ἀλυσία
γενεῖα καὶ ὁ
δὲν ἔστιν τὸ
πίστευον, ὁ ὁ
μολέας ὁ
σοφίας. Greg.
Naz. Orat. 3.

the joyes of Heaven to fill them) with Metaphysical, or Mathematical or Philological contemplations, which yet are the highest delicacies which humane reason doth fasten on to delight in? And yet we find the Angels in Heaven, with much greedinesse of speculation stoop down, and as it were, turne away their eyes from that expresse glory, which is before them in Heaven, to gaze upon the wonderful light, and bottomlesse mysteries of the Gospel of Christ. In all other learning, a Divel in hell (the most cursed of all creatures) doth wonderfully surpasse the greatest proficients amongst men; but in the learning of the Gospel, and in the spiritual revelations and evidences of the benefits of Christ to the soul from thence, there is a knowledge which surpasseth the comprehension of any Angel of darknesse; for it is the Spirit of God only, which knoweth the things of God. It was the divellish flout of *Julian* the Apostate against Christian Religion, That it was an illiterate rusticity, and a naked belief, and that true polite learning did belong to him and his Echnick faction; and for that reason he interdicted Christians the use of Schools and humane learning, as things improper to their believing Religion (a persecution esteemed by the Ancients as cruel as the other bloody Massacres of his predecessors.) To which slander, though the most learned Father might have justly returned the lye, and given proofs, both in the canonical books of holy Scripture, & in the professors of that religion, of as profound learning, as invincible argumentation, and as forcible eloquence, as in any Heathen Author (for I dare challenge all the Pagan learning in the world to parallel the writings of *Clemens of Alexandria*, *Origen*, *Justin*, *Tertullian*, *Cyprian*, *Minutius*, *Augustin*, *Theodoret*, *Nazianzen*, and the other Champions of Christian Religion against Gentilisme) yet he rather chuseth thus to answer, That that authority, which the faith he so much derided, was built upon,

upon, came to the soule with more selfe-evidence, and invincible demonstration, than all the disputes of reason, or learning of Philosophie could create. Though therefore it were to the Jewes an offence, as contrary to the honour of their Law; and to the Greeks foolishnesse, as contrary to the pride of their reason; yet to those that were perfect, it was an hidden and mysterious wisdom, able to convince the gain-sayers, to convert sinners, to comfort mourners, to give wisdom to the simple, and to guide a man in all his waies with spiritual prudence; for, what ever the prejudice of the World may bee, there is no man a wiser man, nor more able to bring about those ends which his heart is justly set upon, than hee who being acquainted with God in Christ by the Gospel, hath the Father of wisdom, the Treasurer of wisdom, the Spirit of wisdom, and the Law of wisdom to furnish him therewithall. It is not for want of sufficiencie in the Gospel, but for want of more intimate acquaintance and knowledg thereof in us, that the children of this world are more wise in their generation, than the children of light.

Secondly, another glorious end and effect of the Gospel, is to bee a *ministration of Righteousnesse*, a publication of a pardon to the world, and that so generall, that there is not one exception therein of any other sinne than only of the contempt of the pardon it self. And in this respect likewise the Gospel exceeds in Glory. *If the ministration of condemnation* (saith the Apostle) *be Glory*, much more doth the *ministration of Righteousnesse* exceede in Glory, 2 Cor. 3. 9. It is the glory of a man to passe by an offence, and the Lord proclaimeth his Glory to Moses, in that he would forgive iniquity, transgression and sinne, that is, multitudes of sinns, and finnes of all degrees, Exod. 34. 7. And thus the Lord magnifies his mercie, and thoughts toward sinners, above all the waies and thoughts of men, even as the Heavens are higher than the

VERSE 2.

Βλέψω γὰρ
ἐμὴν ὁ λόγος,
μὴ ἐξῆναι δι-
απίσιν τοῖς
κατὰ τὴν θεο-
φάνειαν ἀνθρώπων
ἐν ῥημασίν.
ἀλλ' ἀποδείξιν
ἵνα καὶ τὸ λό-
γος τὸ ἐκεί-
νων ἀξιόπι-
στον, πᾶσις
δουλοῦμαι λο-
γικῆς καὶ ἀντι-
λογικῆς ἐχου-
σάτεσθαι.
Greg. Naz. ib.

VERSE 2.

Numb. 20. 12

1 Pet. 3. 14. 15

1 Cor. 4. 14

John 5. 10

Gen. 4. 13

Psal. 78. 18, 19
40. 41

the earth, because he can abundantly pardon, or multiply forgivenesses upon those who forsake their wayes and turne to him, *Isai. 55. 7, 8, 9.* and therefore justifying faith whereby we rely upon the power of God to forgive and subdue our sinnes, is said to give glory to God. *Abraham* staggered not at the Promise through unbelief, but being strong in faith, he gave glory to God; namely, the glory of his power and fidelity, *Rom. 4. 20, 21.* *Ye* shall not bring this Congregation into the Land which I have given them, saith the Lord to *Moses* and *Aaron*, Because ye believed me not, to sanctifie me in the eyes of the children of *Israel*; that is, to give me the glory of my Power and truth: (for to sanctifie the Lord of Hosts, signifieth to glorifie his Power, by fearing him more then men, and by relying on him against the power and confederacies of men, *Isai. 8. 12, 13.* And therefore in the same argument touching the happinesse of the Saints, if they suffer for righteousness sake, or be reproached for the Name of Christ, Saint *Peter* useth in one place sanctifying of the Lord in our hearts, and in another glorifying of him, as termes equivalent :) And therefore unbelief is said to make God a liar, that is, to dishonour him, and to rob him of the glory of his Truth: And despair, to rob God of his Mercy, and to make the guilt of sin greater then the power of God: And therefore murmurers and unbelievers are said to speak against God, and to grieve him, to tempt, to limit him; that is, to call into question the glory of his Power and Truth. Herein then consisteth another glorious effect of the Gospel of Christ, that being a ministration of righteousness, it is a glass of that Power, Truth, mercy, and fidelity of God, which by faith we rest upon, for the forgiveness and subduing of sin.

Thirdly, Another glorious end of the Gospel is to be a ministration, and a law of life. If the ministration of death (saith the Apostle) were glorious; how shall not the mini-

stration

stration of the Spirit be rather glorious? 2 Cor. 3. 6, 7, 8.

VERSE 2.

The Law alone by it selfe is towards sinners but a dead letter, only the rule according unto which a man ought to walk, not any principle enabling him to walk. If Moses alone should speak unto men, he could only tell them what they ought to do; he could in no wise enable them to do it: nay, further, the Law hath occasionally from the sin of man a malignant property in it, to irritate and exasperate lust the more, to beget an occasional rage and fiercenesse in our nature. As the Sun shining on a dunghill draweth forth noysom vapours, and maketh it stink the more. But now the Gospel by the Spirit, doth not only teach, but help too, sheweth us what wee should do, and giveth us strength to do it: We do not only therein see the glory of God, but are withal changed into the same Image, even from glory to glory; that is, (as I conceive, from that allusion to a glass) the glory of the Lord shining upon the Gospel, and from the Gospel shining upon our hearts, doth change them into the Image of the same glory; even as the glory of the Sun shining upon a glasse, and from that glasse reflecting on a wall, doth therein produce a more extraordinary Image of its own light: so that the Apostles *Imago dei* is *Imago*, is the same with the Poets *è speculo in speculum*, from the glory of the Gospel which is one glasse of Gods Image, there is shaped the same Glory in the heart, which is another glasse of his Image. This is that which the Apostle calleth the forming of Christ in the soul, and the planting of it into the likeness of his death and resurrection.

Quod operum
lex minando
imperat, hoc fi-
dei lex creden-
do imperat.
Legem dicitur
Dei, Fac
quod jubet lege
fidei dicitur
Deo, Da quod
jubet. Aug. rom
3. lib. de spiritu
& litera. copp.

13. 19

2 Cor. 3. 10

Fourthly. It is a glorious Gospel in the judicature thereof. The Spirit in the Gospel doth convince not of Righteousnesse only, but of Judgment too; that is, the Spirit that erect a throne in the hearts of men, shall pull down the prince of this world, and dispossess him; shall enable mens owne hearts to proceed like upright Judges with

John 16. 11

VERSE 2.

Iſaiah 42.3
 Matth. 12.10

1 Cor. 11.31
 2 Cor. 7. 11
 Hoſ. 14.8
 Iſai. 31.7
 Jer. 31.19

Phil. 3.20.

with truth and with victory, (which are two of the principal honours of Judgement) againſt their own luſts, to cenſure, to condemn, to crucifiethem, though before they were as dear as their owne members; to throw all their Idols away as menſtruous rags, and to judg and revenge themſelves. *Ephraim ſhall ſay, what have I to do any more with idols? In that day, ſaith the Lord, every man ſhall caſt away his idols of ſilver, and his Idols of gold, which your own hands have made unto you for a ſin. I have ſurely heard Ephraim bemoaning himſelf; After that I was turned, I repented; and after that I was inſtructed, I ſmote upon my thigh.* Thus the government of the Goſpel in the heart, makes a man ſevere to ſentence, every ſin, to hang up his *Haman*, his favourite luſts, to give up himſelf to the obedience of Chriſt, and to have his converſation; his trading, his treaſure, his privileges, his freedom, his fellowſhip in Heaven, as being now conſtituted under the gracious and peaceable government of a heavenly Prince.

Fifthly, It is a glorious Goſpel, in that it was to be a continuing miniſtration, and an immortal ſeed. *If that which was done away, ſaith the Apoſtle, was glorious, much more that which remaineth is glorious; 2 Cor. 3. 11.* Now the Goſpel is able to preſerve a man blameleſſe unto the coming of our Lord Jeſus; it will not ſuffer a man to be ſhaken nor overturned by all the powers of darkneſſe; there is ſtrength enough in it to repel, and wiſdome to answer all the temptations and aſſaults of the enemies of our ſalvation; If the world ſet upon us with any temptations on the right hand, or on the left with diſgraces, perſecutions, diſcomforts, exprobrations, loe, this was the man who made God his help, and would needs be more excellent then his neighbours; the Goſpel furniſheth us with ſure promiſes, and ſure mercoies: this is anſwer ſufficient againſt all the diſcouragements of the World, *I know whom I have believed; I know that he hath*

hath overcome the world, *I know that he is able to keep* that which I have committed unto him, *until the last day*, and in the mean time the world is crucified unto me, and I unto the world; that is, we are at an equall point of distance and defiance, the world contemns me, and I am as carelesse of the world. If with pleasures, honours, and gilded baits to draw us away from God, *Faith in the Gospel easily overcometh the world*, for it giveth both the Promises and first fruits of such Treasures as are infinitely more pretious and massie than all the world can afford; the very reproaches of Christ (how much more his promises, how infinitely more his performances at the last?) are farre greater riches, than the treasures of Egypt. The daily sacrifice of a godly life, and the daily feast of a quiet conscience, put more sweetnesse into the afflictions of Christ, than is in all the profits, pleasures or preferments of the world, being made bitter with the guilt of sin. If Satan, or our own reasonings stand up against the Kingdome of Christ in us, the Gospel is a Store-house which can furnish us with armory of all sorts to repell them. Faith can quench fiery darts, the weapons of the Spirit can captivate the very thoughts of the heart unto the Obedience of Christ; no weapon which is formed against it can prosper, and every tongue which riseth up against it in judgment, it shall condemn; it is a staffe which can carry a man over any Jordan, and can support and comfort him in any shadow of death. This is the honour of the Word, that it doth not only *sanctifie* men, but *preserve* their holinesse in them. If it were not for the treasure of the Word in the heart, every little thing would easily turn a man out of his way, and make him revolt from Christ againe. How easily would *afflictions* make us mistrust Gods affection to us, and so change ours unto him, (for this is certain, *His love to us is the original of our love to him*) make us murmur, repine, struggle, fret under his hand, if in the Gospel wee did

VERSE 2.

Psal. 119. 92

2 King. 6. 33

Mal. 3. 14

Esay 58. 3

John 10. 4, 5

Acts 20. 29, 30

did not look upon them as the gentle corrections of a Father, who loves us, as the pruning and harrowing of our soules that they may bring forth more fruit? *Except thy Law had been my delight, I should have perished in mine affliction.* My affliction would have destroyed me, and made me perish from the right way, if it had not been tempered and sanctified by the Word. It wrought so with that wicked King of Israel, *Behold this evil is of the Lord; what should I waite upon the Lord any longer? What profit is there to walk humbly before him, or to afflict our selves before him, who will not see, nor take knowledge of it, but continue to be our enemy still?* But the Gospel teacheth a mans heart to rest in God, assureth it that there is hope in Israel, and balme in Gilead, that they which believe should not make hast to limit, or to misconsture God, but waite for his Salvation, which will ever come in that due time, wherein it shall be both most acceptable and most beautiful. Againe, how easily would *Temptations* overturn the faith of men, if it were not daily supported by the Word? What is the reason that the sheep of Christ will not follow strangers, nor know their voice; that is, will not acknowledge any force, nor subscribe in their hearts to the conviction or evidence of any temptation which would draw them from God, but onely because they heare and know the voice of Christ in his Gospel, and feel a Spirit in their owne hearts setting to its seale and bearing witness to that Truth from whence those solicitations would seduce them? The Apostles foretold the Elders of Ephesus at his solemne departure from them, that *grievous wolves would enter in amongst them, and that some of themselves would arise speaking perverse things, to draw away Disciples after them.* And the maine remedy which the Apostle gives them against this danger, was, *I commend you to God, and to the Word of his Grace, which is able to build you up, &c.* Noting that it is in the Word of God which keepeth

keepeth men from being drawne away with perverse disputes. And the same intimation he gives them in his Epistle unto them ; *He gave some Apostles, and some Prophets, and some Evangelists, and some Pastors and Teachers. — That we henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every winde of Doctrine, by the sleight of Men, and cunning craftinesse whereby they lye in waite to deceive.* The more richly the Word of God, in the love and evidence thereof, doth dwell in any man, and enable him to prove all things, the more stedfastly will he hold that which is good, and stand immoveable against the sleights and sollicitations of men. Againe, how easily would our owne evil hearts gather a rust and unaptnesse for service over themselves, if they were not dayly whet and brightned upon the Word of God? That onely it is which scrapeth away that leprosie and mossinesse which our soules are apt to contract out of themselves. *A man may lose all that he hath wrought, all the benefit of what he hath done already, and all the strength to do any more, by not abiding in the doctrine of Christ.* Hee is no doer of the Word, who looketh in it as a man on a glasse, and presently forgetteth the image and state of his Conscience againe ; it is only he that continueth therein, who is a doer of the work, and blessed in his deed. He that treasureth up the Gospel in his heart, and laboureth to grow rich in the knowledge thereof, can never be turned quite out of his way, or become an Apostate from the Grace of Christ.

Lastly, it is a glorious Gospel in regard of those noble and majestical endowments with which it qualifieth the soul of a Christian : for there is no nobility to that of the Gospel. It giveth men the highest priviledge in the World to be called the *Sons of God*, to be *Kings and Priests before him*, to be a *Royal Priesthood, a holy Nation, a peculiar People, a Nation of Priests.* Nothing doth so

VERSE 2.

Ephes. 4. 11, 14

1 Thes. 5. 21

2 John 8, 9

Jam. 1. 23, 25

John 1. 12

1 John 3. 1

Rev. 1. 6

1 Pet. 2. 9

VERSE 2.

Rom. 3. 1, 2.

1 Sam. 4. 22

Luke 2. 32

Amos 8. 7.

Jer. 9. 24.

* ὅτι φιλοτι-
μώμενον ἐν
αγγελίᾳ εἰς.
Rom. 15. 20

honour a Land as to be the seate of the Gospel. It was the honour of the Jewes, that unto them were committed the Oracles of God. Therefore the *Ark* is called the *Glory of Israel*, and *Christ* the *Glory of Israel*, and the *excellency of Jacob*; neither is there any thing else allowed a man to glory in, save only this, that he understandeth and knoweth the Lord in his word. It putteth *magnanimity* into the breasts of men, high thoughts, regal affections, publick desires and attempts, a kind of Heavenly * ambition to do, and to gain the greatest good. *The maine ends of a Christian are all high and noble.* The favour of God, the fellowship of the Father and the Son, the Grace of Christ, the peace of the Church, his traffick and negotiation is for heaven, his language the dialect of Heaven; his Order a Heavenly Order, innumerable companies of Angels, and the Spirits of just men made perfect. A holy man who hath the Spirit of his minde raised and ennobled by the Gospel, is an agent in the same affaires, and doth in his thoughts, desires, prayers, emulations, pursue the same high and heavenly ends, for the advancement of the glory of Christ, and demolishing the kingdome of Satan, with the blessed Angels of God. His desires look no lower than a Kingdome, a weight of masse and most superlative exceeding Glory. That which other men make the utmost point even of their impudent and immodest hopes, the secular favours and dignities of the world, these put lowest under their feet; but their wings, the higher and most aspiring affections of their soule, are directed only unto Heaven and Heavenly things. They no sooner are placed in the body of Christ, but they have publick services, some to preach, some to defend, all to pray, to practise, to adorne the profession they have under-taken. For indeed, every Christian hath his talent given him, his service injoynd him. The Gospel is a *Depositum*, a publick Treasure, committed to the keeping of every Christian, each man ha-

ving

ving: as it were, a severall key of the Church, a severall trust for the honour of this kingdom deliver'd unto him. As in the solemn Coronation of the Prince, every Peere of the Realme hath his station about the Throne, and with the touch of his hand upon the royal Crowne de- clareth the personal duty of that honour which he is called unto; namely, to hold on the Crowne on the head of his Sovereign, to make it the main end of his great- ness; to study, and by all means endeavour the esta- blishment of his Princes Throne: so every Christian as soon as he hath the honour to be called unto the king- dom and presence of Christ, hath immediatly no mean- er a *Depositarum* committed to his care then the very Throne and Crowne of his Saviour, then the publick honour, peace, victory and stability of his Masters king- dome. The Gospel is committed to the custody of the Bishops and Pastors of the Church, to preach it. They are, as it were, the Harbingers and Forerunners of Christ to prepare his way into the souls of men. To the custody of the Princes and Judges of the earth to defend it, to be a guard about the person and truth of Christ, to com- mand the obedience, and to encourage the teaching of it. The Gospel is the Law of Christs Throne, and the Princes of the world are the Lions about his Throne, set there to watch and guard it against the malice of ene- mies. And therefore it is recorded for the honour of *David*, that he set in order the courses of the Priests, and appointed them their formes and vicissitudes of Service. Of *Solomon*, that he built, adorned, and dedicated a Tem- ple for Gods solemn worship. Of *Josiah*, that he made the people to serve the Lord their God. Of *Hezekiah*, that he restored the Service, and repaired the Temple of God; that he spake comfortably to the Levites, who taught the good knowledg of the Lord, that he pro- claimed a solemn Passover, that he ordered the cour- ses of the Priests and Levites, that he gave command-

2 Tim. 1. 14
& 2. 2

1 Chron. 23. 24

2 Chron. 34. 33
29. 3
32. 1. 22
31. 2, 3, 4

VERSE 2.

Euseb. de vit.
Constantini. i. 2
cap 37, 38, 39.
A.G. 13. 26.
Jude v. 3.
2 Thel. 2. 15.

A.G. 13. 46.
& 28. 28.
1 Thel. 2. 2.
A.G. 2. 14 23,
36.
Acts 4. 8, 12, 13
19
A.G. 5. 29. 32.

ment concerning the portion of their due maintenance, that they might be encouraged in the Law of the Lord (a patterne worthy the admiration and imitation of all Christian princes, in spite of the sacrilegious doctrine of those men who would rob them of that power and office which God hath given them for the establishment of his Gospel; and it was imitated by the first Christian Prince that ever the world had.) Lastly, the Gospel is committed to the keeping of every Christian to practise it, to adorne it, to pray for it, to be valiant and courageous in his place and station for the truth of it. And for a man to neglect these duties is to betray and dishonour the Kingdome of Christ, and to degenerate from that high and publick condition in which God had placed him.

Again, it putteth a spirit of *Fortitude and boldnesse* into the hearts of men. Boldnesse to withstand the corruptions of the times, to walk contrary to the courses of the world, to out-face the sins and the scornes of men, to bee valiant for a despised truth or power of religion, not to be ashamed of a persecuted profession, to spread out *contra torrentem babilonis*, to stand alone against the power and credit of a prevailing faction; as *Paul* against the contradiction of the Jews; and *Peter* and *John* against a Synod of Pharises; and those invincible champions of Christ, *Athanasius* against the power of *Constantine*, the frequent synodical conventions of countenanced hereticks, and the general deluge of *Arianisme* in the world. *Ambrose* against the wrath and terror of the Emperour of the world, to whom, having imbrued his hands in much innocent blood, that holy Father durst not deliver the blood of Christ. *Chrysostome* against the pride and persecution of the Emperesse *Eudoxa*. *Luther* against the mistresse of fornications, the princeesse of the earth, and as himself professed, if it had beene possible, against a whole city full of divels. The Christians of all ages against

VERSE 2.

against the fire, fury, and arts of torment executed by the bloody persecutors of the Church. Nay further, the Gospel giveth boldnesse against that universall fire which shall melt the Elements, and shrivell up the heavens like a roll of parchment; *Herein*, saith the Apostle, *is our love made perfect, that we may have boldnesse in the day of Judgment, because as he is, so wee are in this world;* that is, we have his image in us, and his love shed abroad in our hearts, and therefore we are able to assure our hearts before him, and to have confidence towards him. Now hee who hath boldnesse to stand before God, to dwell with consuming fire, and with everlasting burnings; who can get the Lord on his right hand, and put on the Lord Jesus, though hee bee not out of the reach, or beyond the blow, yet is hee above the injurie of the malice of men; they may kill, but they can never overcome him. *I am he that comforteth you, who art thou* (saith the Lord) *that thou shouldst be afraid of a man that shall dye, and forgettest the Lord thy Maker &c?* What an invincible courage was that of *Elijah*, which retorted the slander of *Ahab* upon his owne face? *I have not troubled Israel, but thou and thy fathers house.* And that of *Micajah*, against the base request of a flattering Courtier, who thought God to bee such an one as himselfe, that would magnifie and cry up the ends of a wicked king? *As the Lord liveth, what the Lord saith unto mee, that will I speake.* And that of *Amos* against the unworthy instructions of *Amaziah*, the priest of Bethel. *Thou saiest, prophesie not against Israel, and drop not thy words against the house of Isaac; therefore thus saith the Lord, Thy wife shall be an harlot in the citie, and thy sonnes and thy daughters shall fall by the sword, and thy land shall be divided by line, and thou shalt dye in a polluted land, and Israel shall surely goe into captivity forth of his land.* And that of *Jeremiah*, who boldly gave the lye to *Iryah* the captaine of the ward; *It is false, I fall not away to the Caldeans.*

1 John. 4. 17.

Isa. 51. 12, 13.

1 King. 18. 18.

1 King. 22. 14.

Amos 7. 16, 17.

Jer. 37. 13, 14.

VERSE 2.

Tertull. Apog.
cap. ult. Baron.
An. 179. § 27
Euseb. Hist. l. 9
cap. 1.

Christiani su-
mus, Christiani
& Deos suos
Imperator non
colebat. Baron.
An. 301. § 46.
An. 165. § 41.

Jer. 37. 16, 17
38. 15, 16

Mark 6. 20.

Acts 6. 15

1 Cor. 14. 24, 25
Acts 16. 29, 30

The time would fail, if I should speak of the unbending constancy (or as the Gentiles filled it, obstinacy) of *Titus, Polycarp, Justin, Cyprian, Pionius, Sabina, Maximus*, and those infinite armies of holy Martyrs, who posed the inventions, tired out the cruelties, withstood the flatteries, and with one word (*Christiani sumus*) overcame all the tyrannies, quenched the fire, and stopped the mouths of their proudest Persecutors.

Again, the Gospel putteth a kind of *Lustre and terror* on the faces of those in whom it reigneth, and maketh them, as the Law did *Moses*, to shine as lights in the world, and to be more excellent then their neighbours; worketh in others towards them a dread and awefulness. Though *Jeremiah* were a prisoner, cast into the dungeon, and in such extremity as he was there likely to perish: yet such a Majesty and honour did God even then put upon him, and that in the thoughts of the king himself, that he could not be in quiet till he consulted with him about the will of the Lord, and by his many conferences with him made it plainly appear, that he stood in awe of his person and Prophecies. So it is said, *That Herod feared John, knowing that he was a just, and a holy man, and observed him*: to note That Holiness maketh mens persons and presence dreadful to the wicked, by reason of that Grace and Majesty which God hath put into them. The whole Council of Scribes and Pharisees, they who afterwards gnashed on *Stephen* with their teeth, were forced to acknowledge the Majesty of holiness shining upon him, *They stedfastly looked on him, and saw his face as it had been the face of an Angel*. The mighty power of the Gospel of Christ maketh unbelievers fall on their faces, and confesse of a truth, that God is in those who preach it. This we find verified in the poor astonished keeper of the prison into which *Paul* and *Silas* had been cast, he sprang in and came trembling and fell down before them, and brought them forth, and

The Glory of the Gospel.

201

and said, *Releas, Sirs,* (which is an honourable appellation, he rather for Princes than for prisoners) *what must I do to be saved?* It is true, that naturally men hate Christ and his servants: but this is not as a man hateth a Toad (which he can easily crush) with a simple hatred; but as a man hateth a Lion, or as a Malefactor hateth his Judge, or as a Thief hateth the light, with a compounded hatred, mixed with a fear and dread of that Majesty within them. Which Majesty hath sometimes shined so brightly, even under torments and persecutions, that it hath forced from Heathen Emperours a desire of the Christians Prayers; sometimes not astonished only, but

* converted the adversaries.

Lastly, The Gospel bringeth *liberty and joy* into the hearts of men with it. The liberty, a *Glorious liberty*, Rom. 8. 21. and the joy a *glorious joy*, 1 Pet. 1. 8. therefore the Gospel is called, *A Gospel of great joy*, Luke 2. 10. Liberty is so sacred a thing, that indeed it belongs in the whole compasse of it, only to the Prince: for though other men be free from servitude, yet they are not free from subjection. Now the Gospel giveth a plenary freedom to the consciences of men; they may be commanded by their own consciences, but their consciences cannot be commanded by any but by Christ. The Sonne hath made them free from all others; that hee onely might be Lord over them. These are those noble effects of the Majesty of the Gospel in the hearts of men, and all so many several evidences of that glory which belongs unto it.

Now then, to draw some Inferences from this most useful and excellent Doctrine of the glory of the Gospel; we learn from thence, 1. What liberty and what sincerity the Ministers of Christ ought to use in the administration of this his Kingdom in the World, First, *What Liberty*. The Officers of a Prince who go be-

VERSE 27

* Adjectos ideo
vocabant, quia
cum in eo essent
ut torquerent
martyres, ipsi
martyres fue-
runt, verbo Dei,
& Constantia
martyrum per-
misi. Camero-
de Ecclesi. p. 83

VERSE 2.

Jer. 1. 17, 18.
Ezek. 3. 8, 9
1 Tim. 4. 11
2 Cor. 4. 1, 2,

2 Cor. 3. 12.

* Tertul. Apol.
cap. 5.
Rom. 1. 16.

Eph. 6. 20

Acts 4. 19.

fore him to prepare his way, make bold to strike, and to scatter those unruly throngs of men, who presse too neere upon his sacred person. We are the Messengers of Christ sent before hand with his royal proclamation of peace, to make roome in the hearts of men for him, and to open their everlasting doors, that this King of Glory may enter in. We may therefore boldly smite with the Rod of his mouch, we must cry aloud, and not spare; Pull downe mountainous lusts, subdue strong holds, take unto us iron pillars, and brasen wals, and faces of flint, to root up, to pull downe, to batter and destroy, not to teach only, but to command with all authority, and to commend our selves to every mans conscience in the sight of God. This use the Apostle maketh of the Glory of the Gospel, *seeing we have such Hope*, that is, seeing in this glorious Gospel we have the dispensation of a blessed Hope unto men; or the revelation of Christ, who is unto us the hope of Glory, or the assured confidence of doing excellent workes by the vertue of this so glorious a word; *πολλὴ τὴν ἐλευθερίαν ἔχοντες*, *We use great boldness or liberty of speech*; for why should hee who bringeth unto men glad tidings of glorious things which offereth unto them the blessed Hope of Eternall life, bee afraid or ashamed of his Office? Though Rome were the seate and that * Emperor the first Dedicator of the persecutions of the Church, yet even unto that place the Apostle was not ashamed to preach the Gospel of Christ, because it was the *Power of God unto salvation*. There is no shame in being a Saviour. And therefore it is both the honour and duty of the dispensers of the Gospel to *speake boldly*, as they *ought to speake*; and of the people to pray that that excellent Spirit might ever accompanie so glorious a message. This was the prayer of the Primitive Saints for the Apostles of Christ, *Grant unto thy servants, that with all Boldnesse they may speake thy Word*. And this duty lies

upon

upon us with an heaue necessitie.

For first, wee are dispensers of *all Gods counsell*, there must not be a Word which God hath commanded that wee should refuse to make known unto the people; for the things revealed are for them and their children. Thus we finde when the Angel of the Lord brought forth the Apostles out of prison, he gave them this command, *Go stand and speak in the Temple to the people all the words of this life*; and certainly some of these words will require boldnesse. When we lay the axe to the root of the tree, when we hew off mens very members, when we snatch them like brands out of the fire, when wee make them to see their own faces in the Law of liberty, the face of a guilty, and therefore cursed conscience, there will be need of much boldnesse. A Chirurgian who is to search an inveterate wound, and to cut off a putrified member, had not need to be faint-hearted, or bring a trembling hand to so great a worke.

Secondly, the severest message we are sent withall, and which men are most unwilling to hear, is for them expedient. No newes could be so unwelcome to the Apostles as to hear of Christs departure. *Because I have said these things, sorrow hath filled your heart; nevertheless I tell you the truth, it is expedient for you, that I goe away.* The first newes which we bring unto men is of Christs absence, of their false conceits, and presumptions of their being in him, of the distance and unacquaintance which is between them, of our fear of them and their condition, and in all this we are not their enemies, because wee tell them the truth. As it is our office to speake, so it is the peoples duty and profit to *hear all things which shall be told them of God; for all Scripture*, as well that which reproveth and correcteth, as that which teacheth and instructeth in righteousnesse, is profitable, and tends to the perfection of the Saints. *All his precepts concerning all things are right.* The contempt of one is virtually and

inter-

VERSE 2.

AG. 20. 27.

Josh. 8. 35.

Deut. 29. 29

Acts 5. 20

7. 1. 10. 1

1. 1. 10. 1

John 16. 6. 7.

Gal. 4. 16.

2 Tim. 3. 16. 17

Deut. 12. 28

Pl. 129. 122

Jam. 2. 10, 11

VERSE 2.

interpretatively in the constitution and preparation of heart, the violation of all, because they are all grounded upon the same divine authority, and directed unto the same saving ends: and therefore we ought not to pick and chuse either in the preaching or practising thereof.

Thirdly, We are to answer for the blood of the people if we prevaricate: if we let their sinnes alone, they will have a double edge, to kill them and us both, like the mutual embracements of two in a river, which is the meanes to drown them both. *Speak unto them, all that I command thee: be not dismayed at their faces, saith the Lord to his Prophet, lest I confound thee before them. If thou warn not the wicked from his evil way, that hee may live, he shall dye in his wickedness, thy bathfulness shall do him no good: but his blood will I require at thy hands.* Is it at all congruous that men should have boldnesse enough to declare their sinnes, to speak them, to proclaim them, to wear them, to glory in them, and that those Officers, who are sent for no other business, but in the Name and Authority of Almighty God, to fight against the corruptions of the world, should in the meane time hang downe the head and be tongue-tied? that men should have more boldnesse to destroy themselves, and to do Satans works, then we to save them, or to serve God?

Fourthly, We are to speak in the person of Christ, and in the vertue of his Spirit. We must speak as the Oracles of God, and with his words, *as if he himself did by us speak unto the people.* We must give manifestation of Christ speaking by us, that men may be convinced, that God is in us of a truth, and that we are full of power by his Spirit, that his Spirit setteth to his Seal, to authorize our commission, and to countenance our ministry: and therefore we must use judgement and might, that is, spiritual discretion, and inflexible constancy against

Jerem. 1. 17

Ezek. 3. 18

a 1 Pet. 4. 11

b Ezek. 3. 4

c 2 Cor. 5. 20

d 2 Cor. 13. 3

e 1 Cor. 14. 25

f Mich. 3. 8

against the sins of men (for these two are contrary to the two grand props of Satans Kingdome, which are *avaricia*, and *invidia*, his craftinesse, and his weapons of power:) & for where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty, ^h his Spirit will not be straightened, neither will the Lord keepe silence; hee that speaketh by the Spirit of Christ, must speake, though not in equality (which is impossible) yet in some similitude and proportion, as he spake, that is, as those that have ⁱ Authority and power committed to them for the edification of the Church.

Lastly, a partial, unsearching and unrepoving Minister is one of Gods curses and scourges against a place, the forerunner of a finall and feareful visitation. ^k The daies of visitation and recompence come, saith the Lord. The Prophet is a fool, The Spiritual man is mad for the multitude of thine iniquity, and the great hatred. ^l If a man walking in the spirit, and falsehood, that is, professing the worke of a spiritual man, and yet betraying his office; or in a false and lying spirit, prophesying of wine and strong drinke, that is, cherishing and encouraging sensual livers in their pernicious courses, he shall even be the Prophet of this people. And therefore when the Lord will punish with an extreme revenge the rebellion of a people against his Gospel, who judge themselves unworthy of so great a salvation, he either ^m removeth their Candle-sticke and taketh it away from them, or else ⁿ sealeth up the mouth of his Prophets, that they may be dumbe and reprove them no longer, and that they may not be purged any more from their sicknesses; or else insatuates their prophets, and suffereth Satan, to seduce them, and to be a lying Spirit in their mouthes, that he may destroy them, as we see in the ruine of *Abab*, and in the captivity of *Judah*.

Again, as the Ministers of the Gospel must use liberty, so must they likewise use *sincerity* in the dispensation thereof, because it is a Glorious Gospel. This likewise

VERSE 2

^h 2 Cor. 3. 17

^h Mich. 2. 7

ⁱ Mat. 7. 9

^k Hof. 9. 7

^l Mic. 2. 11

^m Revel. 2. 5

ⁿ Mat. 21. 41, 43.

23, 37, 38

¹ Thel. 2. 26

ⁿ Ez. k 3. 16.

Ez. k. 24. 13

^o 2 Kin. 22. 10

23

^p Jer. 4. 10

Jer. 14. 13

Jer. 23. 13, 33,

40

Lam. 2. 14

VERSE 2.

1 2 Cor. 4. 1, 2

2 Cor. 2. 17.

Ὡς δὲ κερτα-
λδοῖσιν ἢ λό-
γον ἀναμι-
γνῶντες τὸν
οὐκον υἱοῦ
τοῦ εὐαγγε-
λίου, καὶ
οὐκ ὄντες λόγους

ἐν τοῖς φρονε-
μασιν ἡ διανο-
μοῖς, ὡς
γὰρ, &c. Greg.

Naz. Orat. 1
& Isid. Pel. li. i
Epist. 169.

Ezek. 13. 10

Jer. 14. 13

Ephes. 4. 14

Col. 2. 4, 8.

Jer. 5. 31

Ἐν τῷ δεικνύ-
μεν ὅτι
δυνάμεθα.

1 Cor. 2. 4

Demonstratio
autem nihil re-
linquit aut in-
evidentia in re,
aut formidinis
in intellectu.

is the Apostles inference; for having spent a whole chapter in this one argument of the Glory of the Gospel, he presently concludeth, *Therefore seeing we have this ministry, that is, the dispensation of such a Gospel committed unto us; we faint not, but have renounced the hidden things of dishonesty; that is, as I conceive, the Arts of daubing, and palliating, and covering over unclean courses with plausible reasonings, and fleshly apologies, (which is the use of false Prophets;) not walking in craftiness, that is, not using humane sleights or cogging to carry men about with every winde of false doctrine (as sinners are very willing to be deceived, and love to have it as false Prophets say it is;) nor handling the Word of God deceitfully; that is, falsifying and adulterating it with corrupt glosses, and so tempering it to the palate of sinners, that the working and searching vertue thereof, whereby of it selfe it is apt to purge out and wrestle with the lusts of men, may be deadened, and so it may well consist with the power of lusts still (as Physicians use to qualifie and allay poyson by other correctives androsse ingredients, that it shall serve as an instrument to strengthen us, not extinguish life: or as immodest Poets may to tamper with the chaste expressions of Virgil or Homer, as by them both to notifie, and in corrupt minds to kindle unclean lustings;) but by manifestation of the Truth; that is, by such spirituall and perspicuous demonstrations, as under which there cannot subesse falsum, there can no falsity nor deceit lurke: commending our selves to every mans conscience in the sight of God; that is, working not the fancies, or humours, or fleshly conceits of men (which alwaies takes the part of sinne;) but their very consciences (which alwayes is on Gods side) to beare witnesse unto the Truth which we speake, to receive it not as the wit or learning of a man, but as the Word and wisdome of God; to acknowledge the conviction, the judicature, the penetration thereof,*
and

VERSE 2.

TIT. 2. 1, 7, 8

Clem. Alex in
Protrept.

and so to fall down upon their faces, and to glorifie God, and report that he is in us of a truth; and all this in the sight of God; that is, so handling the Word as that we may please and approve our selves to his eye, whose servants we are, and whose work we do. This is that which the Apostle calls, *ἀδιαφθορίαν, σεμνότητα, ἀπαθείαν λό-
φου ὕμνῳ, ὕψιαν ἑαυτὸν διδάσκαλον*. *Uncorruptnesse, gravity, sin-
cerity, soundnesse of doctrine*, such as the very adversaries themselves shall not be able to pick quarrels withall. or to speake against: we must not then make account to adorn the Gospel with our own inventions, or with superstructions of humane wit and fancy; though these things may to fleshly reason seem full of beauty, yet indeed they are but like the mingling of glasse beads with a chaine of Diamonds or of lime with pure and generous wine; they are indeed but *lasebra dedecoris*, lurking places for uncleane lusts to hide themselves under, or to escape away, while the corrupt fancies of men stand gazing at that which pleaseth them; as *Agg*, when he was gloriously arrayed, thought nothing of the bitterness of death; or *Sisera*, of the naile and the hammer, while he saw nothing but the milke and the butter. Some there are (not unlike *Praxiteles* the Painter, in *Clem. Alex.* who made the silly people worship the image of his strumpet, under the title and pretence of *Venus*) who by sleight and cunning craftinesse impose upon weake and incautelous hearers, the visions of their own fancy, the crude and unnourishing vapors of an empty wit (things infinitely unsuteable to the Majesty and seriousnessse of the foundation in the Gospel) for the indubitate truth of God in his Word; which (with reverence may it be spoken) is nothing else but to put the holy Prophets and Apostles into a fooles-coat: but however these men may please and puffe up themselves in the admiration of their owne winde, yet certaine it is, that the Gospel of Christ doth as much scorne humane contemperations,

VERSE 2.

2 Tim. 4.3

2 Cor. 4.3

1 Tim. 1.15

4.9, 10

Acts 17, 11

Mar. 2.10

Rom. 10.15

Rom. 1.10

Eph. 2.17

Col. 1.6

1 The. 1.5. & 2.1

Rom. 10.6, 7, 8

Jer. 26. 2

Esay 65.1

as a wall of mar ble doth a roose of firew, or the Sunne at noone doth the light of a candle. And therefore the palate of those who cannot away with the naked simplicity of the Gospel, without the blandishments of humane wit, who must needs have Quails to their Manna, is hereby discovered to be manifestly dis tempered with an itch of lust, and their eyes blinded by the God of this world.

Secondly, this glory of the Gospel may teach us what admiration and acception it should find amongst men, even as it doth with the blessed Angels themselves. This is a faithful saying, and worthy of all acception; Worthy to be received with all readinesse of minde, worthy to be gazed upon, like the Starre of the Wise-men, with exceeding great joy; worthy to be enamel'd in the Crownes of Princes, and to be written in the soule of every Christian with a beame of the Sunne; *Thus Jesus Christ came into the world to save sinners.* And indeed the faithful have ever found beauty in the feet of those that bring them glad tidings of this their King; that is, in the coming of this Word of Grace and Salvation unto them, which is the usual phrase of the Scripture (setting forth more abundantly the mercy of the Lord; who did not choose one fixed place for his Gospel to reside in, and unto which all Nations, who would have benefit by it, should take the painesto resort (as he did for the Jewes at Jerusalem) but hath made it an itinerary salvation, and hath sent it abroad to the very doores of men; who else would never have gone out of doores to seeke it.) What man in a sad and disconsolate estate would not spread wide open his heart and let out his spirits, to run upon the embraces of that man who was coming unto him with a message of more lovely and acceptable newes, than the very wishes of his heart could have framed to himselfe? When Joseph was sent for out of prison unto Pharaohs Court, when Jacob saw the Chariots which

The Glory of the Gospel.

209

VERSE 2

which were brought to carry him unto *Joseph* his sonne, how were they revived and comforted after their distresses? When *Caligula* the Emperor sent for *Agrippa* (the same which was afterwards smitten by the Angel) whom *Tiberius* had bound in chains, and cast into prison, caused him to change his garments, and cut his haire (it seems that long, and ugly haire was then the fashion of discontented Prisoners) and placed a Diademe on his head, made him Tetrarch of Iturea and Trachonitis, and Governour of *Judea*; and for his chaine of iron, gave him another of gold, of equall weight, as the Historian relateth, he saith that men were *ἐν δυνάμει καὶ ἐν ἰσχύϊ*, they could not beleieve so wonderful a change: for things of extraordinary goodnesse are very difficultly beleaved. When the Lord turned again the captivity of Sion, we were like them that dreame, the thing was so incredibly sutable to their desires, that it seemed rather the imaginary wish of a dreame, than a deliverance really acted: as *Peter*, when he was delivered out of prison, thought he had seen a vision; *Jacob* could not at first beleieve the news of the life and honour of *Joseph* his sonne; and the Disciples for very joy were not able to beleieve the Resurrection of Christ. Now what are the good tidings of the Gospel? which is a word of Salvation, which opens Prisons, and lets our captives, which brings our King untous, and makes us kings too, which gives us such a joy, as the whole World cannot rob us of? *Your joy shall no man take from you.* The joy which *Caligula* gave unto *Agrippa*, *Claudius* might have taken from him, as he did after from *Agrippa* his sonne, and though he did not, yet we see the Angel did. But the joy of the Gospel is unvariable, the Angels themselves, to whom one might think the joyes of men should seem but small, call it *χαρὰ μεγάλη*, a great joy, *Luk. 2. 10.* It is the joy of a treasure, infinitely more worth than all which a man hath besides. A joy of a triumphant Harlot, and of a victorious

Joseph. Antiq. lib. 18. cap. 8.

Psal. 126. 1.

*Act. 12. 9.
Gen. 45. 26.
Luk. 24. 41.*

The Glory of the Gospel.

VERSE 2.

Marth: 13. 44.

Esa: 9. 3. 4.

John 15. 11.

Rom: 15. 13.

James 1. 2.

Hebr: 11. 26.

Mic: 5. 5.

Rom: 5. 3.

Esa: 61. 2.

Baron. An. 31.

num. 78.

2 Cor: 6. 2.

Luke 19. 6.

Act. 21. 17.

Act. 17. 11.

Gal. 4. 14.

Mark 10. 29.

ous spoiles, wherein there is not onely an escape from dangerous hazard, but a large reward of peace and plenty. It is a *full joy*, there is no sorrow mingled with it, nay, it is *all joy*, and therefore there is nothing but sorrow without. All joy in it selfe, and all joy in the midst of opposition too. A joy in the heart like gold in the Mine, which turneth every thing about it into joy. Divers temptations take not away one scruple of it, no more then fire doth of gold, it is *all joy* still. *My brethren*, saith the Apostle, *count it all joy when you fall into divers temptations*. It turneth the reproaches of men into riches, nay, in the midst of all other tribulations it is our *Peace*, and our *Glory*: Therefore being so full of joy when once aright apprehended, needs must it likewise be worthy of *all acceptation* too. And therefore the Prophet calleth the time of the Gospel *tempus acceptabile*, the acceptable time or yeare of the Lord, which *Baronius* falsely understands of the first year of Christs preaching onely; since the Apostle useth the same phrase for the whole time of evangelical dispensation.

And indeed if we look into the Church, we shall see what worthy acceptation this Gospel hath found. *Zschem* made haste, and received Christ into his house gladly; so did the brethren at Jerusalem receive the Apostles; so did the men of Berea receive the Word, *ἐκ πάντων ἀποδύνας*, with all readinesse of minde, or forward affection; so did the Galatians receive Saint Paul with the honour of an Angel, yea, even as Christ Jesus himselfe (for indeed Christ and his Gospel go still together: the man in the Gospel sold all he had for it; The Saints did earnestly contend for it, and take the Kingdome of Heaven by violence. Though they suffered the losse of all for Christ, yet they counted godlinesse great gain still. In a shipwracke I throw my goods over-board, and get my life for a prey; in this case I come no loser to Heaven; *vita sibi merces*, a mans life is sufficient treasure in such an adventure.

The Glory of the Gospel.

211

VERSE 2.

adventure. We are all by nature *in maligno positi*, every man is a Sea, and a Tempest to himselfe, as impossible to escape ruine, as to put off himself. Now in the Gospel, Christ sheweth a man a way to get out of himselfe, and so to escape the Tempest, sheweth a way how with him he shall walk upon the Sea and not sinke, how he shall be in the World, and not of it, nor swallowed by it. O how willingly will the man who is convinced of his danger, cast off every thing which would presse him downe, and account it a plentiful deliverance to have his soule saved from such a tempest of wrath as was falling upon him? We see what hazards men runne to get temporary riches, to the bottom of rocks for diamonds, to the bowels of the earth for gold and silver: such affections have the Saints had towards the Gospel. If they must digge in Mines for Christ (as it was an usuall condemnation, *Christiani ad metalla*) they were most willing so to do, they had a treasure there which the Emperour knew not of, they had infinite more pretious wealth from thence than he: If they must fetch Christ in the fire, or wrestle for him, as for a pretious price, with the wild beasts of the earth; if they be not suffered to wear Christ, except they put off themselves, how willing, how thankful are they for so rich a bargaine? Look to your life said the Governour to Saint Cyprian that blessed Martyr, be not obstinate against your own safety, but advise well with your self, *fac quod tibi praeceptum est*, saith the Holy man, *in re tam justa nulla est consultatio*; Sir, you are my Judg, you are none of my counsellor, do the office which is committed to you, in so righteous a cause, there is no further need of consultation. Take pity upon your selfe, and sacrifice, and save your life, said the officers to Polycarpe; no saith the Martyr, this eighty six yeers have I served Christ, and he hath done me no harme; *I will not do what you perswade me.* That rich and blessed Virgine in Basill, who was for Christianitie

Baron. An. 161.
num 30.

Enseb. lib. 4.
hist. cap. 14.

VERSE 2

Scultet. Exercit. Evangel. lib. 2. cap. 5.

condemned to the fire, and was offered, if she would worship idols, to have her life and state safe restored unto her, was obstinate in her resolution, *Valeat vita, pereat pecunia*; I shall have more life in Christ, than in my selfe; all the Emperours, all the Physicians in the world cannot make my life, which I have in my self, so long to morrow, as it is to day; but in Christ my life is not onely an *abiding*, but an *abounding* life, I shall have more of that by losing mine own; my life in him is an *hidden life*, free from all injuries, and persecutions of men: I shall have more riches in him than in my self, even unsearchable riches, which can never be stolen away, because they can never be exhausted. It is possible for theeves to draw out the Mines of India, or to steal away the Sunne out of his Orbe, as for any humane violence to take away Christ from a man. Alike honourable was the answer of *Fredericke* the Elector of Saxony, who being prisoner to *Charles* the fifth, was promised enlargement and restitution of dignity, if he would come to Masse, *Summum in terris Dominum agnosco Casarem, in caelis Deum*. In all civill accomodations I am ready to yeeld unto *Cesar*, but for Heavenly things I have but one Master, and therefore I dare not serve two; Christ is more welcome to me in bonds, than the honours of *Cesar* without Christ. Such acceptation hath the Gospel found amongst renowned Worthies heretofore: and the like entertainment should we all give unto it, even prefferre it above our greatest glory, and, as the Thessalonians did, receive it with joy in the midst of afflictions, abide with Christ in his temptations, esteem his Gospel glorious as the stars are in the darknesse of the night, or as a Torch, which blazeth most when it is most shak-
ken.

This alone it is which proves our love to Christ to be *independant*, *sincere* and *incorrupt*, when we embrace his Gospel for it self, and can therein in any condition see
Christ

1 Thess: 1. 6.

Luk: 22. 28, 29

The Glory of the Gospel.

217

Christ full of glory, grace and truth. When a man can with Saint Paul not rejoice onely in the Name and profession of the Crosse of Christ, but in conformity and obedience thereunto, in that vertue of the Gospel which crucifies him unto the world, and the world unto him. In dayes of Peace and Religion, men may easily afford to magnifie the Gospel, because they get by it. The Persians, who (had the bloody decree held) would have been the slaughterers of the Jewes, yet when leave was given to that people to deliver themselves from the malice of Haman, even many of them turned Jewes themselves, because the fear of that people fell upon them. We may observe this affection in the woman of Samaria; the first reason why shee gave some heed to Christ, speaking of his water of life unto her, was, because she should thirst no more, nor come thither to draw. So long as Ephraim might have her work and her wages together, shee was contented to do God some service, like an Hissier which loveth to tread out the corne: that is, while shee hath no yoaik on her neck, no muzz'e on her mouth, while she is not put to plow, but to easie and pleasant service, she is willing to yeeld unto it. To note, that it is but base and hypocriticall obedience, which is supported by no other then present rewards. *They seek me daily, saith the Lord of the hypocrites among his people, and delight to know my wayes, as a nation that did righteousnessse.* But the end was, that they might have their own wills, and as it were, oblige God to reward them: and therefore as soon as God seemeth to neglect them and their services, they proudly expostulate with him, and even twit him with their workes, *wherefore have wee fasted, and thou seest not?* &c. This then is the proof of our sincere love unto Christ, which is not raised upon mercenary respects, when we can receive the Gospel with persecution, (a) Persecution is amongst Christs legacies, a part of the Churches portion, (b) and of Gods gifts unto her;

VERSES.

Gal. 6. 14.

ERh. 9. 2.

John 4. 14.

Hof. 10. 11.

Isaiah 58. 2, 3.

a Mark 10. 30.
b Phil. 1. 29

VERSE 2.

c 2 Tim. 3. 11

d Gal. 4. 19

e Zec. 3. 8

Isa. 8. 18

2 Kings 9. 11

Jer. 29. 26

Wild. 1. 6

her; (c) no man that will live godly can be without them. Even in *Abrahams* house which was at that time, if not the sole, yet the most glorious Church on the earth, there was a persecuter, and (d) *as it was then, so is it now*, saith the Apostle. The Saints of God ever have beene, and ever will be to the worlds end esteemed for (e) wonders, and markes, and mad-men, and proverbs of reproach. And hereby the Lord doth provide to make his Gospel more glorious, because he giveth men hearts to suffer scorn and reproach for it. *To receive the word in affliction, and yet with joy*, is an exemplary thing, which maketh the sound and glory of the Gospel to spread abroad. Now then, if persecution be thus an appendant to the Gospel, every man must resolve to receive it in some affliction, when he must be put to discard his wicked companies, to shake off his flattering and sharking lusts, to forsake his owne will and wayes, to runne a hazard of undeserved scorn, disreputation, and misconstructions in the world, and yet for all this to set an high price upon the precious truths of the Gospel still, is not this to receive the Word in much affliction? And surely til a man can resolve upon this conclusion, I am ready to be bound and to die for the Name of Jesus, I count not my life, much lesse my liberty, peace, credit, secular accommodations deare, so I may finish my course with joy; Lord, my will is no more mine, but it shall bee in all things subject unto thee; he can never give such entertainment to the word, as becometh so glorious a Gospel. All his seeming profession and acceptation, is but like the Gadarens courtesie in meeting of Christ, which was only to be rid of him, *Matth. 8. 34*

Lastly, we should from hence learn a further Christianitie, which is to adorne this glorious Gospel in an holy conversation. This use the Apostle every where makes of the Gospel of Christ, that wee should walke as becometh the Gospel, that we should in all things

adorn

Phi. 1. 27

Tit. 2. 10

adorn the doctrine of God our Saviour, that we should walk worthy of him who hath called us unto his Kingdom and glory, that we shew forth the vertues of him who hath called us out of darknesse into his marvellous light, that we should not receive so great a grace as the ministry of reconciliation in vaine, but that wee should walk fittingly to the holinesse and efficacie of so excellent a Rule as becometh a royal Nation, a people of glorie, a peculiar and selected inheritance, even zealous of good works. It was once the expostulation of *Nehemiah* with his enemies, Should such a man as I fly from such men as you? Such should be our expostulation with Satan and our owne lusts, Should such men as wee are, who have the Gospel of Christ for our Rule, conforme our selves unto another Law? Is not this the end why the Gospel is preached, that wee should live unto God? Doth it become the Sonne of a King to go in raggs, or to converse with mean and ignoble persons? Now by the Gospel we have that great honour and priviledge given us to be called *the Sonnes of God*; and shal we then walke as servants of Satan? Would any Prince endure to see the heire of his crown live in bondage to his own vassal and most hated enemy? Herein is the greatest glory of the Gospel above the Law, that it is a Law of life and libertie, a word which transformeth men into the Image of Christ, and maketh them such as it requirith them to be. So that to walke still according to the course of the world as we did before, is as much as in us lies, to make the Gospel as weake and unprofitable as the Law. *How do you say we are wise, saith the Prophet, and the Law of the Lord is with us? Certainly in vaine made he it, the pen of the Scribe is in vaine:* That is, the priviledge of having the oracles and ordinances of God committed unto us, will do us no more good, if wee walk unworthy of so great a Grace, than if those ordinances had never been written or revealed to men.

VERSE 2.

1 Thes. 2.12.

1 Pet. 2.9

2 Cor. 6.13

Gal. 6.16

Tit. 2.14

Neh. 6.11.

1 Pet. 4.3.6

Jer. 3.8

VERSE 2.

Col. 2.6

Col. 1.28

2 Tim. 3. 15,
16, 17
Pl. 119. 98, 99
Jer. 8. 9.

Gal. 6. 16

Here then it is needful to enquire, In what manner we are to adorn and set forth the glory of the Gospel? To this I answer, that the first and greatest honour we can do unto the Gospel, is, to set it up in our hearts, as our *only Rule* by which we are to walk, that we preferre it above all our own counsels, and venture not to mingle it with the wisdom and reasonings of the flesh; that we raise up our conversation unto it, and never bend it unto the crookednesse of our owne ends or rules. *As yee have received Christ Jesus the Lord, so walke ye in him*, saith the Apostle; that is, fashion your conversation to the doctrine of Christ, let that have the highest roome, and the over-ruling suffrage in your hearts. There is *all wisdom* in the Gospel, it is able to make men *wise unto Salvation*; that is, there is wisdom enough in it to compasse the uttermost and most difficult end. And what can the reasonings of the flesh contribute to that which was all wisdom before? and which can thoroughly furnish a man unto every good work? This glory Saint *Paul* (though a man of great learning, of strong intellectuals, of a working and stirring spirit, qualities very unapt to yeild and be silent) did, at the very first revelation thereof, give unto the Gospel, *Immediately*, saith hee, *I conversed not with flesh and blood*: I did not compare the Gospel of Christ with the principles of my carnal wisdom, I did not resolve to dispute against Gods grace, or to conforme unto this myserie no farther then the precepts of mine own reason, or the coexistence of mine owne secular ends and preferments would allow; but I captivated all my thoughts, and laid down all the weapons of the flesh at Christs feet, resting onely on this Word, as a treasure of wisdom, and yeelding up my whole heart to be in all things ordered by this rule. It is an horrible boldnesse in many men to wrest and torture, and distinguish the Gospel into all shapes for their owne lusts sake. As

we

VERSE 2.

we see what shifts men wil use, to make the way of life broader then it is, by looking upon it through their own multiplying glasses, what evasions and subterfuges sin will find out to escape by, when the letter of the Word passeth sore upon them. O how many sins might men escape, how wonderfully might they improve the image of Christ in their hearts; if they did with *David*, make the Law their counsellor, and weigh every action which they go about, those especially which they have any motions of reluctancie in the spirit of their mind unto. *Non in statera dolosa consuetudinum, sed in recta statera Scripturarum*: Not in the deceitfull balance of humane custome, but in the balance of the Sanctuary, the holy Scriptures! If they should seriously remember that they must alwaies walke in Christ, *Coloss. 2. 6.* make him the Rule, the Way, the End, the Judge, the Companion, the Assistant in all their works, that as the members of the body do nothing at all but in the fellowship of the body, and as they are thereunto applied by the same common soule which animates them all; so Christian men should do nothing but as parts of Christ, and as actuated by the same gracious Spirit which is in him. This is the meaning of our being Christians, and of that consent which in our Baptism we yeild unto the Covenant of Christ, that we will not follow nor be led by Satan, the world, or the flesh, that is, by that wildome which is earthly, sensual or divellish, but that we will be ordered by that Spirit of regeneration, the seal of whose Baptism we receive in our Sacramental washing. O then what is become of the Christianity of many men, who forget that they have been purged? who live as if they had never been baptized into Christ? who live as if they had never learned Christ? What a prodigie and contradiction is it, that that tongue which even now professed it selfe to be a Christian, and said Amen to a most clean and holy Prayer, should, like those beasts which

Psal. 119. 24.

Aug. contr. epi.
Parmen. l. 3. c. 1

VERSE 2. which *Seneca* speaketh of, which by but turning aside their head to some other spectacle, they do immediately forget the meat which they seemed most greedily to eat before, break forth presently into blasphemies, oathes, lies, revilings, clamors, obscenities, which are the very fumes and evidences of hell in the heart? That those hands which even now were reached forth to receive the sacred pledges, and most dreadful mysteries of salvation, which were even now employed in distributing almes to the members of Christ, or in helping to heave and lift up a prayer unto heaven, which seemed like the hands of *Ezekiel's* living creatures, to have wings of devotion over them, should suddenly have their wings melted off and fall down to covetous and cruel practices againe? that those feet which in the morning carried men into the Lords Sanctuary, and into the presence of Christ, should the same day turn the backs of the same men upon the Temple of the Lord, and carry them to stews and stages, the nurseries of uncleanness? that those eyes which even now seemed to have been nailed unto heaven, and to have contended with the tongue and the hand which should more earnestly have presented the prayers of the soule to God, should almost in the space of their owne twinkling, be filled with sparkles of uncleanness, gazing and glutting themselves upon vaine or adulterous objects? What is this but for men to renounce their Baptism, to tear off their seale, and dash out their subscription from the Covenant of Grace, to deny the Lord that bought them, to repent of their bargain which they had made for salvation, and really to dishonour that Gospell which they hypocritically professe? This then is the first honour which we can do unto the Gospel of Christ; when wee set it up in our hearts as a most adequate rule of all wisdom, and the alone principle of every action.

Secondly, we continue to honour the Gospel of Christ

The Glory of the Gospel.

219

Christ by walking in obedience thereunto as our perfect rule. First, in *Obedience of faith*, receiving it, and leaning upon it, laying hold on the covenant which is therein revealed, as on the onely hope which is set before us: for this is a great acknowledgment of the glory and praise of God, when we trust in him for salvation. Therefore the Apostle having shewed the Glory of Christ above *Moses*, maketh this principal use of it, that therefore we should *heare his voice, and take heed of an evill and unbelieving heart, in departing from him.* Wee, saith hee, are to the praise of Gods glory, who trust in Christ.

Secondly, in *obedience of life and holinesse*. When for the honour of the Gospel we can denie our selves, and dishonour our lusts, and part from all that we had before as from dung and drosse, and expresse the image of Christ in our conversations. (a) This is indeed the true learning of Christ, when wee shew forth his life in ours, when we walk as he also walked, when, as he was, so wee are in this world. when the same minde, judgement, affections are in us which were in Christ. Thus the faithful are said to honour God, when they sanctifie his Sabbath, and to glorifie him when they bring forth much fruit.

Thirdly, wee honour the Gospel of Christ by *Constancy and continuance* in our faith and obedience thereunto; for standing fast, or persisting immoveably in our course without sorrow or repentance, is an argument of the excellencie of the Gospel. (b) *Walk*, saith the Apostle, as becometh the Gospel — that I may heare of your affaires, that you stand fast in one spirit. (c) Lusts ever bring inconstancie with them, and make the soule like weary and distempered bodies, never well in any posture or condition; wicked men flie like bees from one flower to another, from one vanity to another, can never find enough in any to satiate the endlesse intemperancy of un-

VERSE 2.

Heb. 3. 12

Ephes. 1. 12

4 Eph. 4. 10, 22

1 John 2. 6.

1 John 4. 17.

Phil 2. 5

1 Cor. 7. 17.

John 15. 8

6 Phil 1. 27

6 Non stans uno loco visus, sed mobilita & inter se dissidentia tumultuantur, pellunt invicem & fugantur. Sen. de Beact. l. i. c. 16

V E R S E 2

d) Δείξτε ὅτι
τῷ αὐτίκῃ
ὅπως μεμίσση-
ται τὰς παρὰ
δευματίας
αὐτῆς δεσμο-
τεύσας. ὡς ὁ
Ἰσραὴλ ἡγεῖται.
Orat. 40.

Rom. 2. 23, 24

unnatural desires: onely the Gospel, being spiritually apprehended, hath treasures enough for the soul to rest in, and to seek no farther. And therefore falling away from the truth, power, or purity of the Gospel, is said to expose Christ to shame, and to crucifie him again. For as in (d) Baptism, when we renounce sinne, and betake our selves to Christ, we do as it were, expose sinne unto publick infamie, and nail it on the Crosse of Christ. So when we revolt from Christ unto sin againe, and in our hearts turn back unto *Egypt*, and thrust him from us, we doe then put him to shame againe, as if he were either in his power deficient, or unfaithful in those promises which before we pretended to rely upon. If Israel, as they consulted, should likewise actually have rebelled against *Moses*, and returned in body as well as in heart unto *Egypt* againe, what a scorn would it have wrought in that proud nation, that their vassals should voluntarily resume their thraldome after so many boasts and appearances of deliverance? If a man should relinquish the service of some Noble person, and apply himself unto some sordid master for subsistence, would not the mouths of men be quickly open, or their minds jealous to suspect, that however such a man carry an high name, and there be great expectations from attending on him, yet in truth he is but a dry master, whom his own servants do so publicly dishonour? So, when any men turn Apostates from the power and profession of the Gospel of Christ, presently wicked men are apt to blaspheme, and to conceive desperate prejudices against our high and holy calling. If any man make a boast of the Law, and yet break it, he dishonoureth God the more; for (saith the Apostle) *The Name of God is blasphemed among the Gentiles through you, as it is written.* So then constancie in Christs service giveth him the glory of an honorable Master, and his Law of a Royal Law, * putteth to silence the ignorance of those foolish men, who lie in wait

* 1 Pet. 2. 12.
16.

wait

The glory of the Gospel.

221

W^hat to take advantages that they may blaspheme the Name of God, and his Doctrine.

Fourthly, the Gospel of Christ is honoured by the unity of the Spirit, and concurrent judgments and affections of men towards it. When all the sincere professors thereof, do unanimously strive together, and earnestly contend for it, when all that ever have beene or are acquainted therewith do glorifie it with their suffrages, and subscription, *Nemo omnes, neminem omnes fefelleret*, it must needs be a glorious Gospel, if all that ever looked on it do so conclude: Nothing was ever able to deceive all men, neither did so many ever combine to deceive, others. When the Philosophers severally strove for the precedence of their severall sects, and every man after his own order, gave the next place unto Plato, it was undoubtedly concluded that his was the most excellent, because after their own prejudice, and personal respects, it was honoured by the equall suffrages of all the rest. How much more must the Gospel needs be glorious, which hath the joynt attestation of Angels, and all Holy men since the world began to honour it withall? Therefore when the Apostle proveth the greatnesse of this Heavenly mystery, he useth a word which importeth the consent of men, *ἡ ἐκ κοινῆς, without any doubt, or by an universal confession. Great is the mystrie of Godlinesse.* Doth it not much set forth the glory of a Law, that there should be so much wisdom, power, equity, majesty, beauty in the face of it, that every true subject in a Realm should concur in a constant and uniforme love and obedience to it? Let us therefore expresse the Glory of the Gospel, not only in our joynt confessions, but in our united obedience thereunto, and in our unanimous zeale and contention for it, in our brotherly affections and compassions to one another thereby: for the schismes and disaffections of Christians bring much dishonour upon their holy profession, which in all their miscarriages doth

ever

VERSE 2.

2 Cor. 6. 3.

1 Tim: 6. 1.

Phil: 1. 27.

Jud: w. 3.

1 Tim: 3. 16.

VERSE 2

ever by occasion of the unreasonablenesse of wicked men suffer together with them. Therefore the Apostle from the unity of Christ in himselfe concludeth that such he should be in his members too. *Is Christ divided?* hath he divers opinions, or hath he the Truth of God in respect of persons? such as he is such should you be likewise, lest by your contentions you seeme to make another Christ, or another Gospel, than that which you have received.

Fifthly, the Gospel of Christ is honoured in our *studying of it*, and digging after it in our serious and painfull enquiries into the mysteries of it. Saint Paul despised all other knowledge, and shook off every weight that he might presse forward with the more unwearied affections towards so excellent a treasure. Surely if men had the spirit of the Apostle, or of those blessed Angels which desire to pry into the Gospel of Christ, they would not mispend so much pretious time in frothy and fruitlesse studies, nor waste away that lampe of reason in their bosomes, in empty, and unnourishing blazes; but would set more houres apart to look into the patent of their salvation (which is the Booke of God) and to acquaint themselves with Christ before hand, that when they come into his presence they may have the entertainment of friends, and not of strangers. Men that intend to travell into forraigne Kingdomes with any advantage to their parts, or improvement of their experience, do before-hand season and prepare themselves with the language, with some topographicall observations of the Countrey, with some generall notions of the ingeny, manners, formes, civilities, entertainments of the natives there, do delight to converse with those men who are best learned in these or the like particulars. Surely we all professe a journey to Heaven, a pilgrimage in this present World, to have our conversation now where we look to have our everlasting abode with the Lord here.

The glory of the Gospel.

223

VERSE 2.

Hereafter. Now in the Gospel of Christ we have as it were a map, a topographicall delineation of those glorious mansions which are there prepared for the Church, we have a taste and description of the manners of that people, we have some rudiments in the Heavenly language, in one word, we have abundantly enough, not onely to prepare us for it, but to enflame all the desires of our soules unto it, even as exiles or captives desire to return to their native countrey. Now then if we no way regard to study it, or acquaint our selves with it, if we seem to desire the sight of Christ in Heaven, and when we may every day have a most blessed view of his face in the Glasse of his Gospel, we turne away our eyes, and regard it not, we do as good as proclaime to all the world, that either our hopes of Heaven are very slender, or our care thereof little or none at all. And this I take for a most undoubted truth, that there is so much of the knowledge, grace, and Spirit of Christ, and through him of the Father in the holy Scriptures (and those only are the things which make Heaven to be the home and the hope of men) as that whosoever neglecteth the study of them, and suffereth the Scriptures to lie by him as a sealed book, would be every whit as unwilling if Heaven gates were wide open unto him, to relinquish his portion in the earth, and to spend his time in the fruition, or contemplation of that glorious Countrey.

Lastly, we honour the Gospel when in our greatest distresses we make it our *Altar of Refuge*, our door of escape, the ground of all our hope and comfort, the only anchor to stay our soules in any spiritual Tempest, the onely staffe to leane upon in our greatest darknesse. What ever other carnal comforts men may for a time rejoyce in, they will all prove but as a fire of sparkes, or as a blaze of thornes, which can yeeld no solid or abiding light unto the soule. When sinners in Sion beginne once to be afraid, and to be surprized with the fearfulness of a guilty

VERSE 2

Esa: 33.14 24

Matt: 9. 2.

guilty soule, when the afflicted conscience shall put that dreadfull question in the Prophet to it self, How can I dwell with devouring fire? How can I dwell with everlasting burnings? there will no other answer allay the scorching terrour thereof, but that in the end of the same Chapter, *The people that dwell therein shall be forgiven their iniquity.* A man may as soone drinke up the water of the Sea with sponges, or remove mountaines with one of his fingers, as be able to draine out these close and incorporated sorrowes which together with sinne do soake through the whole substance of the soule, with vaine company, worldly imployments, or youthful pleasures. All these do but respite them for a time, that they may returne the stronger. But if thou wilt indeed be comforted, sue out thy pardon, sue to the Court of mercy which is erected in the Gospel; This was our Saviours argument to the man that was sicke of the Palsie. *Sonne be of good cheere, thy sinnes be forgiven thee.* There is no worldly affliction goeth closer to the life of a man than sicknesse, and yet as in the midst of laughter the heart of a wicked man is sorrowful, because it is still under the guilt of sin, so in the midst of paine and sorrow, the heart of a godly man may be cheerful, because his sinns are forgiven.

To conclude this point, we may for our better encouragement in so necessary a duty lay together these considerations: First in point of *honour* we should learne to walk as becommeth the Gospel, for the Gospel is a Christians Glory, and therefore ought to be preserved in his heart, as his chiefest priviledge. The Spirit of God will not endure to have Holy things prophaned as if they were common or unclean. *Belshazzar* converted the consecrated Vessels of the Temple into instruments of luxury and intemperance; but the Lord tempered his Wine with dregges, and made them proove unto him as cups of trembling, and astonishment. *Herod* polluted the

the sepulchres of the Saints with a sacrilegious search of treasures presumed to have been there hidden, and God made fire rise out of the earth to devour the over-busie searchers. *Antiochus* ransacked the Temple of the Lord; *Heliodorus* emptied the Treasures of their consecrated monies; *Pompey* defiled the Sabbath and the Sanctuary; *Crassus* robb'd the house of God of ten thousand talents. But inquire into the event of these insolencies, and we shall find that true then, of which latter ages have given many examples, and are still likely to give more, that stollen bread hath gravel in it to choak those that devour it; that ruine is ever the child of sacrilege, that mischief settech a period to the lives and designs of prophane men. Now then if the Lord were thus jealous for the types of his Gospel, how, think we, can he endure to see the Gospel it self dishonoured by an unsuitable profession, or the bloud of the Covenant trampled under foot, as if it were a common or unclean thing? In the contempt of the Gospel, there is more dishonour done unto every person of the blessed Trinity, than can be by any other sin. An undervaluing of the *Fathers wisdom*, that great mystery and counsel of redemption which was hidden from former ages: and what an indignity is it unto him, for a man to shut out the light of the Sun, that so he may enjoy that pittifull benefit of darkness, to gaze upon the false glittering of rotten wood, or of earthly slime, the deceit where of, would be by the true light discovered? An undervaluing of his *wonderful love*, as if he had put himself unto a needless compassion, and might have kept it still in his own bosome. A scorne unto the Sonne of God, when we suffer him to stand at our doores with his locks wet with the dew of heaven, to put his finger into the hole of the lock, as if he desired to steal an entrance upon the soul; to empty, to humble, to deny himself, to suffer the wrongs of men, and the

VERSA 225

Joseph. Antiq.
lib. 16. c. 11.
2 Mac. 3. 5.

Tacit. Hist. lib. 5
Joseph. Antiq.
lib. 12. cap. 13.

VERSE 2.

the wrath of God, and after all this to have that precious blood which was squeezed out with such woofull agonies, counted no other than the blood of a common malefactor, nor that sacred body which was thus broken, discerned from the bodies of the thieves which were crucified with him. An indignitie beyond all apprehension to the spirit of Grace, when wee suffer him to waite daily at our Bethesda, our houses of mercy; and all in vaine, to spend his sacred breath in the ministerie of reconciliation, in doubling and redoubling his requests unto our souls, that we would be contented to bee saved; and we shall harden our hearts, and stop our eares, and set up the pride and stoutnesse of our owne reasonings, till wee doe even wearie him and chide him away from us. Now this is a certaine rule, God will not lose any honour by mens sins; if they refuse to give him the glory of his mercy, he will shew the glory of his power and justice, in treading down the proud enemies of Christ under his feet. As they that honour him shall be honoured; so they who cast any disgrace upon his truth and covenant, shall be sure to meet with shame and dishonour at the last.

Secondly, to avoid *Scandall*. The Gospel is the light of a nation: And sinnes in the light as they are committed with more impudence, so likewise with more offence. An offence or scandall tending unto sin in misguiding the weak, in heartning and confirming the obdurate, in opening the mouthes of adversaries to revile our holy profession; and a scandall tending unto sorrow in wounding the hearts of the godly, and vexing their righteous spirits with a filthy conversation.

Thirdly, wee should learn to walk as becommeth the Gospel, even in respect to the *state*, for the Gospel is the foundation of true peace and tranquillity in a common weale, and those who shew forth the power thereof, as it were, Lions about the Throne of their King.

The Glory of the Gospell.

227

By righteousness the Throne is established, but sin is a reproach unto any people. One Joseph in Egypt is a storehouse to all the kingdoms; one Elisha an armie of chariots and of horsemen unto Israel; one Moses a fence to keep out an inundation of wrath which was breaking in upon the people; one Paul an haven, an anchor, a deliverance to all that were in the ship with him. And now *Si stella cadunt, ventus sequensur*: If the starres fall, we must needs look for tempests to ensue; if the salt be insatuated, we cannot look that any thing should be long preserved. If Christians live as if they had no Gospell, or as if they had another Gospell; what can wee expect but that God should either plague us or forsake us; either send his judgements, or curse his blessings?

Lastly, the Gospell makes sin more filthy, if it doe not purge it; as a rapen in the hand of a Ghost makes him seem more gastly than he was before. Sweet ointment causeth ranke and strong bodies to smell worse than they did before. So the sweet savour of the Gospell maketh the sins of men more noisome and odious in the nostrils of the Almighty. And therefore wee see what a fearfull doom the Apostle pronounceth against those, who having tasted of the good Spirit of God, and been illightened and in some sort affected with his grace, doe yet afterwards fall away, even an impossibilitie of repentance or renovation. From which place, perversly wrested; though the Novatians of old did gather a desperate and uncomfortable conclusion; that sin committed after regeneration was absolutely unpardonable (to avoide the danger of which damnable and damning doctrine, some have boldly questioned both the Author and authenticalnes of that Epistle) yet, all these inferences being denied, wee learn from thence this plain observation, That precedent Illumination from the Gospell of Christ, doth tend much to the aggravation of these

VERSE 2V

Prov. 16. 12.
& 20. 28. &
25. 5.

Arist. Prob. sect.
16. qu. 25.

Qui hircos redolent, fœdior olent cum se unguentaverint.
Arist. Prob.
Heb. 6. 4. 7.
Heb. 10. 26.

Vid Sixt. Senens. biblioth. l. 7. Melch. Canloc. Theolog. l. 2. c. 10. Greg. Tholos de Rep. lib. 12. ca. 7.

VERSE 2.

those sins which are committed against it. And therefore in all these considerations, we should labour to walk worthy of so glorious a Gospel, and of so great a salvation.

Thus have we at large spoken of the *Rod of Christ's strength*, as it is *Insigne regium*, or *Sceptrum Majestatis*, an Ensign and Rod of Majesty: we are now to speak a little of it as it is *Pedum pastorale*, an Episcopal Rod, which denoteth much heedfulness and tender care. This is the Precept which the Apostle giveth unto the

Act 20.28.

Pastors of the Church, that they should *ὑποτάξαι τὸ ποίμνιον*. Take special heed to all the flock over which the holy Ghost had made them Overseers. And the Apostle again reckoneth

1 Tim. 3.2.

Vigilancy or care over the flock, amongst the principal characters of a Bishop: and he professeth of himself, that there did daily lie upon him, *μέγιστον πένος τῶν ἐκκλησιῶν*, The Care of all the Churches: And this consideration

2 Cor. 11. 28.

affordeth us another note out of the words, namely, That Christ in the ministry of his Gospel, and dispensation of his spirit, is full of care and tenderness towards his Church. This Christ maketh one main point of opposition between himself and hirelings, that these

Joh. 10. 12, 13.

Joh. 17. 11, 12.

care not for the flock, but suffer the Woolf to come, and to scatter them while they fly away; whereas he keepeth them, that none may be lost, and prayeth unto the Father to keep them through his own name. The Lord committed the Church unto Christ as their Head, gave them into his hands, not as an ordinary gift, wherein he did relinquish his own interest in them, or care of them

1 Pet. 5. 7.

(for he careth for them still) but as a blessed *depositum* entrusted them with him, as the choicest of his Jewels, as the most precious casket amongst all the treasures of the Creation, that he should polish, preserve, present them faultless, and without spot before the presence of his glory at the last day. And for this purpose he gave him a *Commandment* of the greatest care and tenderness

Mal. 3. 17.

Jud. v. 24.

Eph. 5. 26, 27.

that

Christ's care of his Church

229

that ever the world knew, that he should lay downe his life for his sheepe, and should lose nothing of all that was given him, but should raise it up at the last day. So that now want of care, or compassion of Christ towards his Church, would be an argument of unfaithfulnessse; If he had not been a mercifull high Priest, neither could he have been faithfull to him that appointed him; for he was appointed to be mercifull, and was by the Spirit of God filled with most tender affections, and qualified with an heart fuller of compassion than the Sea is of waters, that he might commiserate the distresses of his people and take care of their salvations.

Notably doth this Care of Christ shew it selfe: First in the apportioning and measuring forth to every one his due *dimensum*, and in the midst of those infinite occasions and exigencies of his severall members in providing such particular passages of his Word, as may bee thereunto most exactly suitable; for this sheweth that his Care reacheth unto particular men. It is the duty of a faithfull Bishop, *ἐπισκοπῶν* to make such a difference between men and so to divide or distribute the Word aright, as that every one may have the portion which is due unto him: some are but Lambs in Christs focke, young, tender, weak, easily offended or affrighted; others sheep, growne up to more strength and maturity; some in his garner are but Commin seed, others Fitches, and some harder corne, some can but beare a little Rosh, others a greater staffe or sheaf, and some the pressure of a Cart wheele, that which doth but cleane some, would batter and breake others into pieces: some are great *with young* in the pangs of a loaded conscience, in the travaile under some sore affliction, or in the throwes of a bitter repentance, as it were in fits of breeding, or new forming of Church in their soules, and these he leadeth with a gentle hand: Others are, as it were, *new born*, past their paines, but yet very

VERSE 2.

John 10. 18.
Iohn 6. 39.
Heb. 2. 17.

2 Tim. 2. 15.

Iud. v. 22. 23.

Iohn 20. 15.
16.

Esaï. 23. 27.
28.

Esaï. 40. 11.

VERSE 2.

Esa. 66. 11.

Esa. 61. 1, 2, 3.

Esa. 42. 3.
Mat. 12. 20.

tender, Weak, and fearfull; and these he gathers with his arme, and carries in his bosome, shewes them that his care doth not onely reach unto the least of his kingdome, but that his compassions are most enlarged to those that are too weake to helpe themselves, that hee hath brefts of consolation to satisfie and delight with abundance the smallest infant of his Kingdome. Some are broken-hearted, and those he bindeth; some are captives, to those hee proclaime liberty; some are Mourners in Sion, and for them hee hath beautie, and oile of joy, and garments of praise: some are bruized reeds, whom every curse or commination is able to crush; and some are smoaking flax, whom every temptation is able to discourage, and yet even these doth hee so carefully tend, and furnish with such proportionable supplies of his Spirit of Grace, as makes that seede and sparkle of holinesse, which hee began in them, get up above all their owne feares, or their enemies machinations, and grow from a *judgement of truth*, and sincerity (as it is called by the Prophet) unto a *judgement of victory* and perfection, as it is turned by the Evangelist. In one word, some are strong and others are weake; the strong hee seedeth, the weake hee cureth, the strong hee confirmeth, the weake he restoreth, hee hath trials for the strong to exercise their graces, and hee hath cordials for the weak to strengthen theirs. According unto the severall estates, and unto the secret demands of each members condition; so doth the Care of Christ severally shew himselfe towards the same in his word: there is provision for any want, medicine for any disease, comforts for any distresse, promises for any faith, answers to any doubt, directions in any difficulty, weapons against any temptation, preservatives against any sinne, restoratives against lapse; garments to cover my nakednesse, meat to satisfie my hunger, physicke to cure my diseases; armour to protect my Person, & treasure

treasure to provide for my Posterity. If I am rich, I have there the wisdom of God to instruct me; and if I am poor, I have there the obligations of God to enrich me: If I am honourable, I have there the sight of my sinnes to make me vile; and rules of moderation to make me humble: If I am of low degree, I have there the communion and consanguinity of Christ, the participation of the divine nature, the adoption of God the Father to make me noble. If I am learned, I have there a law of charity to order it unto edification: and if I am unlearned, I have there a Spirit which searcheth the deep things of God which can give wisdom unto the simple, which can reveale secrets unto babes, which can comand light to shine out of darknesse, which can give the light of the knowledge of the glory, fulness, and love of God in the face of Iesus Christ, which can make me, though ignorant of all other things, to learne Christ, in whom there is more wisdom, more various and admirable curiosity, more filling and plentiful satisfaction, more proportion to the boundlesse desires of a soule once rectified, more fruit and salvation (which should be the end of every Christian mans learning) than in all other knowledge which either past or present ages can afford. In one word every where and in all things I am there taught how to want, and how to abound, and how to doe all things through Christ that strengthens me. A Christian can be set in no estate, wherein the abundant Care of Christ over him is not in the Gospell wonderfully magnified. And commonly in the greatest straits he sheweth the greatest care, as waters runne strongest in the narrowest passages: when we walk in darknesse and have no light, when we seek water and there is none, and our tongue faileth for thirst, then is his fittest time to helpe us, and then is our fittest time to stay upon him. Israel were delivered by *miracles* of mercy from their Egyptian bondage, and in the wilderness conducted by a *miraculous* presence, and fed with Angels food.

VERSE 2

Marke, 16. 7.
*Vocatur ex no-
 mine, ne despo-
 raret ex nega-
 tione.* Greg
 Mag.

Isaac was upon the Altar, and then in the mount was the Lord seene, and his mercy stepped in betwene the knife and the sacrifice: *Jacob* in great feare of his brother *Esau*, and then comforted by prevailing with an Angell which was stronger then *Esau*. *Peter* in forest distresse for denying Christ, and hee the first man to whom Christ sent news of his Resurrection; *Paul* in the ship visited by an Angell. *Peter* in prison delivered by an Angell. The distressed woman at Christ's Sepulcher comforted by an Angell. Such as the extremities of the Saints are, such is Christ's care for their deliverances.

Ezek 16. 6.

And this care is further commended, that it proceedeth solely from the *grace and compassion of Christ*: there is no affection naturally in us to desire it, there is no vertue in us to deserve it: when we were in our blood, well pleased in our owne pollution, hee doubled his goodness, and used a kinde of violence and importunity of mercy to make us live, when we did not seeke after him. when wee did not so much as aske whether hee were fit to be sought, when we were aliens from his Covenant, and strangers to his Name, hee even then multiplied his invitations unto us, *I said, behold me, behold mee, unto a people that were not called by my Name*. When wee were weake, full of impotency; when we were sinners, full of antipathy, when wee were enemies, full of obstinacy and rebellion; when wee cared not for him, but turned our backs, and stopped our eares, and suffered him to throw away in vaine so many Sermons, so many Sacraments, so many mercies, so many afflictions upon us; when we cared not for our selves, *No man repented, or said, What have I done?* even then did hee magnifie his compassion towards us; hee cared for us, when we neglected our selves, and despised him; he bestowed his mercy not onely upon the unthankfull, but upon the injurious.

Esaï. 65, 1.

Rom: 5: 6, 8, 10

But then a little compassion is enough for those that

had

Christs care of his Church.

233

VERSE 2.

had deserved none, for those that had provoked scorne and displeasure against themselves: but herein is the care and tenderneſſe of Chriſt abundantly magnified, that it hath in it all the ingredients of a moſt ſoveraigne mercy, that nothing more could have been done, than he hath done for us. *First* for the foundation and originall of all mercy there is in him an overflowing of love, without ſtint or meaſure, a turning of heart, a rousing and ſounding of bowels, a love which ſurpaſſeth all knowledge, which is as much beyond the thoughts or comprehenſions, as it is above the merits of men.

Secondly, there is a *ſtudie and inquiſitivenesse* how to doe good, a debating within himſelf, a conſulting and projecting how to ſhew mercy, an arguing, as it were, of his Grace with mans ſinne, and his owne ſeverity. *How ſhall I give thee up Ephraim? How ſhall I deliver thee Iſrael? How ſhall I make thee as Admah? How ſhall I ſet thee at Zebaim? Mine heart is turned within mee, my repentings are kindled together.* True it is, thou haſt been unto mee, as the Rulers of Sodome, and as the people of Gomorrah. But I ſhall be unto thee, as I have been unto them? Am I not God and not man? ſhall I change my Covenant, becauſe thou haſt multiplied thy backſlidings? the Lord uſeth ſuch humane expreſſions of his proceedings with men, as if their ſinnes had put him to a ſtand, and brought him to difficulties in ſhewing mercy. *I ſaid, how ſhall I put thee amongſt the children, and give thee a pleaſant Land? &c.* Thy caſe is very deſperate, and thou haſt ſtopped up the courſes of my mercy towards thy ſelfe; How then ſhall I make good my reſolutions of compaſſion towards thoſe that reject and nullifie it to themſelves. Surely there is no way but one, to over-rule the hearts of obſtinate ſinners, that they may not turne away any more. *Thou ſhalt call mee, my Father,* that is, I will put filiall affections, awfull thoughts, conſtant reſolutions into thy heart, and thou ſhalt not

turne

Eſai. 5. 4.

Hof. 11. 8,
Jer. 31. 20.
Ephes. 3. 19.
Eſai 55. 9.
Jer. 29. 11.

Hof. 11. 8.
Eſai. 1. 10,

Jer. 3. 19.

VERSE 2.

Ier. 9. 7.

turne away from mee, *I will melt them and trie them,* saith the Lord, *for how shall I doe for the daughter of my people?* The Lord setteth himselfe to study and contrive mercy for his people, that as they set up their sinnes, as it were, in pride to pose his Covenant ; so he gathereth together his thoughts of mercy, as it were, to conquer their sinnes.

Lament. 3. 22.
13.

Apo. 13. 34.

2 Tim. 2. 19.

Psal. 89. 2.

Mal. 3. 6.

Esa. 64. 5.

Hcb. 13. 8.

Thirdly, there is *constancie and continuance* in this his Care. *His mercy endureth, his compassions faile not, but are renewed every morning.* And therefore the mercies of *David*, that is, of Christ, for so he is called, or the mercies of the Covenant made with *David*, are called *Sure mercies*, they have a foundation, the everlasting love and counsell of God upon which they are built, they have many seales by which they are confirmed, the faithfulness, the immutability, and the oath of God : If there were not continuance in his mercies, if he were not the same yesterday, and to day, and for ever in his truth and fidelity to his Church If hee should change and turne from us, as oft as we forsake him, if he should leave us in the hands of our own counsell, and not afford us such dayly supplies of his Spirit, as might support us against the ruinous disposition of our owne nature, wee should be children of wrath every day anew. But here in doth the abundant care of Christ in the Gospell declare it selfe unto us, that though we are *wormes* in our selves, full of weakness, and of earthly affections, yet God hath a *right hand of righteousness*, which can uphold us ; that though wee are bent to back-sliding, yet *he is God and not man*, unchangeable in his Covenant with the Persons, almighty in his power and mercy towards the sinnes of men, both to cover them with his righteousness, and to cure them by his Spirit, both to forgive for the time past, and to heale and prevent back slidings for the time to come.

Hos. 11. 7. 11.

Fourthly, that he might be fit for so meane and humble

Christs care of his Church.

235

VERSE 2.

Phil. 2. 7. 8.

Gal. 4. 5.

Rom. 8. 3.
2 Cor. 8. 9.

ble a service, there was a lessening and emptying of himselfe; he was contented to be subject to his owne Law, to be the childe of his owne creature, to take upon himselfe not the similitude onely, but the infirmities of sinfull flesh, to descend from his throne, and to put on rags, in one word, *to become poore for us, that wee through his povertie might be made rich.* Amongst men, many will bee willing to shew so much mercy as will consist with their state and greatnesse, and may tend to beget a further distance, and to magnifie their heighth and honour in the minds of men; but when it comes to the exigent, that a man must debase himself to doe good unto another, that his compassion will be to a miserable man no benefit, except he suffer ignominie, and undergoe a servile condition for him, and doe, as it were, change habits with the man whom he pities; what region of the earth will afford a man who will freely make his owne honour to be the price of his brothers redemption? yet this is the manner of Christs Care unto us, who though hee were the Lord of Glory, the brightnesse of his Fathers Majestie, and the expresse Image of his Person, did yet humble himselfe to endure shame, and the contradiction of sinners, that he might be the Author and Finisher of our faith.

Fifthly, There was not onely an humbling or metaphoricall emptying of himselfe, in that he made himselfe of no reputation; but there was likewise a *real and proper emptying of himselfe*, hee therein testified his wonderfull care of the businesses of man, that for them he put himselfe to the greatest expence, and to the exhausting of a richer treasure, than any either heaven or earth could afford besides: ye were not redeemed, saith the Apostle, with corruptible things, as silver and gold from your vaine conversation, *but with the precious blood of Christ, as of a Lambe without blemish, and without spot*: That which no man will bestow upon himselfe, and that
which

VERSE 2.

which was in nature, and might justly in love have been nearest to Christ himselfe, even the soule in his body, and the blood in his veines, he was contented to make a sacrifice for them, who powred it out as the blood of a malefactor.

Sixtly, besides this great price which hee paid to his Father for us, he hath opened another treasure of his *Grace and Spirit*, out of which hee affordeth us daily supplies and putteth into our hands, as it were, an heavenly stocke, for the better negotiating and improvement of our salvation. Hee setteth up his Spirit in our hearts, thereby conversing and communing with us, teaching us the trade of the Citize s of heaven, and of laying up treasures there, where our finall abode must be, of having our conversation and commerce with innumerable companies of Angels, and with the spirits of just men made perfect, and with all that generall assembly or Church of the first borne, which is inrolled in heaven.

Lastly, to all this hee addeth *Preparations and provisions* for the future for us, he doth not onely give, but hee prepareth things for those that love him, and what-ever is wanting now, he will make it up unto us in the riches of his glory. It was for our expediency that he left the Church on earth (in regard of his carnall presence) and went unto his Father againe. Hee was not beholden to change of place for his owne glory, for his heaven was within him as a fountaine, and indeed it is his presence which maketh heaven to be the place of glory; therefore Saint Paul desired to depart and to be with Christ, (noting that it is not heaven, but Christs presence which is the glory of the Saints .) Therefore, I say it was for us, that he went to heaven againe; for their sakes, saith hee, *I sanctifie my selfe*; it is expedient for you that I goe away Expedient, to seale and secure our full and finall redemption unto us; for as the Leviticall Priest entred not into the holiest of all without blood, so neither did Christ

1. Cor. 2. 9.
Phil. 4. 19.

Phil. 1. 23.
John 17, 19.
John 16, 7.

Christ into heaven without making satisfaction; he first obtained eternall redemption for us, and then he entred into the place, and expedient to prepare a place for us, that the glory which is given to him, he may give unto us, that being raised up together, we may likewise *sit together* with him in heavenly places; for when the head is crowned, the whole body is invested with royall honour. He by the vertue of his Ascension opened the kingdom of heaven for all beleivers; even the Fathers before Christ entred not in without respect unto that consummate redemption which he was in the fullness of time to accomplish for his Church. As a man may be admitted into an actuall possession of land, onely in the vertue of covenants, and under the intuition of a payment to be afterwards performed. Thus we see in how many things the abundant Care of Christ doth shew it selfe towards the Church.

And as there are therein all the particulars of a tender care, so by the Gospell likewise, doe all the fruits and benefites thereof redound unto the faithfull. First, in the Gospell he *feedeth* and strengtheneth them, even in the presence of their enemies he prepareth them a table, and feedeth them with his rod, and according to their coming out of Egypt he sheweth unto them marvellous things. And therefore our Saviour calleth his Gospell, *The childrens bread*. It is that which quickeneth, which strengtheneth them, which maketh them fruitfull in spirituall workes.

Secondly. He *upholdeth* them from fainting; if their strength at any time faile, hee *leadeth them gently*, and *teacheth them to goe*. As Jacob led on his cattel and his children softly, according as they were able to endure: so Christ doth lead out his flock, and hold his children by the hand, and teach them to goe, and draweth them *with the cords of a man*, that is, with meek and gentle institution, such as men use towards their children, and
not

VERSE 2.

Heb. 9. 12.

Iohn 14. 2. 3.

Iohn 17. 22.

Ephes. 2. 6.

Psal. 23. 5.

Mica. 7. 13. 15.

Ezek. 34. 14.

22.

Matth. 15. 26.

Phil. 4. 12.

Heb. 6. 12.

Iohn 15. 4.

Gen. 33. 14.

Iohn 10. 3.

Psal. 78. 52.

Esay. 63. 13.

Deut. 1. 31.

Esay. 10. 11.

Esay 41. 13.

Hos. 11. 3. 4.

Deut. 32. 11

12.

VERSE 2.

Hos. 2. 14. 15.

Hos. 14. 4.

Iohn 6. 60.

Matth. 25. 24.

Mal. 3. 14. 15

Job 21. 14 15

Ezek. 18. 25

Ier. 11. 10.

Act. 7. 39.

Psal. 14. 3.

*Animalia qua**dam, ne inveni-**ri possint, vesti-**gia sua circa cu-**bile ipsum con-**fundunt. Senec.**epist. 68.**Idios uvelas**en Coras Exes.**Clem. Alex.*

Gal. 1. 7.

2 Pet. 3. 16.

Ezek. 34. 16.

Gal. 6. 1.

Ezek. 47. 12.

not to their beasts, and *with bands of love*. As an Eagle fluttereth over her young, and spreadeth abroad her wings and taketh them and beareth them on her wings: so doth the Lord in his Gospel sweetly lead on and institute the faithfull unto strength and saluation: he dealeth with them as a compassionate nurse with a tender infant, condescendeth to their strength and capacitie: when we stumble, he keepeth us, when we fall he raiseth us; when we faint, he beareth us up in his armes; when wee grow weary of well-doing, the Gospell is full of encouragements to hearten us, full of spirit to revive us, full of promises to establish us, full of beautie to entice us; when we seem to be in a wilderness, a maze, where there is no issue, nor view of deliverance, even there he openeth a door of hope, and allureth, and speaketh comfortably unto us.

Thirdly, he *healeth our diseases*, our corruptions, our back-slidings; easily are the best of us misled out of the right way, drawn and enticed away by our own lusts, driven away by the temptations of Satan, the frowns or follies of the world, posselt with carnall prejudices against the wayes of God, as if they were grievous, unprofitable, and unequall wayes, apt to take every pretence to flinch away, and steal from the eye of God; apt to turne aside into every diverticle which a carnall reason, and a crooked heart can frame unto it selfe; for a corrupt heart is like a wilde beast, that loveth *confusa vestigia*, to have intricacies and windings in his holes, it cannot away with straight paths, but loveth to wrie and pervert the rule of life. In these cases it is the care and office of Christ to gather that which was scattered; to seek that which was lost, to bring again that which was driven away, to bind up that which was broken, to strengthen that which was sick, and to restore by his Spirit of meekness those which are overtaken with a fault; his Gospell is like the trees of the

Sanctuary.

Christ's Care of his Church.

239

sanctuary, not for meat onely, but for medicine too.

Fourthly, as he healeth our diseases, and giveth us strength, so in the mids of enemies and dangers he removeth our feares, and giveth us comfort and refreshment. *h* *I will make with them, saith he, a Covenant of peace, and I will cause evill beasts to cease out of the Land, and they shall dwell safely in the wilderness, and sleep in the woods.* *i* When the Assyrian shall be in our Land, and shall tread in our Palaces, then shall he raise up seven shepherds and eight principall men, namely, the Ministers of his Gospell, in abundance, to establish the hearts of his people against all dangers. This is that *Shilo* who should bring tranquillitie and peace into the Church, even when the Scepter should depart from *Inda*. When the heart is full of doubts and distresses, disquieted with the fear of Gods displeasure, accused by the Law, pursued by the adversary, and condemned by it self, then doth he still the raging of the sea, and command the evill spirit to be dumbe; then *k* doth he wipe away teares from the conscience, and refresh it with living waters, even with the sweet communion of his Spirit, and with the abundance of his graces.

Lastly, hee keepeth a continnall watch over us by his spirituall presence and protection: As *l* *Jacob* testified his great care for the good of *Laban*, that the drought consumed him by day, and the frost by night, and that sleep departed from his eyes; so doth the Lord commend his care towards the Church, in that he is the keeper or the watch-man of *Israel*, which doth neither slumber nor sleep. His presence is with his people to guide them in their pilgrimage, and unto which they have daily recourse for comfort and establishment. In that great tempest when *Christ* was asleep in the ship, his Disciples awaked him and expostulated with him, *Muster earnest thou not that we perish?* But when he had rebuked the wind and the sea, he then rebuked them likewise, hee had

VERSES 2

h Ezck 34. 25.

i Mica. 5. 5.

* Scaltet, exercit. Evang. l. 1. cap. 4.

k Revel. 7. 17.

l Gen. 31. 40.

Psal. 121. 4.

Exod. 33. 14.

Marke. 4. 38. 40.

VERSE 2.

Dent. 25. 5.
Ruth. 3. 9. 4. 5.
Levit. 25. 25.

Heb. 2. 11. 17.

Esay. 8. 18.

Esay 49. 15.
Esay 40. 11.
Math. 23. 37.
Esay. 66. 11.
John 20. 17.
Prov. 17. 17.
Rom. 7. 4.
Ephes. 5. 25
32.

had another storm of fear and unbelief to calme in their hearts: who could not see him in his providence watching over them, when his body slept.

The grounds of this great Care, which Christ in his Gospell testifieth towards his Church, are these: First, *He is our kinsman*; there is affinitie in blood, and therefore a naturall care and tenderness in affection: wee know amongst the Jewes when a woman had buried an husband without fruit of his body, the next of the kindred was to take care of her, and to raise up the name of the dead upon his inheritance: And if any man had waxen poor, and sold any of his possession, the neereft kinsman was to have the first option in the recovery and redemption of it. And from hence the Apostle argueth to prove the mercifulnesse and fidelitie of Christ, in sanctifying or bringing many soules unto glory (for I take those phrases to be in that place equivalent) because he *was not ashamed to call us brethren, but was made in all things like unto us*. And we may observe, that in the Scripture he hath almost all the relations of consanguinitie, to note that his care is unversall and of all sorts. He is a *Father*. Behold, I and the children which thou hast given me: and the care of a father is to govern, to nourish, to instruct, to lay up for his children. He is as a *mother*, he carrieth his young ones in his bosome, he getteth them as a hen her chickens, he milketh unto them out of the breasts of consolation. And thus he hath a care of indulgence and compassion. He is a *Brother*. Goe to my brethren and say unto them, I ascend unto my Father, and your Father, and unto my God, and your God. And the care of a brother is to counsell, advise, and comfort. A brother is born for adversity. Lastly, he is a *Husband*; ye are married to him who is raised from the dead; and that word compriseth all care, to love, to cherish, to instruct, to maintain, to protect, to compassionate, to adorn, to communicate both his secrets and himself,

Christs care of his Church.

241

VERSE 4.

himself. A father may maintain his child, but hee cannot suckle it; a mother may give it a brest, but shee cannot ordinarily provide it a portion; a brother can give counsell, but he cannot give himself unto his brother: A husband may comfort his wife, but 't becomes him not to correct her. There is no degree of nearness that hath power enough to answer all the offices of love, but in one point or other it will be defective. Therefore Christ is set forth unto us *under all relations of blood and unitie*; to note that there can no case or condition of the Church be supposed, wherein the care of Christ shall be impotent, or deficient towards it, wherein hee is not able to correct, to nourish, to instruct, to counsell, to comfort, to provide for it.

Secondly, He is our *Companion* in sufferings, he himself suffered, and was tempted; and this the Apostle maketh a main ground of his care towards us, and of our confidence in him; wee have not an High Priest which cannot be touched with a feeling of our infirmities, but was in *all points tempted as we are*, onely without sin; and therefore hee is able to succour those that are tempted, and to take compassion on those that are tempted, because, hee was compassed with such infirmities, as were much less grievous than the weight of sin.

Thirdly, He is our *Head*, and so is One with us in a neerer relation than that of affinity, in a relation of Unitie, for hee and his members make but *one Christ*. And being Head; he is the seat of Care, and the Fountain of Influencies into the rest of the Body; all the Wisdome, Spirits, Senses, which are in the head, are there placed as in a Watch-Tower, or Counsell-Chamber, to consult and provide for the good of the whole; the Eye seeth, the Eare heareth, the Tongue speaketh, the Fancie worketh, the Memorie retaineth, for the welfare of the other members, and they have *all the same care one for another*.

Heb. 4. 15.

Heb. 2. 17.

Heb. 5. 2.

1 Cor. 12. 25.

R

Fourthly,

VERSE 2.

1 Joh. 2. 2.

Heb. 3. 2.

Joh. 6. 37.

Esaï. 55. 8.

Esaï. 50. 10.

Fourthly, He is *our Advocate*, and Mediatour; he is the onely practicer in the Court of Heaven, and therefore hee must needs be full of the businesses of his Church. It is his office to dispatch the affairs of those that come unto him, and crave his favour and intercession to debate their causes, and he is both faithfull and mercifull in his place; and besides, furnished with such an unmeasurable unction of Spirit, and vast abilities to transact all the businesses of his Church, that whosoever commeth unto him for his counsell and intercession, *he will in no wise cast them out*, and refuse their cause: And this is one great assurance wee may take comfort in, that bee our matters never so foule and unexcusable in themselves, yet the very entertaining him of our counsell, and the leaning upon his wisdom, power, fidelity, and mercy to expedite our businesses, to compassionate our estate, and to rescue us from our own demerits, doth, as it were, alker the property of the cause, and produce a clean contrary issue to that which the evidence of the thing in tryall would of it self have created. And as we may observe that men of extraordinarie abilities in the Law, delight to wrestle with some difficult business, and to shew their learning in clearing matters of greatest intricacie, and perplexitie before; so doth Christ esteem himself most honoured, and the vertue and wisdom of his Cross magnified, when in cases of forest extremitie, of most hideous guilt, of most black and uncomfortable darkness of soule, which pose not onely the presumptions, but the hope, faith, conjectures, thoughts, contrivances, which the hearts of men can even in wishes make to themselves for mercy, they do yet trust in him *whose thoughts are infinitely above their thoughts, and whose ways above their wayes: Who is there among you that feareth the Lord, that obeyeth the voyce of his servants, that walketh in darkenes and hath no light? let him trust in the name of the Lord, and stay upon his God.* When the Soul can goe unto Christ

Christs care of his Church.

243

VERSE 2

Christ with such complaints and acknowledgements, as these; Lord, when I examine my cause by mine own conscience and judgment of it, I cannot but give it over as utterly desperate, and beyond cure, my bones are dried, my hope is cut off, I am utterly lost; my sinnes and my sorrows are so heaue, that they have broken my spirit all to pieces, and there is no sound part in me: But Lord, I beleue that thou knowest a way to make dead bones live, that thy thoughts and ways are above mine, that thou knowest thine own thoughts of peace and mercy, though I cannot comprehend them; that thy riches are unsearchable, that thy love is above humane knowledg, that thy peace passeth all created understandings, that though I am the greatest of all sinners, and feel enough in my self, to sink me as low as *Judas* into hell, yet thou hast not left mee without patternes of all long-suffering, of thy royall power in enduring, and in forgiving sinnes. And now, Lord, though thou afford me no light, though thou beset me with terrours; though thou make me to possess the sinnes of my youth; yet I still desire to fear thy Name, to walk in thy way, to wait upon thy counsell; I know there is not in men or Angels so much wisdom, compassion, or fidelity, as in thee, and therefore if I must perish, I will perish at thy feet, I will starve under thy table, I will be turned away and rejected by thee, who hast promised to cast away none that come unto thee; I have tryed all wayes, and I here resolve to rest, and to look no further; thou that hast kept such a sinner as I am out of hell thus long, canst by the same power keep me out for ever; upon thy wisdom and compassion (who canst make dried bones to flourish like an herbe, and broken bones to rejoyce and sing) I cast the whole weight of my guilty spirit into thy bosom, I emptie all the feares, cares, and requests of my distracted and sinking soule: I say, when a man can thus powre out himself unto Christ, hee esteemeth the

Ezek. 37. 3.
Jer. 29. 11.
Ephes. 3. 8. 19.

1 Tim. 1. 16.

Esa. 66. 14.
Psal. 51. 8.
1 Pet. 5. 7.

VERSE 2.

price and power of his blood most highly honoured when men beleeve in him against reason and above hope, and beyond the experience, or apprehensions they have of mercy; for Christ loveth to shew the greatness of his skill in the salvation of a *Manasseh*, a *Mary Magdalen*, a crucified Theef, a persecutor and injurious blasphemer, in giving life unto them that nayled him to his Cross; the more desperate the disease, the more honourable the cure.

Joh. 17. 6.

Fifthly, Hee is our *Purchaser*, our Proprietary, wee belong unto him by *grant* from the Father, *Thine they were, and thou gavest them unto me*; and by *payment* from him unto the Father, *ye are bought with a price*. There

1 Cor. 6. 20.

is no good that concerne the Church, that he hath not fully paid for with his own precious blood: And Christ will not die in vain, He will take order for the accomplishing of that redemption which himself hath merited. And this is the greatest argument of his care and fidelitie, that he is not as a servant, but as a Lord; and his care is over *His own house*. An ordinary advocate is faithfull onely *ratione officii*, because the dotie of his office requireth it; but the businesses which hee manageth, come not close unto his heart, because he hath no personall interest in them: but Christ is faithfull, not as *Moses*, or a servant onely, but *ratione Domini* as Lord in his own house; so that the affairs of the Church concern him in as near a right, as they concern the Church her self; so that in his office of intercession he pleadeth his *own causes* with his Father, and in the miscarriages of them, himself should lose that which was infinitely more pretious than any thing in the world besides, even the price and merit of his own blood. These are the grounds of the great care of Christ towards his people.

Heb. 3. 6.

And from hence wee should learn faith and dependance on Christ in all our necessities, because we are under

Christ's Care of his Church.

245

der the protection and provision of him who careth for us and is able to helpe us. A right judgement of God in Christ, and in his Gospell of salvation, will wonderfully strengthen the faith of men. *Paul* was not ashamed of persecutions, because he knew whom he had beleev'd; hee doubted neither of his care or power, and therefore hee committed the keeping of his soul unto him against the last day, and therefore when all forsooke him, he stood to the truth, *because the Lord forsooke him not.* The reason why men trust in themselves, or their friends, is, because they are assured of their care and good-will to helpe them: But if men did compare the affections of Christ to other succours, they would rather choose to build their hopes and assurances on him. This consideration of the care and the power of God, made the three Children at a point against the edict of an idolatrous King, *Our God is able to deliver us, and he will deliver us:* And this made *Abraham* at a point to offer his son without staggering, because he relied upon the promise and the power of God, who was able to raise him from the dead; from whence, in a sort, he had received him before, namely, from a dead body, and from a barren wombe. And *this is the ground of all diffidence, that men consider not the power and the care of God towards them, but conceive of him as if he had forgotten to be gracious, as if he had cast them out of his sight, as if he had given over his thoughts of them, and thus naked them feare second causes, and seeke unto things which cannot profit.* And therefore the Lord suffereth second causes to goe crosse, to faile and disappoint a man, because he loveth to be glorified by our dependance on his all-sufficiency and protection. Hee suffereth friends to faile; to be off and on, promises to be uncermaine, assurances to vanish, projections and frames of business to bee shattered, that men may know how to trust him; for man being impotent in himselfe, must needs have

VERSE 2.

2 Tim. I. 12.

2 Tim. 4. 16, 17
18

Dan 3. 16, 17.
Hebr. 11. 17 19
Rom. 4. 20, 21.

Ier. 17. 5 8.

VERSE 2.

Hebr. 11. 6.
Psal. 73. 28.
1 Pet. 5. 7.

something without himselfe to subsist upon. Now when a man findeth the creatures to be deceitfull, and second causes vain, and considereth that God is *I Am*, a most certain rewarder of those that diligently seek him, then the soule findeth it good to draw neer to God, to live under his fidelitie, and to cast all its care on him, because he careth for it.

And indeed *a right judgment of God will help us to employ our faith in any condition*. In wealth men are apt to trust in their abundance, to stand upon their mountaine and to say, I shall never be moved. But now in this estate, if a man conceive aright of God, that it is he who giveth strength to be rich, and who giveth riches strength to doe us good, that he can blast the greatest estate with an imperceptible consumption, and in the midst of a mans sufficiencie make him be in straits, that hee can embitter all with his sore displeasure, and not suffer the floor nor the winepress to feed him: In great wisdom and deep counsels, if a man consider that the counsell of the Lord shall stand, and that he can turne the wisdom of oracles into foolishness, and catch the wise in their own craftiness. In great provisions of worldly strength, and humane combinations, if he consider that God can take off the wheelles, and amaze the phantasies, and dissipate the affections, and melt the spirits, and way lay the enterprises of the hugest hosts of men; that he can arme flies, and lice, and dust, and wind, and starres and every small unexpected contingencie against the strongest opposition; it must needs make him let his rest, and hang his confidencies and assurances upon a higher principle. Again, in povertie and the extremest straits which a man can be in, if he consider that God is a God as well of the valleys as of the hills, that he will be seen in the mount, when his people are under the sword, and upon the Altar; that the Lord knoweth the days of the upright, and will satisfie them

in

Christ Care of his Church.

247

VERSE 2.

in the time of famine, that when the young Lyons famish for hunger, (they which live not by the fruits on the earth, but by their prey, they which can feed of the dead bodies of those other creatures whom a famine had devoured) yet even then he can provide abundantly for his; that when things are marvellous unto us, then they are easie unto him; that when they are impossible unto us, then they are possible with him; that he can lead in a wilderness, and feed with an unknown and an unsuspected bread; that when the light of the Sun and the Moon shall faile, he can be an everlasting light and glory to his people; that *as a Father*, so he pitieth; and *as an heavenly Father*, so he knoweth, and can supplie all our needs; that when we are without any wisdom to disappoint, or strength to withstand the confederacies of men, when they come with chariots of iron, and walls of brass, even then the eyes of the Lord run to and fro to shew himselfe valiant in the behalfe of those that walke uprightly; that he can then order some accident, produce some engine, discover some way to extricate and to cleer all; then will a man learn to be carefull or distracted in nothing, but in every thing by prayer and supplication, with thanksgiving, make his request known unto him who is at hand, and who careth for him

The like may be said of mens spirituall condition; when men despaire, as *Cain*, that their sinne is greater than can be forgiven; the onely ground is, because they judge not aright of God in Christ, they look not on him in his Gospel, as a God that careth for them, they doe not leane upon the staffe of his strength. Despaire is an affection growing out of the sense of sin and wrath, as it is, *malum arduum, instans, & ineluctabile*, an evill too heavie to be borne, and yet impossible to be removed. All victory ariseth either out of an inward power of our own, or by the assistance of forrein power, which is

Zech. 8. 6.

Marke 10. 27

Psal. 136. 16.

Ier. 2. 6.

Amos 2. 10.

Deut. 8. 15. 16.

Esay 60. 19.

Matth. 6. 32.

2 Chron. 16. 9

Phil. 4. 6.

VERSE 27.

more than our owne. Now then when we despaire because of sin, this cometh first from the consideration of our owne everlasting disability to breake thorow sin by our owne strength; and this is a good despaire, which helpeth to drive men unto Christ:

Secondly, it cometh from a misconceiving either of the Power or Care of those which might assist us: sometimes from the mis-judging of Gods Power, for the forgiveness of sins is an act of omnipotencie; and therefore when the Lord proclaimeth himselfe a forgiver of iniquitie, transgression, and sin, he introduceth it with his titles of power, *The Lord, the Lord God, Gracious and mercifull, &c.* To pardon malefactors is a power and royaltie which belongeth onely unto Princes. There is much strength required in bearing burdens, and therefore patience, especially towards sinners, is an act of power, and impatiencie ever a signe of impotencie. And therefore* the weakest affections are ever most revengefull; children, old men, sicke or indigent persons, are ever most subject to anger, and least able to concoct an injury: so that to conceive sin greater than can be forgiven, is to mis-judge the omnipotencie of God: but ordinarily despaire proceedeth from the mis-judging of Gods affection and good will towards men; the foole conceives of him, as of one that hath utterly cast off all care or respect towards it. This is an error of Gods benevolence, and the latitude of his wercy, and height of his thoughts towards sinners. Hee hath declared himselfe willing that all men should be saved, he hath set forth examples of the compasse of his long-suffering, his invitations run in generall termes, that no man may dare to preoccupate damnation; but looke unto God, as to one that careth for his soul. Let a mans sins be never so crimson, and his continuance therein never so obdurate (I speak this for the prevention of despaire, not for the encouragement of security or hardnesse) yet as soone as hee is willing to

turne,

Exod. 34. 6.

* *αὐτοῖς ποιοῦν*
ἡ δὲ ἐργασία αὐτοῦ
ἡ ἐργασία οὐρανίου
καὶ τῆς γῆς
καὶ τῆς θαλάσσης
καὶ πάντων τῶν κτίστων
 Arist. Rhet. 1.
 2. c. 2.

2 Pet. 3. 9.
 1 John. 5. 34.
 1 Tim. 1. 16.

The Gospell is Christs owne Power.

249

VERSE 2.

turne, God is willing to save; as soone as he hath an heart to attend, God hath a tongue to speak salvation unto him. Wee see then the way to trust in Christ is to look upon him as the Bishop of our souls, as the Officer of our peace, as one that careth and provideth for us, as one that hath promised to save to the uttermost, to give supplies of his Spirit, and Grace in time of need, to give us daily bread, and life in abundance, to bee with us alwayes to the end of the world, never to faile us nor forsake us.

And we may hereby learne our dutie one to another, to put on the affections of members, and the minde of Christ, in compassionating, considering and seeking the good of one another, in bearing one anothers burthens, in pleasing not our selves, but our neighbour for his edification, for even Christ pleased not himselfe; that man cannot live in honour, nor dye in comfort, who liveth only to himselfe, and doth not by his prayers, compassions, and supplies imitate Christ, and interest himselfe in the good of his brethren.

Now the ground of all this power, majestic, and mercie of the Gospell is here set forth unto us in two words. First, it is the strength of Christ; Secondly, it is sent by God himselfe. The Lord shall send the Rod of Thy strength out of Sion.

Here then we may first note, That the Gospell is Christs owne Power and strength, and the Power of God his Father, by whom it is sent abroad; So the Apostle calls it, The a Power of God unto Salvation, and the demonstration of the Spirit, and of Power; that our faith should not stand in the wisdom of men, but in the Power of God: Therefore in one place we are said to be taught of God, and in another to be taught of Christ; in one place it is called the a Gospel of the blessed God, and in another the Gospel of Christ, to note that whatsoever things the Father doth in his Church, the same

Heb. 7. 25.
Heb. 4. 16.
Ioh. 10. 10.
Heb. 13. 9.
Col. 3. 12, 13.
Eph. 5. 2.
Phil. 2. 4. 5.
Rom. 14. 7. 15.
15. 2, 3.

a Rom. 1. 16.
1 Cor. 2. 4, 5.

b Ioh. 6. 45.
c Eph. 4. 20, 21.
d 1 Tim. 1. 11.
e Rom. 15. 19.
f Ioh. 5. 19.

VERSE 2.

g 2 Cor. 5. 19.

h 1oh. 1. 18.

1oh. 14. 17.

i 1 Cor. 1. 2 3

2 Cor. 4. 5

Col. 1. 28.

k Heb. 12. 25

Eph. 2. 17.

l 1 Pet. 3. 19.

m 1 Ioh. 5. 25. 26

1oh. 10. 27. 28.

n 2 Cor. 1. 24

o 1oh. 13. 13.

14.

p 2 Cor. 4. 5

q 1 Pet. 5. 3 4

1oh. 21. 15.

r 2 Cor. 5. 19.

Eph. 3. 2.

2 Tim. 1. 14.

s 1 Pet. 4. 11.

1 Cor. 4. 1.

2 Cor. 5. 19. 20

the Son doth also, and that the Father doth not make known his will of mercie, but by his Son; & that as in the Son he did reconcile the world unto himself; so in the Son hee did h^e reveale himselfe unto the world. No man hath seen the Father at any time, but the Son, and he to whom the Son shall reveale him. Christ is both the Matter and the Author of the Gospel. As in the worke of our R^edemption he was both the sacrifice, and the Priest to offer, and the Altar to sanctifie it: So in the dispensation of the Gospell, Christ is both the Sermon, and the Preacher, and the Power, which giveth blessing unto all. He is the Sermon, *wee preach Christ crucified*, saith the Apostle, *wee preach not our selves, but Christ Iesus the Lord*. And he is the Preacher, *See that yee refuse not him that speaketh-- Hee came, and preached peace to those afar off, and to those that were nigh*. And lastly, he is the Power which enliveneth his own word; *The dead shall heare the voice of the Son of man, and they that heare shall live; for as the Father hath life in himselfe, so hath he given to the Son to have life in himselfe. My sheep heare my voyce, and I know them, and they follow me, and I give unto them eternall life, &c.* He is the Lord of your faith, we are but the Helpers of your joy. He is the Master in the Church, we are but your servants for Iesus sake, He is the chiefe Shepheard, the Lord of the sheep, the sheep are his own; we are but his Depositories, entrusted with the ministerie of reconciliation, unto us is committed the dispensation of the Grace of God. So then the Word is his; but the service ours.

From whence both the Ministers of the Word, and they which heare it may learne their severall duties. First, we should learn to speak as the Oracles of God, as the Servants and Stewards of a higher Master, whose Word it is which wee preach, and whose Church it is which we serve. We should therefore doe his worke, as men

The Gospel is Christs owne Power.

251

VERSE 2.

men that are set in his stead, preach him, and not our selves. There can bee no greater sacrilege in the world, than to put our owne image upon the Ordinances of Christ, than to make another Gospell than we have received. *Saint Paul* durst not *please men*, because hee was the servant of Christ; neither durst he *preach himselfe*, because hee was the servant of the Church. For hereby men doe even justle Christ out of his owne throne, and, as it were, snatch the Scepter of his kingdom out of his owne hand, boldly intruding upon that sacred and uncommunicable dignitie which the Father hath given to his Son onely, which is to bee the Author of his Gospell, and the totall and adequate Object of all Evangelicall Preaching. This sacrilege of selfe-preaching is committed three manner of wayes: First, when men make themselves the Authors of their owne preaching, when they preach their owne inventions, and make their owne braines the seminaries and forges of a new faith; when they so glosse the pure Word of God as that withall they poison and pervert it. This is that which the Prophet calleth *lying visions, and dreames of mens owne hearts*, which *Saint Peter* calls *perverting*, or making crooked the rule of faith, and *Saint Paul* the huckstering, adulterating, and using the *Word of God deceitfully*. Which putteth mee in minde of a speech in the Prophet, *The Prophet is the snare of a fowler in all his wayes*. Birds wee know use to be caught with the same corne wherewith they are usually fed, but then it is either adulterated with some venomous mixture which may intoxicate the bird, or else put into a ginne which shall imprison it; and such were the carnall preachers in the Prophets and in *Saint Pauls* time, who turned the truth of Christ into a snare, that by that meanes they might *bring the Church into bondage*. The occasions and originals of this perverse humour are, first, without men, the seducements of Satan, unto which by the

Gal. 1. 10.

Ezek. 3. 3, 9, 17

Ier. 14. 14

Ier. 23. 15.

1 Pet. 3. 16.

1 Cor. 2. 17.

1 Cor. 4. 2.

Hos. 9. 8.

Gal. 2. 4.

Mic. 3. 5, 6.

1 King 22. 23.

VERSE 2.

2 Theſ. 2. 10. 12
 a Ma'or omni-
 um Hæretico-
 rum ſuperbia.
 Aug. de Ger.
 contr. Manich.
 l. 2. cap. 8 &
 Confef. li. 12. c.
 24
 b Theodor. Eccle.
 Hiſtor. l. 1 c. 2.
 vid. Petr.
 Erod. Decret.
 l. 1. Tit. 5. ſect.
 12.

* Tertull. con.
 Marc. l. 4. c. 6.
 & 43. & li. 5.
 c. 4.

the juſt ſeverity of God, they are ſometimes given over for the puniſhment of their own and others ſinnes. Secondly, within them (upon which the other is grounded) as a pride of wit, joyned with ambition and impatiencie of repulſe in vaſte deſires, which hath anciently been the ground of many heresies, and ſchiſmes: Nothing hath ever been more dangerous to the Church of God than greatneſs of parts unſanctified and unallaid with the love of truth, and the Grace of Chriſt. Secondly, b envie againſt the paines and eſtimation of thoſe that are faithfull. This was one of the originalls of Ari-
 us his curſed heresie, his envie againſt Alexander the good biſhop of Alexandria, as Theodoret reports. Thirdly, impatiencie of the ſpiritualneſs and ſimplicitie of the holy Scriptures, which is ever joyned with the predominance of ſome carnall luſt, whereby the conſcience is notoriously waſted or defiled. He that hath once put away a good conſcience, and doth not deſire truth in order and reſpect to that, that thereby his conſcience may be lightened, purified, and kept even towards God, will without much adoꝛ make ſhipwreck of his faith, and change the truth for any thriving error. And this impatiencie of the Spirit of truth in the Scriptures, is that which cauſed * hereticks of old to reject ſome parts, and to adde more to the Canon of ſacred Scriptures, and in theſe dayes to ſuper-adde traditions and apocryphall acceſſions thereunto; and in thoſe that are pure and on all ſides confeſſed to uſe ſuch licentious and carnall gloſſes, as may hale the Scripture to the countenancing and conformitie of their luſts and prejudices rather than to the rectifying of their own hearts by the Rule of Chriſt.

Secondly, men preach themſelves when they make themſelves the Object of their preaching, when they preach ſelfe dependencie and ſelfe-concurrence, making themſelves as it were, joynť-favours with Chriſt, ſuch

was

The Gospel is Christs own Power.

253

VERSE 2:

was the preaching of *Simon Magus*, who gave out that himself was some great one, even the great Power of God. Of *Montanus* and his Schollars, who preached him for the Comforter that was promised. Of *Pelagius* and his associates, who though they did acknowledge the Name of Grace, to decline envie, and avoyd the curse of the great Councell of Carthage, yet still they did but shelter their proud heresies under equivocations and ambiguities. Of the *Massilienses*, in the times of *Pro-sper* and *Hilarie*, and some ancient School-men touching pre-existent congruities for the preparations of Grace, and co-existent concurrencies with the Spirit for the production of Grace. Of the Papists in their doctrines of indulgences, authoritative absolution, merits of good workes, justification, and other like, which doe all in effect out-face and give the lye unto the Apostle, when he calleth Christ an able or sufficient Saviour.

Thirdly, men preach themselves when they make themselves the end of their preaching, when they preach their own parts, passions, and desires, and seek not the Lord; when * out of envie, or covetousness, or ambition, or any other servile or indirect affection, men shall prevaricate in the Lords Message, and make the Truth of God serve their own turnes. When men shall stand upon Gods holy mount as on a theater, to act their own parts, and as on a step to their own advancements; when the truth of God, and the death of Christ, and the Kingdom of Heaven, and the fire of Hell, and the souls of men, and the salvation of the world shall be made basely serviceable and contributory to the boundless pride of an Atheisticall *Diotrephes*: Such as these were they, who in the times of *Constantius* the Emperour, poisoned the world with *Arrianisme*; and in the times of Saint *Cyprian*, provoked persecutions against the Church; and in the times of *Israel* ensnared the ten Tribes

rill

*Gratia vocabu-
lo frangens in-
vidiam, offen-
sionemq; decli-
nans, Aug. de
Grat. Christ l. 1.
c. 37. & Epist.
105.*

Heb. 7. 25.

* Jer. 10. 21.
Phil. 1. 16.
Ezek. 34. 2. 3.
Esai. 56. 11.
Mic. 3. 5.
2 Pet. 2. 14. 15.
Jud. v. 11.
3 Ioh. v. 9.
Amos 7. 12, 13.

*Sulpit Sever.
lib. 2.
Cyr. de Iustif.*

VERSE

Mat. 5. 1. 7. 8.

Jer. 23. 28. 29.

till they were utterly destroyed, and blinded the two Tribes, till they were led away captive by the Babylonians: so horrid are the consequences of taking away the Gospel of Christ from him, and making it the Rod not of his strength, but of our own pride or passion. Wee must therefore always remember that the Gospel is Christs own, and that will encourage us to speake it as we ought to speake.

First, with authoritie and boldness, without silence or connivence at the sinnes of men. Though in our private and personall relations we are to shew all modestie, humilitie, and lowliness of carriage towards all men, yet in our masters businesse, we must not respect the persons, nor be daunted at the faces of men, *Paul* a prisoner was not affraid to preach of righteousness and temperance, and judgment to come, before a corrupt and lascivious Prince, though it made him tremble:

Matth. 13. 52.
1 Cor. 3. 10.

Matth. 22. 22.
45.

2 Cor. 6 3.

Jud. v. 22. 23.

Secondly, with wisdom; as a Scribe instructed to the Kingdom of Heaven. This was *Saint Pauls* care to work as a wise master-builder. When Christs enemies watched him to pick something out of his mouth, whereby they might accuse him; wee find so much depth of wisdom in the answers and behaviours of Christ, as utterly disappointed them of their expectations, and strook them with such amazement, that they never durst aske him questions more: So should wee endeavour to behave our selves in such manner, as that our ministerie may not be blamed, nor the truth of God exposed to censure or disadvantages: for sacred truthe may bee sometimes either so unseasonably, or so indigestedly, and uncoherently delivered, as may rather open than stop the mouthes of gain-sayers, and sooner discredit the truth than convert the adversary, The Apostle saith, that we are to *make a difference, to save some with compassion, others with feare.* This is to speake a word in due season, and as our Saviour did, *to speake as men are able to hear;*

The Gospel is Christs own Power.

255

VERSE 2.

to press the word upon the conscience with such seasonable, and suitable enforcements as may be most likely to convince those judgments, and to allure those affections which we have to doe withall. It is not knowledge in the generall, but the right use thereof, and wise application unto particulars which winneth soules. *The tongue of the wise useth knowledge aright.* This is that heavenly Craft, wherewith the Apostle caught the Corinthians as it were by guile: such Art hee useth towards the Philosophers of Athens, not exasperating men who were heady and confident in their own rules, but seeming rather to make up the defects which themselves in the inscription of their Altar confessed, and to reveale that very God unto them, whom they worshipped, but did not know. Therefore we finde him there honouring their own learning, and out of that disputing for a resurrection, and against idolatrie, to shew that Christian Religion was no way against that learning or rectified reason which they seemed to profess. The like art hee used towards King Agrippa, first presuming of his knowledge and credit which he gave to the Prophets, and then meeting and setting on his inclinable disposition to embrace the Gospel; like the wisdom of the servants of Benhadad unto Ahab, *They did diligently observe whether any thing would come from him, and did hastily catch it; and they said, Thy Brother Benhadad.* And the like wisdom hee used every where, he denyed himself his own libertie, and made himself a servant unto all; to the Jew as a Jew, to the Greek as a Greek, to the weak as weak, and all things to all, that by all meanes he might save some, and so further the Gospel. One while he used Circumcision, that he might thereby gain the weak Jewes; another while he forbade Circumcision, that he might not misguide the converted Gentiles, nor give place by subjection unto false brethren. *Who is weak, saith he, and I am not weak? who is offended, and I burn*

Prov. 11. 30.
Prov. 15. 2.
2 Cor. 12. 16.
Act. 17. 23. 28.

Act. 26. 2. 3.
27. 29.

1 King. 20. 33.

1 Cor. 9. 19. 23

2 Cor. 11. 29.

VERSE 2

Eadem omni-
bus debetur
charitas non
eademne digna,
Cyc. Aug. de
Catech. Rudib.
cap. 15.

Jam. 3. 13. 17.

Matth. 11. 29.
21. 5.

Luke 9 55.

Gal. 6. 1.
2 Tim. 2. 25.

burn not? His care of mens soules made him take upon him every mans affection, and accommodate himself unto every mans temper; that he might not offend the weak, nor exasperate the mightie, nor dishearten the beginner, nor affright those which were without, from comming in, but be All unto All for their salvation. The same love is due unto all, but the same method of cure is not requisite for all: With some, Love travelleth in pain; with others, it rejoyceeth in hope; some it laboureth to edifie, and others it feareth to offend; unto the weak it stoopeth, unto the strong it raiseth it self; to some it is compassionate, to others severe; to none an enemy, to all a Mother. But all this it doth, *non mentiendo sed compatiendo*; not by belying the truth, but by pitying the sinner. It is not the wisdom of the flesh, nor to be learned of men; the Scripture alone is able to make the man of God wise unto the work of Salvation.

Thirdly, with meekness, for that is the Child of Wisdom: *Who is a wise man*, saith Saint James, *let him shew out of a good conversation his workes* *παιδων οσιος* *with meekness of wisdom*: and again, *The wisdom which is from above, is pure, peaceable, gentle, easie to be intreated, full of mercie*. The Gospel is Christs Gospel, & it must be preached with Christs spirit, which was very meek and lowly. When the Disciples would have called for fire from Heaven upon the Samaritanes, for their indignitie done unto Christ, hee rebuked them in a milde and compassionate manner, *Teknow not what spirit ye are of*. A right Evangelicall Spirit is ever a meek and a mercifull Spirit. *If a man* (saith the Apostle) *be oversaken in a fault, ye which are spirituall restore such a one in the spirit of meekness*: and again, in meekness, saith the Apostle, *Instruct those that oppose themselves, if God peradventure will give them repentance to the acknowledging of the truth*.

Lastly with faithfulness, in as much as the Gospel is none

The Gospell is Christs owne Power.

257

none of ours, but Christs whose servants and stewards we are: Christ was faithfull, though hee were a Son over his owne house, and therefore might in reason have assumed the more liberty to doe his owne will: much more doth it become us who are but his Officers, to be faithfull too, not to dissemble any thing which the estate and exigence of those souls committed to our charge shall require us to speake, not to adde, diminish, or deviate from our commission, preaching one Gospell in one place, and another in another; but to deliver onely the Counsell of God, and to watch over the souls of men, as they that must give an account.

Againe, since the Gospell is Christs *owne Power*, wee must all learne from thence two duties: first, to receive it as from him with the affections of subjects which have been bought by him, that is, first in hearing of the word to expect principally *his voyce*, and to seek him speaking from heaven: This is the nature of Christs sheep, to turne away their eares from the voyce of strangers, and *to heare him*. Two things principally there are which discover the voice of Christ in the ministerie of the word. First, it is a spirituall and *heavenly doctrine*, full of purity, righteousness, and peace, touching the soul, with a kind of secrete and magneticall vertue, whereby the thoughts, affections, conscience, and conversation are returned from their earthly center, and drawne up unto him as Eagles to a carcassee. Secondly, it is a powerfull, an edged, a *piercing doctrine*. If the word thou hearest speak unto thy conscience, if it search thy heart, if it discover thy lusts, if it make thy spirit burne within thee, if it cast thee upon thy face, and convince and judge thee for thy transgressions, if it bind up thy sores, and cleanse away thy corruptions, then it is certainly Christs word, and then it must bee received with such affections as become the word of Christ.

First, with Faith: if we conferre with flesh and blood, we shall be apt ever to cavill against the truth; For hee

S

that

VERSE 2.

Heb. 3. 2.
1 Cor. 4. 2.
2 Tim. 2. 2.

Deut. 4. 2.
Gal. 1. 6.
A.C. 20. 27.
Heb. 13. 17.

Ioh. 10. 4, 5, 27

Iohn. 3. 12.
Iam. 3. 17.

Heb. 4. 12.

VERSE 2.

Ioh 12.48.

Rom. 8.7.

Heb 12.3.

Act. 13.45.

Act. 28.23.

1 Ioh. 1.1,2.

G. l. 1.12.

Matth 5.22.

Ioh. 4.21.

2 Cor. 1.24.

1 Pet. 5.3.

Heb. 4.2.

1 Thess 2.13.

Eph. 4.12.

Eph. 5.11.

that rejecteth Christ, doth never receive his word. A fleshly heart cannot submit unto a heavenly Doctrine: Christ and his Apostles did every where endure the contradiction of sinners. But yet hee claimeth this honour over the consciences of men to over-rule their assents against all the mists, and sophist call reasonings of the flesh. The Apostles themselves preached nothing but either by immediate commission from him, or out of the Law and the Prophets. But his usuall forme was, *Verily I say unto you*, noting, that hee onely was, unto the Church the Author and fountaine of all heavenly Doctrine, that unto him onely belongeth that authoritative and infallible Spirit which can command the subscription and assent of the conscience, that hee onely can say with boldnesse to the soul, as hee did to the Samaritan woman, *Believe mee*. And that therefore no authority either of men, or Churches; either Episcopall, Papall, or Synodicall can without open sacrilege usurpe power to over-rule the faith of men, or impose any immediate and Doctrinall necessity upon the conscience in any points which are not ultimately and distinctly resolv'd into the evident authority of Christ in his word, *S. Paul* himself durst not assume Dominion over the faith of men; nor *S. Peter* neither suffer any Elders (amongst whom hee reckoneth himself as an Elder also) *to over-rule, or prescribe* unto the heritage of God. It is onely Christs word which the hearts of men must stoop and attend unto, and which they must mingle with faith, that it may bee profitable unto them; that is, they must let it into their hearts with this assurance, that it is not the breath of a man, but the message of Christ, who is true in all his threatnings, and faithfull in all his promises, and pure in all his precepts, that hee sendeth this ministerie abroad for the perfection of the Saints, & the edification of his Church, and therefore if they bee not hereby cleansed, and built up in his body, they doe

as much as in them lieth, make void the holy ordinance of God, which yet must never returne in vaine. The word of God doth *effectually* worke onely in those that beleeve. It worketh in hypocrites, and wicked hearers, (according to the measure of that imperfect faith which they have) but it worketh not effectually, that is, it doth not consume nor accomplish any perfect work but onely in those that beleeve; in the rest it proves but an abortion, and withers in the blade.

Secondly, ^a with love, and readinesse of minde, without despising or rejecting it. No man can bee saved who doth not *receive the truth in love*, who doth not receive it (as the primitive Saints did) *with gladnesse, and readinesse of minde*, as *Eli*, though from the hand of *Samuel* a Child; as *David*, though from the hand of *Abigail* a woman; as the Galatians; though from the hand of *Paul*, an infirme and persecuted Apostle. For herein is our homage to Christ the more apparent, when we suffer a little child to lead us.

Thirdly, ^b with meeknesse and submission of heart, reverencing and yeelding unto it in all things. Wrestling, shifting, evading, perverting the word is as great an indignity unto Christ, as altering, interlining, or racing a patent which the King hath drawn with his owne royall hand, is an offence against him. Patience and effectuall obedience even in affliction, is an argument that a man esteemes the word to bee indeed Gods owne word, and so receives it: Hee onely who putteth off the old man, the corrupt deceitfull lusts of his former conversation, and is renewed in the Spirit of his minde, is the man that hath heard; and been taught by Christ, that hath received the *Truth in him*.

Again, in as much as the Gospell is the Rod of *Christs owne strength*, or the instrument of his arme (who hath beleaved our report, and to whom is the *arme of the Lord revealed*) and the instrument is no further operative or

^a 2 Thes. 2. 10.
Act. 2. 41.
Act. 17. 11.
Act. 21. 17.
1 Sam. 3. 18.
1 Sam. 25. 32.
Gal. 4. 14.
Esa. 11. 6.

^b 1am 1. 21.
Levit. 26. 2.
Act. 10. 33.
1 Thes. 2. 13, 14.
Eph. 4. 20-22.

Esa. 53. 1.

VERSE 2:

effectuall than according to the measure of that impres-
sed vertue which it receiveth from the superior cause :
therefore wee should learne alwayes to repaire unto
Christ for the successe of his word. For he onely is the
teacher of mens hearts, and the author of their faith.
To him onely it belongeth to cal men out of their graves,
and to quicken whom hee will: We have nothing but the
ministerie, he keepeth the power in his own hands, that
men might learne to waite upon him, and to have to doe
with him, who onely can send a blessing with his word,
and teach his people to profit thereby.

Another ground of the power of the word is, that it is
*sent from God. The Lord shall send forth the Rod of thy
Strength.* From which particular likewise wee may note
some usefull observations, as;

First, that Gods appointment and ordination is that
which gives being life, majesty, and successe to his owne
word, authority, boldnesse, and protection to his ser-
vants. When hee sendeth his word hee will make it pro-
sper. When *Moses* disputed against his going down into
Egypt to deliver his brethren, sometimes alleaging his
owne unfitnessse and infirmity, sometimes the unbelieve
of the people; this was still the warrant with which God
encouraged him, *I will bee with thee, I have sent thee, doe
not I make mans mouth? I will bee with thy mouth and
reach thee what thou shalt say.* I was no Prophet, neither
was I a Prophets Son (saith *Amos*) but I was an heards-
man & a gatherer of sycamore fruit: *And the Lord took
me as I followed the flock and said unto mee, Goe, prophesie
unto my people Israel.* And this made him peremptory in
his office to prophesie against the idolatry of the Kings
Court, and against the flattery of the Priest of Bethel.
And this made the Apostles bold though otherwise un-
learned and ignorant men, to stand against the learned
councill of Priests and Doctors of the Law, *yea oughte
they to obey God rather than men.* Vpon which, *Grave* was the
advice

Esa. 55. 11,
Exod. 3. 4.

Amos. 7. 14, 15.

Act. 4. 13, 5. 29
35, 36.

The Gospel sent by God.

261

VERSE 2.

advice of Gamaliel; If this counsell or work he of men, it will come to nought; But if it be of God yee cannot overthrow it, lest haply ye be found to fight against God. For to withstand the power or progress of the Gospel, is to set a mans face against God himself.

Secondly, in as much as the Gospel is sent forth by God, that is, revealed and published out of Sion, we may observe, That Evangelicall Learning came not into the World by humane discovery or observation, but it is utterly above the compass of all reason or naturall disquisition, neither men nor Angels ever knew it but by divine revelation. And therefore, the Apostle every where calleth it a *Mystery*, a *great and a hidden Mystery*, which was kept secret since the World began. There is a *Naturall Theologie*, without the Word, gathered out of the workes of God, out of the resolution of causes and effects into their first Originals, and out of the Law of nature written in the heart. But there is no *naturall Christianity*. Nature is so far from finding it out by her own inquiries, that she cannot yield unto it when it is revealed, without a Spirit of Faith to stiffe it. The Jewes stumbled at it as dishonourable to their Law, and the Gentiles decided it, as absurd in their Philosophy; It was a *Hidden and secret wisdom*; the execution and publication whereof was committed onely to *Christ*. In God it was an *Eternall Gospel*, for Christ was a Lamb slain from before the foundation of the world, namely in the pre-determinate counsell and decree of his Father; but revealed it was not till the dispensation of the *fullness of time*, wherein he gathered together in one all things in Christ. The purpose and ordination of it was eternall; but the preaching and manifestation of it reserved untill the time of Christs solemn inauguration into his Kingdom, and of the obstinacy of the Jewes, upon whose defection the Gentiles were called in.

Which might teach us to adore the unsearchableness

Rom. 16. 25.
1. Cor. 2. 7. 9.
Rom. 1. 20.
2. 14. 15.

Rev. 14. 16.
1 Pet. 1. 20.
1 Cor. 2. 7. 10.
Eph. 1. 9. 10.
Eph. 3. 9. 11.

Ag. 14. 16. 17.
30.

VERSE 2.

John 17. 3.
Hail. 53. 11.

I. Cor. 2. 14.

John. 1. 5.

Exod. 4. 22.

Plal. 147. 20.
Vide Cameron-
de Eccl. p. 81.

Deut. 7. 6. 7.

Deut. 9. 6.

Josh. 14. 2. 3.

of Gods judgements unto former ages of the world, whom he suffered to walke in their own wayes, and to live in times of utter ignorance, destitute of any knowledge of the Gospel, or of any naturall parts, or abilities to find it out. For if these things be true: First, that without the Knowledge of Christ there is no salvation; *This is eternall life to know thee, and him whom thou hast sent, Iesus Christ; by his knowledge shall my righteous servant justifie many:* Secondly, that Christ cannot be known by natural, but Euangelicall and revealed light: *The natural man cannot know the things of the Spirit of God, because they are spiritually discerned. The light shined in darkness, and the darkness was so thick and fixed, that it did not let in the light nor apprehend it.* Thirdly, that this light was at the first sent onely unto the Jewes, as to the first born people; (excepting onely some particular extraordinary dispensations and priviledges to some few first-fruits and preludes of the Gentiles.) *He shewed his Word unto Iacob, his Statutes and his judgements unto Israel. He hath not dealt so with any nation. He hath not afforded the meanes of salvation ordinarily unto any other people; the world by wisdom knew him not. Fourthly, that this severall dispensation toward one another, the giving of saving knowledge to one people, and with-holding it from others, was not grounded upon any preceding differences and dispositions thereunto in the people, but onely in the Love of God. The Lord thy God hath chosen thee to be a speciall people unto himself, above all people that are upon the face of the earth. The Lord did not see his love upon you, nor choote you, because you were more in number than any people (for ye were the fewest of all people.) But because the Lord loved you, &c. The Lord thy God giveth thee not this good land to possess it for thy righteousness, for you are a stiff-necked people. Your fathers dwelt on the other side of the flood in the old time, and they served other gods. There*

There was no difference between them and the Gentiles from whom I gathered them. Fifthly, that the Gospel was hidden from others in God, his own will and counsell was the cause of it. He forbid men to go into the Cities of the Gentiles, neither were they to go unto them without a speciall gift, and commission. The same *Beneplacitum* was the reason of revealing it to some, and of hiding it from others; *Even so, O Father, for so it seemed good in thy sight.* If all these particulars be true, needs must we both admire the inscrutableness of Gods judgments towards the Gentiles of old, for no humane presumptions are a fit measure for the wayes and severities of God towards sinners. And also everlastingly adore his compassions towards us, whom he hath reserved for these times of light, and, out of the alone unsearchable riches of his grace, hath together with principalities and powers in heavenly places, made us to see what is the fellowship of that great mystery which from the beginning of the world was hidden in himselfe.

Thirdly, in that the Lord doth send forth the Gospel of Christ out of *Sion* into the world, we may further observe that the Gospel is a Message, and an invitation from heaven unto men. For, for that end was it sent, that thereby men might be invited and perswaded to salvation. The Lord sendeth his Son up and down, carrieth him from place to place; he is set forth before mens eyes, he comes and stands, and calls, and knockes at their doores, and beseecheth them to be reconciled. He setteth his Word before us, at our doores, and in our mouthes and eares. He hath not erected any standing Sanctuary or City of refuge for men to flie for their salvations unto, but hath appointed Ambassadors, to carry this treasure unto mens houses where he inviteth them, and intreateth them, and requireth them, and commandeth them, and compelleth them to come in to his feast of mercy. And this must needs be *μυστήριον ἀνεκζητούμενον*, an unsearchable

Ephes. 3. 9.
 Math. 10. 5.
 Eph. 3. 7, 8.
 Math. 11.
 25. 26.
 Eph. 3. 9. 11.
 Rom. 11. 33.

Gal. 3. 1.
 Col 4. 6.
 Revel. 3. 20.
 Jer. 26. 4.
 Deut. 30. 19.
 Rom. 10. 8.
 2 Cor. 5. 20.
 Math. 11. 28.
 Mic. 6. 8.
 1 John 3. 23.
 Luke 14. 23.

VERSE 2.

riches of grace, for mercy, pardon, preferment, life, salvation, to go a begging, and sue for acceptance, and very unsearchable likewise must needs be the love of sin, and madness of folly in wicked men, to trample upon such pearls, and to neglect so great salvation when it is tendered unto them. O what a heaue charge will it be for men at the last day, to haue the mercy of God, the humility of Christ, the entreaties of the Spirit, the proclamations of pardon, the approaches of salvation, the dayes, the yeares, the ages of peace, the Ministers of the Word, the Book of God, the great Mystery of Godlinesse, to rise up in judgement, and to testifie against their soules?

Heb. 5. 4.

Gal. 1. 12.

Lastly, in that the Gospel is sent from God, the Dispensers thereof must look unto their Mission, and not intrude upon so sacred a business before they are thereunto called by God. Now this call is two-fold: *Extraordinary* by immediate instinct, and revelation from God, which is ever accompanied with immediate and infused gifts (of this we do not now speak,) and *Ordinary*, by imposition of hands, and Ecclesiasticall designation. Whereunto there are to concur three things. First, an Act of Gods providence casting a man upon such a course of studies, and fashioning his mind unto such affections towards learning, and disposing of him in such Schooles and Colleges of the Prophets as are congruous preparations and were appointed for nurseries and seminaries of Gods Church. It is true, many things fall under Gods providence, which are not within his allowance, and therefore it is no sufficient argument to conclude Gods consent or commission in this office, because his wisdom hath cast me upon a collegiate education. But when therewithall, he in whose hands the hearts of all men are as clay or wax, to be moulded into such shapes as the counsell of his will shall order, hath bended the desires of my heart to serve him in his Church, and hath set the strongest delight of my minde upon those kindes of learning.

learning which are unto that Service most proper and conducent; when measuring either the good will of my heart; or the appliableness of my parts, by this, and other professions of learning, I can clearly conclude that that measure and proportion which the Lord hath given me is more suitable to this, than other learned callings: I suppose, other qualifications herewith concurring, a man may safely from thence conclude, that God, who will have every man live in some profitable calling, doth not onely by his *providence* permit, but by his *secret direction* lead him unto that service, whereunto the measure of gifts which he hath conferred upon him, are most suitable and proper. And therefore secondly, there is to be respected in this *Ordinary mission*, the meet qualification of the Person, who shall be ordained unto this Ministry. For if no Prince will send a mechanick from his loom, or his sheers, in an honourable Embassage to some other forraign Prince, shall we think that the Lord will send forth stupid and unprepared Instruments about so great a work as the perfecting of the Saints, and Edification of the Church? It is registred for the perpetuall dishonour of that wicked King *Serobast* (who made no other use of any Religion but as a secondary by thing, to be the supplement of policy) that he made of the lowest of the People, those who were really such as the Apostles were safely esteemed to be, the scum and off-scouring of men, to be Rectors unto the Lord. Now the Qualities more directly & essentially belonging unto this Office are these two, *Fidelity* and *Ability*. The thing saith the Apostle, which thou hast heard of amongst many witnesses, the same commit thou to faithful men, who shall be able to teach others also.

We are stewards of no manner gift than the Grace of God, and wisdom of God; that grace which by Saint Peter is called *ἡ χάρις τοῦ κυρίου* a manifold Grace; and that wisdom which by Saint Paul is called *ἡ σοφία τοῦ κυρίου* the manifold

VERSE 27

1 King. 12. 31

2. Tim. 2. 2.

1 Pet. 4. 10.
Ephe. 3. 10.

VERSE 2.

1 Cor. 4. 2

4 Luke. 4. 16.

31.

b Acts 17. 2. 18.

4.

c Τῇ 18 ἡλίας
 λεγομένην ἡμε-
 ρα πάντων καὶ
 πόλεις ἡ ἀρχαῖς
 ὑμνούντων ἐπὶ το
 αὐτὸ συνελπί-
 σεν γινεῖ. εἶτα
 παυσανθῶν τὸ
 ἀναγινώσκον-
 τος δὲ θεωρῶν
 διὰ λόγου πλὴν
 ὑπερβίου καὶ
 ἀρχαίων τῶν
 ἐκείνων τῶν
 ποιητῶν.

Iustin. Martyr.

4 pol. 2. Tert.

4 pol. c. 3. 9.

manifest wisdom of God. We are the depositaries and dispensers of the most pretious treasures which were ever opened to the sons of men; the incorruptible and pretious blood of Christ, the exceeding great and pretious promises of the Gospel, the Word of the Grace of God and of the unsearchable riches of Christ. Now it is required of stewards, that a man be found faithfull, that he defraud not Christ of his purchase, which is the soules of men, nor men of their price and priviledge, which is the blood of Christ; that he neither favour the sins of men, nor dissemble the truth of God; that he watch, because he is a seer; that he speak, because he is an oracle; that he feed, because he is a shepheard; that he labour, because he is a husbandman; that he be tender, because he is a mother; that he be carefull, because he is a father; that he be faithfull, because he is a servant to God and his Church; in one word, that he be instant in season and out of season, to exhort, rebuke, instruct, to do the work of an Evangelist, to accomplish and make full proof of his Ministry, because he hath an account to make, because he hath the presence of Christ to assist him, the promises of Christ to reward him, the example of Christ, his Apostles, Prophets, Evangelists, Bishops and Martyrs of the purest time, who have now their palmes in their hands, to encourage him. (a) It was Christs custome to enter into their Synagogues on the Sabbath dayes, and to reade and expound the Scriptures to the people, (b) It was Saint Pauls manner to reason in the Synagogues, and to open the Scriptures on the Sabbath-dayes, (c) Upon Sunday, saith Iustin Martyr, All the Christians that are in the Cities or Countries about meet together, and after some Commentaries of the Apostles, and writings of the Prophets have been read, the Senior, or Prefident doth by a Sermon exhort the people, and admonish them to the imitation and practice of those divine Truths which they had heard read unto them,

And

(d) And Saint *Austin* telleth us of *Ambrose*, that he heard him rightly handling the Word of God unto the people every Lords day. Yea, it should seem by the Homilies of Saint *Chrysostome*, that he did oftentimes preach daily unto the people, and therefore we frequently meet with his ~~24~~, yesterday this and this I taught you. (e) And *Origen* intimateth this frequency of expounding the Scriptures in his time: if, saith he, you come frequently unto the Church of God, and there attend unto the sacred Scriptures, and to the explication of those heavenly commandments, thy soul will be strengthened, as thy body with food. And (f) our Church in her Ecclesiasticall constitutions hath provided for the continuance of so faithfull and pious a custome, injoyning every allowed Preacher to have a Sermon every Sunday in the yeer, and in the afternoon besides to spend half an hour in catechizing the younger and ruder sort in the Principles of Christian Religion. The neglect of which most necessary duty no man can more bewail, nor more urge the necessity thereof, than those who looking abroad into the world have experience of more thicke and palpable darkness in the mindes of men, concerning those absolutely necessary Doctrines of the passion, merits, and redemption of Christ, and of faith in them, than men who have not with their own eyes observed it, can almost beleve. And that too in such places where Sermons have been very frequently preached. I will close this point with the assertion and profession of holy *Austin*. (g) Nothing saith he, is in this life more pleasant and easie than the life of a Bishop or Minister, if it be perfunctory and flatteringly executed: but then, in Gods sight, *Nihil turpius, miserius, damnabilius*; and it was his profession, (h) that he was never absent from his Episcopall service and attendance upon any licentious and assumed liberty, but onely upon some other necessary service of the Church.

VERSE 2.

d Eum in populo verbum veritatis reseruantem
omni die Dominico audiebam. Aug. conf. lib. 6. c. 3.
e Si ad Ecclesiam frequenter venias, aures divinitus literis admoveas, explanationem mandatorum celestium capias, sicut cibis caro, ita spiritus verbis divinis convalescet; Orig. Hom. 9. in Levit.
f Canon 45. 59.
g Nihil in hac vita latius aut hominibus acceptabilius, Episcopi, aut presbyteri aut Diaconi officio si persunctorie atque adulatorie res agatur, Eccl. Aug. E. 148.
h Illud non erit dilectio vestra, nunquam me absentem fuisse licentia libertate, sed necessaria servitute, Aug. Epist. 138.

Touching

VERSE 2.

i ed' dān cōs
vncs q' xado
de μovov, dñā
dē x' tū xā
ēgōu γvwei-
(ev, Gc. Arist.
Ethic. l. 6. c. 8.
k Aug. in lib. 1.
Doctr. Christ.
Ly de Catech.
Rud. Gregor.
Mag. de Offi. io
Pastor. part. 3.
c. 1. Gc.
Hiera. Apōl.
advers. Russi.
Aug. de Doctr.
Christ. lib. 2.
c. 16, 17, 39.

Theodore;
Diff. 3. c. 2.

Aug. de Doctr.
Christ. l. 2. c. 28
id. Greg. Na-
zianz. Orat. 1.

Touching the ability required in the discharge of this great Office, there are (as I conceive) two special branches thereunto belonging. First *Learning* for the right information of the consciences of men, that men may not pervert the Scripture. Secondly *Wisdom or Spiritual Prudence* for reasonable application of the truth to particular circumstances, which is that which maketh a *wise builder*. For this latter, it being so various, (i) according to those infinite varieties of particular cases and conditions, which are hardly reducible unto generall rules, I cannot here speak, but refer the Reader to the grave and pious counsels of those (*) holy men who have given some directions herein. For the other, two great works there are which belong to this high calling. *Instruction* of the Scholar, and *Conviction* of the Adversary. Unto the perfection of which two services, when we duly consider how many different parts of learning are requisite, as knowledge of the (*) Tongues for the better understanding of the holy Scriptures by their original Idioms and emphasis; of the Arts, to observe the connexion, and argumentation, and method of them; of ancient customs, Historie, and antiquities of the Babylonians, Persians, Greeks and Romans, without insight whereinto the full meaning of many passages of Holy Scripture cannot be clearly apprehended; of School-learning, for discovering and repelling the subtilty of the adversaries; being required in a Rhetorician by Aristotle & Quintilian, inasmuch (*) that Julian the Apostate complained of the Christians that they used the weapons of the Gentiles against them; and therefore interdicted them the use of schools of learning; (6) lastly of Histories & Antiquities of the Church, that we may observe the succession of the Professors, and Doctrines hereof, the originals and branchings of heresie therein, the better to answer the reproches of our insolent Adversaries, who lay innovation to our charge. I say, when we duly consider these particulars, we cannot suffi-

sufficiently admire, nor detect the faultiness of those bold intruders, who when they have themselves need to be taught what are the first Principles of the Oracles of God, become teachers of the ignorant before themselves have been Disciples of the learned, and before either maturity of years, or any severe progress of studies have prepared them, boldly leape, some from their manuell trades, many from their grammar and logick rudiments, into this sacred and dreadfull office, unto which heretofore the most learned and pious men have trembled to approach. To these men I can give no better advice than that which *Tully* once gave unto *Aristoxenus* a musician, who would needs venture upon Philosophicall difficulties, and out of the principles of his art determine the nature of an human soul, *Hec magistro relinquat Aristoteli, canere ipse doceat.* Let them spend their time in the worke which best befits them, and leave great matters unto abler men.

Thirdly and lastly, unto this call is requisite the *imposition of hands*, and the authoritative act of the Church ordaining and setting apart, and deriving actuall power upon such men, of whose fidelity and ability they have sufficient evidence (for *hands are not to be laid suddenly on any man*) to preach the word, and to administer the Sacraments, and to doe all those ministeriall acts, upon which the edification of the people of Christ doth depend. I have now done with the first of Christs regalities in the Text, which was the *Scepter of his Kingdom.*

Now to speake a word of the second, which is *Solium*, the *Throne of his Kingdom.* The Lord shall send the Rod of thy strength *out of Sion* Which notes unto us: First, that the Church of the Jewes was the chiefe originall, Metropolitane Church of all other. Therefore our Saviour chargeth his Disciples to *Tarry in the City of Ierusalem*, till they should be *indued with power from on high.*

Docent Scripturam quos non intelligunt, prius imperitorum magistri, quam Doctorum discipuli, &c. Hieron. Ep. 8 ad Demetriad. Apol. ad Damian: & To. 3. Epistol. Ep. ad Paulinum.

** Hi sunt qui se ultro apud temerarios conuenos sine diuina dispositione praesumunt, qui se praepositos sine ulla Ordinationis lege constituunt, qui nemine Episcopatum dante Episcopi sibi nomen assumunt. Cyprian. de unitat. Ecclesiae.*

Luk. 24. 49.

VERSE 2.

Rom. 3. 12.

Rom. 9. 4.

a Jer. 31. 9.

b 1am. 1. 18.

c Matth. 8. 12.

d Eph. 2. 12.

e Matth. 15. 26

f Gal. 4. 26. 6. 16

Rom. 2. 29.

Heb. 12. 22.

g Rom. 15. 8

h Matth. 15. 24

i Matth. 10. 5. 6

k Rom. 11. 11.

12 15. 30.

l 1 Thess. 2. 14

m A. 2. 15. 2. 22

n Rom. 15. 27.

o Rom. 11. 25.

26.

high. The Apostle saith that they had the advantage or precedence and excellencie above other people, because unto them were committed the Oracles of God. To them did pertain the Adoption, and the glory, and the covenants, and the giving of the Law, and the service of God, and the promises. Of them was Christ after the flesh. All the Fathers, Patriarchs, Prophets, Apostles, and writers of the holy Scriptures were of them. There is no Church can shew such Priviledges, nor produce such authentique records for her precedency, as the Church of the Jewes. Therefore they are called by an excellency Gods^a first-borne, and ^b the first fruits of the creatures, they are called The^c Children of the Kingdome, whereas others were at first ^d Dogs, and ^e strangers. Their Titles, Sion, Hierusalem, Israel, are used as proper names to expresse the whole Church of God by, though amongst the Gentiles, Christ Iesus, though hee came as a Savior unto All, yet hee was sent to bee a Prophet and a Preacher onely unto them. Therefore the Apostle calleth him the Minister of the Circumcision, that is, of the Jewes, and hee saith, ^f I am not sent but to the lost sheepe of the house of Israel. And when hee gave his Apostles their first commission, ^g he sent them onely into the Cities of the Jewes; the^k Gentiles were incorporated into them; were brought in upon their rejection, and refusall of the Gospell, ^h tooke the Christians of Iudea for their pattern in their profession; from ^m that Church were Rules and constitutions sent abroad into other Churches, as binding and necessary things. To ⁿ that Church the Churches of the Gentiles were debtors, as having been made partakers of their spirituall things; and though they bee now a rejected people, yet ^o when the fulnesse of the Gentiles is come in, Israel shall be gathered againe, and made a glorious Church. And in the meane time their dispersion tended unto the conversion of the Gentiles. For though they were enemies to the faith of Christians,

yet

yet they did beare witnesse unto those Scriptures, out of which the Christians did prove their faith. And there is no greater evidence in a cause than the affirmative testimony of that man who is an enemy to the cause. If the Church of Rome had such evidences as these out of the booke of God, to prove their usurped primacie by, how proud and intolerable would they be in boasting thereof, and obtruding it unto others, who are now so confident upon farre slenderer grounds?

And from hence we may learne to take heed of the sins of that people, which were principally the rejecting of the corner stone, and the putting off the Gospell of Christ away from them, as every obstinate & unbelieving sinner doth from himselfe. This is that which hath made them of all nations the most hated, and the most forsaken, and hath brought wrath to the uttermost upon them, because when Christ came unto his owne, they received him not. *Because of unbeliese, they were broken off,* saith the Apostle, *and thou standest by faith; be not high-minded, but feare; for if God spared not the naturall branches, take heed lest he also spare not thee.* And we should likewise learne to pray for the fulnesse of the Gentiles, and for the restoring of this people unto their honour and originall priviledges againe; for we are their debtors; we entred upon the promises which were made to them, and therefore good reason we have to doe for them now, as they did for us before: *We have a little sister, or rather an elder sister, and shee hath no breasts, the oracles and ordinances of God are taken from her; What shall we doe for our sister in the day when shee shall be spoken for?* Cant. 8.8.

Secondly, this notes unto us the calling of the Gentiles into the fellowship of the same mystery which was first preached unto the Jewes, that they might be the daughters of this mother Church, that they may take hold of the skirt of the Jew, and say, We will go with you, for

VERSE 2.

Magnum est quod Deus praestitit Ecclesiae suae ubique diffusa; ut Gens Iudaea, merito debellata & dispersa per terram, ne à nobis hac composita putarentur codices Prophetarum nostrorum ubique portaret, & intima fidei nostra testis fieret veritatis nostrae. Aug. to. 4. de consens. Evangel. lib. 1. c. 26. & epist. 3. ad Voisianum.

Ezek. 16. 61.
Zech. 8. 23.
Ezay. 2. 2, 3.

VERSE 2.

for we have heard that God is with you. The Church of Ierusalem was set up as a beacon, or an ensigne, or a publike sanctuary to which the nations should flie, as doves to their windowes. Of this merciful purpose some evidences and declarations the Lord gave before in *Rahab*, *Iob*, *Ninive*, the Wise-men and others, who were the preludes and first fruits of the Gentiles unto God, and did after fully manifest the same in his unlimited commission to his Apostles, *Goe preach the Gospell unto every creature.*

And now alas, what were we that God should bring us hitherto? Saint *Paul* saith that we were filled with all *unrighteousnesse*; that we did neither understand God, nor seeke after him. All our faculties were full of sin, and the fulnesse of all sin was in us; we were ruled by no lawes but the course of the world, the Prince of the aire, and the lusts of the flesh, without God in this world, and without any hope for the world to come. Here vessels of lust and poyson, and fited to be hereafter vessels of destruction and misery. We were no nation, a foolish people, a people that sought not, nor inquired after God, and yet his owne people hath he set by, and called us to the knowledge of his love and mercie in Christ. And that, not as many other Gentiles are called, who heare of him indeed, and worship him, but have his doctrine corrupted and overturned with heresie, and his worship defiled with superstition and idolatry; but hee hath for us purged his floor, and given unto us the wheat without the chaffe, he hath let the light of his glory to shine purely upon us onely in the face of Iesus Christ, without any humane supplements, or contributions. How should we praise him for it, and as wee have received Christ purely, so labour to walk worthily in him? How should we run to him that called us when we knew him not? How should we set forward, and call upon one another, that we may flie like doves in companies unto the windowes

dowes of the Church? How earnestly should we contend for this truth, the custody whereof he hath honored us withall? how should we renew our repentance, and remember our first workes, lest so excellent a privilege bee removed from us? There is no wrath that is *Wrath to the uttermost*, but that which depriveth a people of the Gospel, and taketh away their Candlestick from them.

Thirdly, it notes unto us the difference of the two Covenants, the one out of Sinai, and the other out of Sion. At first the Law proceeded out of Sinai, wherein though the end were merciful, yet the manner was terrible, and therefore the effect nothing but bondage; but after it was sent out of Sion with the Spirit of Grace and adoption, observed with cheerfulness and liberty, as by those that know God will spare them, as a man spareth his child that serveth him: for in my bond-slave I look to the perfection of the work, but in my son to the affection and disposition of the heart.

Lastly, it notes unto us, that the seat of saving Truth, the custody of the promises, and Gospel of salvation, doth still belong unto Sion, to the Church of God. Out (a) of the Church there is no Gospel, and therefore out of the Church there is no salvation. The (b) Apostle saith of children which are borne out of the Church, *that they are unclean*: unto the Church (above all congregations of men) belongeth this excellent privilege to be the Treasurer of the riches of Christ, and (c) *To hold forth the Word of life unto men*. In which sense the Apostle saith, (d) that it is *the pillar and the ground of Truth*; not that which giveth being to the Church, for the Law must not faile nor perish; nor that which giveth authoritie, imposeth a sense, canonizeth and maketh authentical, is a judge or absolute determiner of the truth; for in that sense the (e) Church is held up by the Word, and not that by it, for (f) *The Church is built upon the foundation of the*

T

Prophets

VERSE 2.

Heb. 12. 18, 22
Gal. 4. 25, 26

Quomodo potest esse cum Christo, qui cum sponsa Christi, atque in ejus Ecclesia non est?

Cypri. l. 2. ep. 8.
Ep. l. 4. epist. 2.
ad Anton. Ep. lib. de unitat. Eccl. Aug. 10. 1. de vera Relig. cap. 5.

b i Cor 7. 14

c Phil. 2. 16.

d i Tim. 2. 16

h δ αλήθεια

ἐστὶ τῆς ἐκκλη-

σίας καὶ σωτὴς

καὶ ἐσπαίοντα.

Christ. hom.

11. in Tim.

f Eph. 2. 20

274 *The Church the seat of saving truth.*

VERSE 2. *Prophets and Apostles*, namely, upon that fundamental doctrine which they have laid; But ^s the Church is the depositary of the Truth, that Orb out of which this glorious Light shines forth, unto it appertains the Covenants, and the giving of the Law, and the service of God, and the promises. Her office and her honor it is to be the ^b *Candlestick* which holdeth up the Word of Truth, to set to her seal unto the evidence and excellency thereof; ⁱ by her Ministry, authority, consent and countenance to conciliate respect thereunto in the minds of Aliens, and to confirm it in the minds of believers; ^k to fasten the nailes and points thereof, like masters of the Assemblies, under one principal Shepherd, which is Christ, in the hearts of men; not to dishonour it by their usurped Authority above it (for by that means all controversies of Religion are turned, not into contentions of doctrine, that that may be rested in which doth appear to have in it most intrinsecal majesty, spiritualnesse, and evidence; but into factions and emulations of men that that sect may be rested in, who can with most impudence and ostentation arrogate an usurped authority to themselves) but by their willing submission thereunto to credit it in the affections of men, and to establish others in the love and obedience thereunto; for the Authority of the Church is not ^l *Autoritas Jurisdictionis*, an Authority of Jurisdiction above the Scriptures: but only *Autoritas muneris*, an authority of dispensation and of trust to proclaim, exhibite, present the truth of God unto the people, ^m to point to the Star, which is directed unto by the finger, but is seen by the evidence of its own light. ⁿ To hold forth, as a ^o Pillar, that Law, and Proclamation of Christ, the Contents whereof we discover out of it self. In one word, that place sheweth the duty of the Church to preserve knowledge, and to shew forth the truth of sacred Scriptures out of themselves; but not any infallibility in it selfe, or authority over

^s Rom 3 1
 Rom. 9. 4

^b Revel. 1. 12.

ⁱ Reynol. Conf.
 with Hays. c. 8.
 Drusij 6.

^k Eccles. 12. 11

^l Cameron. de
 Eccles. pag 44

^m August. in
 Proem. lib. de
 Doctrin Christ.

ⁿ D. White in
 his Way to the
 Church, Sc. &c.

15.

^o *Figi enim sol-
 bant leges, aut
 quandoque in as
 incidi, & in lo-
 cis celebrimis,
 ut à quolibet le-
 gerentur. propo-
 ni, Vid Buisson.
 sc. formul. l. 2.
 p. 137. & lib. 3
 pag. 323. —*

over

over others, to bind their Consciences to assent unto such expositions of Scripture, as derive not their evidence from the harmony and analogy of the Scriptures themselves, but onely from *Ipse dixit*, because the Church hath spoken it.

VERSE 2.

To conclude this point, we are to note for the cleere understanding of the Office of the Church concerning the holy Scriptures: First, that some things therein are *Hard to be understood*, as Saint Peter speaks, either by reason of their allegorical and figurative expressions, as the visions of *Ezekiel, Daniel, Zachary, &c.* Or by reason of the obscure and strange connexion of one part with another, or of the dependance thereof upon forraine learning, or the like; but then we must note, that the knowledge of such things as these, are not of absolute necessity unto salvation; for though the perverting of hard places be damnable (as Saint Peter telleth us) yet that ignorance of them which groweth out of their own obscurity, and not out of our neglect, is not damnable. Secondly, some things have evidence enough in the termes that expresse them, but yet are *Hard to be believed*, by reason of the supernatural quality of them. As when we say, That Christ was the Sonne of a Virgin, or that he died and rose againe, there is no difficulty in the sense of these things, it is easily understood what he that affirmeth them doth mean by them. All the difficulty is to bring the mind to give assent unto them. Thirdly, some things though easie in their sense to be understood, and it may be easily likewise in their nature to be believed, are yet *Hard to be obeyed and practised*, as repentance, and forsaking of sin, &c. Now according unto these differences we may conceive of the Office and Power which the Church hath in matters of Holy Scripture.

Pet. 3. 16.

First, *For hard places, in regard of the sense and meaning of the place*, it is the duty of the Church to open

VERSE 2

^a Necesse est eos qui scripturas edisserendo pertractant, cuiusvis recta atque unius fidei fuerint, varias parere in multorum doctorum obsecratione sententias: quamvis nequaquam ipsi varietas ab eisdem fidei unitate discernat, sicut etiam unus tractat, et secundum eandem fidem aliter atque aliter eundem locum potest exponere, quia hoc ejus obscuritas patitur. Aug. Ep. 19

^b Theodoret. de durand. Grac. affect. lib. 8. Cyr. serm. de Baptif. Christi. Aug. Ep. 3. ad Volus. et Tom. 3 de doctrin. Christi. l. 2. c. 9

them to Gods people with modesty and moderation; and therein God alloweth the Learned a *Christian liberty*, with submission of their opinions alwayes to the *Spirits of the Prophets*, so long as they do therein nothing contrary to the *Analogy of faith*, to the general peace and unity of the Church, to the rules of *charity, piety, loyalty, and sobriety*; to abound in their owne sense, and to declare for the further edifying of the Church, what they conceive to be in such difficult places principally intended. And further then this no Church nor person can go; for if unto any man or chair there were annexed an *infallible spirit*, enabling him to give such a cleer and indubitate exposition of all Holy Scriptures, as should leave no inevidence in the Text, nor hesitancy in the minds of men; how comes it to passe that hitherto so many difficulties remaine, wherein even our Adversaries amongst themselves do give severall conjectures and explications? and how can that man, to whom so excellent a gift of *infallibility* is bestowed, clear himself of envy, and abuse of the grace of God, who maketh not use thereof to expound the Scriptures, and to compose those differences thereabouts, which do so much perplex the world?

Secondly, For those places which in their meaning are easie to be understood, but in their excellent and high nature *hard to be believed* (as all Articles of faith and things of absolute necessity are in their termes ^b *perspicuous*, but in their heavenly nature *unevident unto humane reason*). the Office of the Church is not to bind mens Consciences to believe these truths upon her Authority; for we have not dominion over the faith of men, neither are we lords in Christs flock; and how shall any scrupulous mind, which is desirous to bould things to the branne, be secure of the power which the Church in this case arrogates, or have any certainty that this society of men must be believed in their Religion, who will allow

The Church the seat of saving truth. 277

allow the same honour to no society of men but themselves? But in this case, the office of the Church is, both to labour by all good means to evidence the credibility of the things which are to be believ'd, to discover unto men those essential and intimate beauties of the Gospel, which to spiritual minds and hearts raised to such a proportionable pitch of capacity, as are futeable to the excellency of their natures, are apt to evidence and notifie themselves; and also to labour to take men off from dependance on their own reason or corrupted judgement, to worke in their heart an experience of the Spirit of grace, and an obedience to those holy Truths which they already assent unto; with which preparations and perswasions, the heart being possessed, will in due time come to observe more cleerly, by that spiritual eye, the evidence of those things which were at first so difficult: so then, the *Act of the Church is in matters of faith an act of introduction and guidance*; but that which begetteth the infallible and unquestionable assent of faith is that spirituall taste, relish, and experience of the Heavenly sweetness of divine doctrine, which, by the Ministry of the Church accompanied with the special concurrence of Almighty God therewithal, is wrought in the heart; for it is only the Spirit of God which writeth the Law in mens hearts, which searcheth the things of God, and which maketh us to know them.

Thirdly, for those places which are difficult rather to be obeyed, then to bee understood: The worke of the Church is to enforce upon the conscience the necessity of them, to perswade, rebuke, exhort, encourage with all authority.

Which should teach us all to love the Church of Christ, and to pray for the peace and prosperity of the walls of Sion, for the purity, spiritualnesse, power and countenance of the Word therein, which is able to hold up its own honour in the minds of men, if it be but faithfully

VERSE 2.

Dr. Field of
the Church,
. 4. c. 8.

*Singulis creden-
tibus suis gu-
stus est iudicii
à spiritu, ut ho-
minibus à natu-
rà sum. Fun.
constr. Bellar.
controv. 1. lib.
3. cap 3. §. 13.*

VERSE 2.

Ne quicquam
proficis exquisi-
tor quaq; cru-
delitis vestra,
illecebra est ma-
gis secta, plures
efficimur quoties
mesimur à vo-
bis. Semen est
sanguis Christi-
anorum — Inde
est quod senti-
entis vestris gra-
tias agimus, ut
est amulatio di-
vina rei & hu-
mana. Tertul.
Apol. cap. ult.

published; we should therefore study to maintaine, to credit, to promote the Gospel, to encourage truth, discountenance errour; to stand in the gap against all the stratagems and advantages of the enemies thereof, and to hold the candlestick fast amongst us, to buy the truth, and sell it not, betray it not, forsake it not, temper it not, misguise it not. This is to bee a pillar, and to put the shoulder under the Gospel of Christ. And surely though the Papists boast of the Word and Name of the Church (as none more apt to justifie and brag of their sobriety than those whom the wine hath overtaken) yet the plain truth is, they have farre lesse of the nature thereof, than any other Churches, because farre lesse of the pure service and administration thereof; for in stead of holding forth the Word of life, they pul it downe, denying unto the people of Christ the use of his Gospel, dimidiating the use of his Sacrament, breeding them up in an ignorant worship, to beg they know not what, in all points disgracing the Word of Truth, and robbing it of its certainty, sufficiency, perspicuitie, authority, purity, energie in the minds of men. And this is certaine, the more any set themselves against the light and generall knowledge of the Word of truth, the lesse of the nature of the Church they have in them, what-ever ostentations they may make of the name thereof.

The last thing observed in this second verse amongst the regalities of Christ, was *Imperium*, his Rule and Government in his Church by his holy Word, maugre all the attempts and machinations of the enemies thereof against it: *Rule thou in the midst of thine enemies*, that is, *Thou shalt rule safely, securely, undisturbedly*, without danger, fear, or hazzard from the enemies round about; their counsels shall be infatuated, their purposes shall vanish, their decrees shall not stand, their persecutions shall but sow the blood of Christ; and the ashes of Christians the thicker; they shall see it, and gnash with

with their teeth, and gnaw their tongues, and be horribly amazed at the emulation and triumph of a Christians sufferings over the malice and wrath of men:

VERSE 2.

The Kingdom of Christ is two-fold ; His *Kingdome of Glory*, of which there shall bee no end, when he shall rule over his *enemies*, and tread them under his feete : and his *Kingdome of Grace*, whereby hee ruleth amongst his *enemies*, by the Scepter of his Word. And this is the Kingdome here spoken of ; noting unto us, that Christ will have a Church and people gathered unto him by the preaching of his Gospel on earth, maugre all the malice, power, or policy of all his enemies. Never was Satan so loose, never Heresie and darknesse so thick, never persecution so prevalent, never the tail of the Dragon so long, as to sweepe away all the Stars of Heaven, or to devoure the remnant of the womans seede. The gates of Hell, all the policie, power and machinations of the Kingdome of darknesse, shall never roote out the Vine which the Father hath planted, nor prevaile against the Body of Christ. His Gospel must be preached till the worlds end, and til then he will be with it to give it successe. Though the Kings of the Earth stand up, and the Rulers gather together against the Lord and his Christ, yet they imagine but a vain thing, and he that sitteth in heaven shall laugh them to scorne.

The grounds of the certainty and perpetuity of Christs Evangelical Kingdome is not the nature of the Church in it self considered, either in the whole or parts ; for *Adam* and *Evah* were a Church at first, a people that were under the Law of obedience, and worship of God, and yet they fell away from that excellent condition. And the Prophet tells us, that except the Lord had left a very small remnant, the Church had been all as *Sodom*, and like to *Gomorrah*. But the grounds hereof are, First, *The Decree*, ordination, and appointment of God *Psal. 2. 4. Act. 10. 42. Heb. 2. 2.* and wee know what

Isa. 1. 9.

VERSE 2. ever men project, the counsel of the Lord must stand. Secondly, Gods Gift unto Christ, *Ask of me, and I will give thee the Heathen for thine inheritance, &c. Psal. 28. Thine they were, and thou gavest them me, John 17.6. My Father which gave them me is greater than all, and none is able to pluck them out of my Fathers hand, John 10. 29.* Thirdly, Gods Oath, which is the Seale of his irreverfible decree and Covenant with Christ. *Once have I sworne by my Holinesse, that I will not lie unto David; His seede, shall endure for ever, and his Throne as the Sunne before me, Psal 89. 35, 36.* Fourthly, Christs owne Purchase and price which he payed for it. The Apostle saith, Christ died not in vaine, and the vertue of his blood lasteth to the end of the World; for as his blood was shed from the beginning of the world in regard of Gods Decree, so doth it continue to the end, in regard of its own merit and efficacy; so long as he sitteth at the right hand of God, which must be till the time of the restitution of all things, the merit of his blood shall worke amongst men. Fifthly, Christs owne Power, to keep inviolable the propriety he hath gotten, *My sheepe heare my voice, and I give unto them eternal life, and they shall never perish, neither shall any man pluck them out of my hand, Joh. 10. 27, 28.* Sixthly, the Fathers Command unto his Son, *This is the Fathers wil, that of all which he hath given me, I should lose nothing, &c. Joh. 6 39.* Seventhly, Christs Love and Care. The Church is his Spouse, under his coverture and protection, and therefore as he hath Power and Office, so he hath delight to preserve it still. His Love is better able to helpe, than the malice of the enemy is to hurt. Eighthly, Christs Intercession, which is not for the world; but for those whom God hath given him out of the world, and those he demandeth of his Father (who heareth him alwaies) in the vertue of that Covenant which between them was ratified, on Gods part by a Promise and Oath, and on Christs part by a Merit

Aas 3. 21.

Merit and Purchase. Now Christs Intercession shall last till his returning to judge the world, and therefore still hee must have a Church for whom to intercede. Lastly, Christs own *Promise*, to bee with the preaching of his Gospel; that is, to give it assistance and successe, for the gathering together and perfecting of the Saints unto the End of the world, *Matth. 28. 20.*

Here then may be answered two great Questions: First, whether the Church may *deficere*, faile upon the earth or no? To which I answer, That the Church may be taken either *Mystically*, *Spiritually*, and *Universally*. And in that sense it can never faile, but there must bee upon the earth a true Church of Christ, not onely *Certitudine eventus*, by the certainty of the event, which is on all sides agreed; but *Certitudine cause* too, by a certainty growing out of those irresistable causes upon which the being of the mystical body of Christ on the earth dependeth. Or it may be considered *Particularly*, in the several parts and places of the world where the Gospel is planted; and *Hierarchically and politically*, denoting a company of men, professing the Faith of Christ, and reduced into a quiet, peaceable, composed and conspicuous government: and so we affirme that there is no Church in the world so safe, but that it may *Deficere*, faile, and be extinguished out of its place. The Church of the Jewes did, and after them any may. Else the Apostles argument even to the Roman Church it selfe (which was then a famous Church throughout the world, and of that passage in the Apostle, *Baronius* makes a long boast) were very weake, when *a majori ad minus*, he thus argueth, *Bee not high-minded but feare, for if God spared not the natural Branches, take heed lest he also spare not thee.* Thus we finde the ten Tribes in their Apostacy, til they became *Lo-ammi*, to be no more a people; and their brethren after falling into their condition; *Wrath*, saith the Apostle, *is come to the uttermost upon them.* And hee telleth

VERSE 2.

Rom. 1. 8.

Baron. An. 58.
S. 47. 48. 49.
50.

Rom. 11. 21, 22

Hol. 1. 9.

1 Thes. 2. 16.

VERSE 2.

2 Thel. 2. 3 7

1 Tim. 4. 1.

Cameron de
Eccles. p. 265,
268.

* Ex illis omni-
bus qui intrinse-
cè & in occulto
intus sunt, con-
stat ille Hortus
conclusus, fons
signatus &c.
Aug. de Baptif.
cont. Donat. li. 5.
cap. 27. Alii ita
sunt in domo
Dei ut ipsietiam
sint eadem Do-
mus Dei — A-
lii ita ut non
pertineant ad
compaginem Do-
mus, &c. De
Bapt. l. 7. c. 51.

tellecth us that the man of sinne, the Sonne of perdition, should be revealed by *Apostacy*, to note unto us that Antichrist was to be generated out of the corruption or falling away of some eminent Church, and that, by a mysterious and insensible declination.

A second question which may be made is this, that since the Church doth not totally faile from off the earth, whether that which remaineth thereof be *alwaies visible*? To which we answer, That if we take the Church for the *Spiritual and Mysticall body of Christ*, (* Which is indeed the House of God) so it is in a sort *stil invisible*, because the qualities and principles which constitute a man in the Body of Christ, as Faith, and the Spirit of Grace, are invisible things. Seene indeed they may be by an eye of *Charity*, in their fruits, but not by an eye of *Certainty*, in their own infallible being. Secondly, if wee take the Church for a company of men *professing the true Doctrine of Christ*, we answer, that *take the men in themselves* so truly professing, and impossible it is but their faith should shew it selfe in the fruits thereof; for the Kingdome of Christ is in the heart like leaven, which will manifest it selfe in the whole lump, and so we can in all, even the worst ages of the Church, shew some who have witnessed the truth against that deluge of ignorance, errour and idolatry, which had invaded the world, like gray hairs here and there mingled on a black head; as if you single out fire from the ashes, it will be seene by its own evidence though it may be so raked up that it is not observed. But then if we speak of these men in *aggregatio*, as concurring to make up a distinct external Body, or Church; so wee say, that the Professors of the truth may be so few, and they persecuted, traduced, suppressed, cried down, driven into the wilderness, without any apparant, separated conspicuousnesse, and government of its own (as in the time of *Constantinus* the Emperour, the publick professors of the

Divinity

Divinity of Christs Person; against the damnable heresie of the Arians were used) as that in this sense we may justly deny the Church to have beene alwaies *visible*; that is, The few true Professors of Christ in Power and Purity to have had a free, open, uncontroled, distinct, ecclesiastical body of their own, notoriously and *in conspectu hominum* different from that tyrannicall and pompous hierarchie under which they suffered: for though Christ rule, yet it is *in the midst of his enemies*, and the enemies may be so many, and Christs subjects in whom he rules so few, that the corne may be invisible for the abundance of weeds amongst which it growes, though in it selfe very apt to be seene.

And this giveth a full answer to that Question, where *Our Church* was before the late Reformation began by *Luther*: for that Reformation did not *new-make* the Church, but *purge it*. And that it stood in need of purging, the Papists themselves were faine to confesse, and declare to the world in the Council of Trent. Onely herein is the difference; The Council pretended a Reformation *in points of Discipline and manners*, and wee made a Reformation *in points of Doctrine* too. When Christ purged the Temple of buyers and sellers, it was the same Temple after, which before. When a man separateth the wheat from the chaffe, it is the same corn which before. In these corrupter ages then, the pure Professor of Christ, who denied not his faith, did dwell where Satan had his seate. The members of Christ were amongst the Rulers of Antichrist. We are not another Church newly started up, but the same which before from the Apostles times held the common and necessary grounds of faith and Salvation, which grounds being in latter ages perverted and overturned by Antichristianisme, have beene by valiant Champions for the faith of CHRIST therefrom vindicated, who have onely proved the Lords Vine, and picked out the stones, and driven

VERSE 2.

*Ut sub Anti-
Christi sacerdo-
tibus Christi
populus non ex-
cideret. Hilari.*

284 *Christs kingdom hated in the world.*

VERSE 2. driven out the Bores out of his Vineyard, but have not made either one or other new.

Now this point, That Christ ruleth in the midst of his enemies, is ground of great confidence in his Church, in as much as shee subsisteth not upon any corruptible strength of her own, but upon the Promise, Decree, Oath, Power and Love of God, things invincible by all the powers of darknesse. Let the enemies rage never so much, they cannot dis-throne Christ, nor extinguish his Gospel, for it is an *Everlasting Gospel*. It is but as the *coming forth of a shepherd against a Lion*, as the Prophet compareth it. For either Christ is unable to protect his People, and that is against Saint *Jude*, *He is able to keep you from falling, and to present you faultlesse, &c.* Or else hee is unwilling, and that is against Saint *Paul*, *This is the Will of God, even your sanctification*; Or else both his Power and his Will are suspended upon expectation of humane concurrence, or nullified and disappointed by us; and that is against the influence of his Grace, which giveth us *both the will and the deed*; against the mercy of his gracious promise, *I will be mercifull to their unrighteousnesse, and their sinnes and their iniquities will I remember no more. I wil heal their back-slidings, I will save them freely*: Against the immutability of his Covenant and holy Nature, *I am God and not Man, I change not, therefore the sons of Jacob are not destroyed*,

Rev. 14. 16.

Ila. 31. 4.

Jude verse 24.

1 Thel. 4. 3.

Phil. 2. 13

Heb. 8. 12.

Hof. 14. 4.

Hof. 11. 9.

Mal. 3. 6.

Ila. 54. 9, 10.

Now besides this generall observation, the words afford some particular notes, which I will but briefly touch. As first, That Christs Kingdome in this world is *Regnum Crucis*, a Kingdome beset with enemies, of all other the most hated and opposed. They that submit unto it, must resolve to be herein conformable to their Head; a Crosse was his Throne, and Thornes were his Crowne, and every one which will live godly must suffer persecution, and through many afflictions enter into his Masters Kingdome. *Quod erat Christus, orimus; Christi.*

Christians. No marvel if the world hate the Church of Christ, for it hated him first. In his Word he is resisted, disobeyed, belyed, and if it were possible, silenced and corrupted; in his Officers mocked and misused, in his subjects persecuted and reviled in his Spirit thrust away and grieved, in his Worship neglected and polluted; in all his wayes slandered and blasphemed.

The reasons of which strange entertainment of the Kingdom of Christ, are, First, Because it is a *New Kingdom*, which enters into the world by way of challenge and dispossession of former lords, and therefore no wonder if it find opposition. Secondly, It is an *invisible*, unconspicuous, unattended, desolate, and in appearance ignoble kingdom. It began in the form of a servant, in the ignominy of a Crosse, none of the Princes of this world, none of the Learned of this world to countenance or help set it up, but amongst them all, esteemed as an offensive and foolish thing. Thirdly, It is an *Universal Kingdom*, *Nec parem patitur, nec superiorem*; Christ will admit of no Consorts or Corrivals in his Government. Body, and Soul, and Spirit he will have wholly and throughout unto himself. And this amongst others is given for the reason, why, when *Tiberius* proposed Christ unto the Romane Senate with the priviledge of his own suffrage, to be worshipped, they rejected him, because he would be a God alone. If he would exempt some of the earthly members from his subjection, let lust have the eye, or folly the ear, or violence the hand, or covetousnesse the heart, or any other evil affection share with him, he would be the easier tolerated; but when he will be absolute, and nothing must remaine in our hearts but as his vassal, to be spoiled, subdued, condemned and crucified by him; if the whole state of sin must be ruined, and the body destroyed, no wonder if the world cannot away with him. Fourthly, which is the summe of all, It is a *Heavenly Kingdom*;
a Spi-

VERSE 2.

John 7.48

1 Cor. 1. 21, 22

1 Cor. 6. 20

1 Thess. 5. 23

Laurens; de La,

Barr. in Tert.

Apol. cap 5.

VERSE 2.

R.v. 2.9.¹³^a Isai. 29. 13² Gal. 2. 4.² Pet. 2. 1¹ Tim. 4. 1, 2

Col. 2. 23.

Occulta obrep-
tiones. Aug. To
4. de fid. & op.
cap. 5.Τῇ χρηστο-
γιάτῃς ἑαυ-
τῶν κακονόας
καλύπτουσιν,
ἀσκητοῦσι
καὶ ἀπλυσί-
ους πρὸς δα-
ιδάσιν. Ibid. Pe-
luc. 1. 1. ep. 102
Sub ipso Chri-
stiani nominis
titulo fallis [i-
nimicus] in-
cautos, &c.Cypr. de unit.
Eccles.Usitatissima hac
Hæreticorum
fraus de perso-
narum reveren-
tiâ & pretexto
pietatis sibi fi-
dem præstruere
Vid. Aug. To. 1
De morib.Eccles. 1. 1. c. 1 et
ep. 120. c. 37.De peccat. me-
rit. et Remiss.1. 2. c. 16. et 1. 3.
c. 1. et 3.^b Revel. 17. 1

a *Spiritual Kingdom, My Kingdom is not of this world; and therefore no marvel if the Devils of Hell, and the Lusts of the flesh do set themselves against Him.*

Note secondly, Even there where Christs Throne and Kingdome is set up, he hath enemies. *Satan hath his seat even where Christ dwelleth.* Men may say they are Jewes, and are not, but of the Synagogue of Satan, and men may say they are Christians, and are not, but of the kingdom of Satan too. A wenne in the body seemeth to belong unto the integrity of the whole, when indeed it is an enemy and thief therein. Ivy about a tree seemeth to embrace it with much affection, when indeed it doth but kill and choak it. Men may take upon them the profession of Christians, and like a wen, beskinning over with the same outside which the true members have; may pretend much submission, worship, and ceremony unto him, and yet (such is the hellish hypocrisie of the heart) the same men may haply inwardly swell and rankle against the power of his Truth and Spirit. * *This people, saith the Lord, draw neer me with their mouth, and honour me with their lips; but have removed their heart far from me, and their fear towards me is taught by the Precepts of men.* ^a In the Apostles times there were false brethren, and false teachers, who crept in, to spy out and betray the liberty of the Church, and privily to bring in damnable heresies, and to speak lies in hypocrisie; that is, under the pretext of devotion, and carnal humility, to corrupt the Doctrine of Christ, and under a form of godlinesse to deny the power thereof. Therefore ^b Antichrist is called a *Whore*, because he should seduce the Christian world with much expressi-
on of love, and creep peaceably and by flatteries into the Kingdom of Christ: of these several enemies of Christ, under the profession of his Name and Worship, some are Christians, but not in purity, as hereticks; some

not

not in unity, as Schismatics; some not in sincerity, as hypocrites, some not so much as in external conformity, as evil workers: The Heretick corrupteth Christ, the Schismatick divideth him, the Hypocrite mocketh him, the profane person dishonoureth him, and all deny him.

Let us then learn to look unto our hearts, for we may ^c flatter Christ, when we do not love him; we ^d may inquire and seek early after him, and yet have no desire to find him; we may come unto his School as untoward children, not for love of his doctrine, but for fear of his Rod; we may call him Husband, and yet be wedded to our owne lusts; we may be baptized in his Name, so was ^e Simon Magus; we may preach him, so did the ^f false brethren; we may flock after him, so ^g did the multitude who followed him, not for his Words or Miracles, but for the loaves; we may bow unto him, ^h so did his Crucifiers; we may call upon his Name, ⁱ so did the Hypocrites that said, *Lord, Lord*, and yet did not enter into the Kingdom of Heaven; we may confesse and believe him, ^k so do the very devils in hell; we may give him our lips, our eyes, our tongues, our knees, our hands, and yet stull our kingdom, our throne, our hearts may bee Satans. And all this to make him but a mock-king as the Jewes did, when indeed we crucifie him.

Note thirdly, Christs Word and Spirit are stronger then all adverse opposition. This is his glory, that his Kingdome cometh in unto him by way of *Conquest*, as Canaan unto Israel. Therefore at the very first erecting of his Kingdom, when, in all presumption, it might most easily have been crushed, he suffered his enemies to vent their utmost malice, and to glut themselves with the blood of his people, that so it might appear, that though they did fight against him, they ^l could not prevail against him, but that his counsel should still stand and flourish, and should consume, and break in pieces all

VERSE 2.

^c Ps. 78. 36. 37

^d Nihil laborant, nisi non inuenire quod querunt. Aug. de Gen. con. Manic. 1. 2. c. 2

^e Acts 8. 13

^f Mat. 7. 22

^g Phil. 2. 16

^h John 6. 26

ⁱ Mat. 27. 29

^j Mat. 7. 21

^k Luke 8. 18

Jam. 2. 19

^l Isai. 8. 7. 10

Dan. 2. 44

Dan. 7. 25, 26.

Zech. 12. 3, 4

Isai. 31. 8

VERSE 2. all the kingdomes which set themselves against it: that they all should be afraid of the Ensigne of the Gospel, and should flee from it.

This jealousie of God for his Church may be seen, in frustrating the attempts, and pulling off the wheeles on which the projects which are cast against his Church do move, as he dealt with *harab*. He can dissolve the confederacies, shatter the counsels, cast a spirit of treacherie, unfaithfulness, and mutinous affections into the hearts of his enemies, as he did into the Midianites, and into the children of *Ammon*, *Moab* and *Edom*, when they gathered together against his people. Hee can infatuate their counsels, and make them the contrivers and artificers of their owne ruine, as we see in the consultation of *Rehoboam* with his young men, and of *Jeroboam* in his idolatrous policie, and of *Haman* in his gallows. He can defeat their expectations, and disannull their decrees, and make his own Counsel alone to stand.

Judg. 17, 22.
2 Chron. 22,
23.
Isa. 19. 9. & 29
14
Mic 4. 11, 12
Isa. 37. 33, 34.
Psal. 33. 10, 11.

But when all this is done, this is onely to rule in spight of his enemies. But besides this, his Kingdome fetcheth his enemies under, and in some sort ruleth over their consciences, and striketh them to the ground; maketh the Divels in hell, the stoutest of all sinners to tremble, breaketh the rocks asunder, affrighteth, judgeth, sealeth, hardneth, thresheth, revengeth the pride of men, and maketh them before-hand to taste the bitterness of that damnation which waketh over them, and cometh swiftly against them.

Jer. 23. 29.
2 Cor. 10. 6

Let us take heed then of being Christs enemies, in opposing the power and progresse of his word, the evidence and purity of his Spirit in the lives of men. It is but to make a combination to pull the Sunne out of Heaven; or for a wave to contend with a rock; for as the ruins of a house are broken on the things upon which they fall, so are the enemies of Christ, which gather together against his Church, and fall upon the rock, at length ruined by their

Luk. 20. 18

their owne malice. *Sampsons* foxes were themselves burnt amongst the corne which they fired. The land brought forth corne the next yeere againe (and it may be more plentifully by reason of that fire) but the foxes never came up any more. Even so can the Lord deale with those enemies which waste and depopulate his Church, make them the authors of their owne utter confusion, and bring forth his Church with shouting, and with doubled graces.

Who then is the man that desireth tranquillitie of life, and securitie against all evill? Let him become a subject in this conquering kingdome, and cast himselfe under the banner and protection of Christ, and he cannot miscarrie. *He that walketh uprightly, walketh surely. The Name of the Lord is a strong tower, the righteous fleeeth unto it, and is safe. The Lord is a Sun, and a shield, a Fountaine of all good: Grace and Glorie will hee give, and no good thing will hee withhold from them that walk uprightly: and a protection against all evill; I will not be affraid of ten thousand of men,* saith the Prophet *David, that compasse me about.* When there is no light, nor issue, nor in nature possibility of escape, he can open a doore of deliverance, to relieve his Church. As a man in the Kings high-way is under the kings protection: so in Christs way we are under his protection. Let us then never repine at the miscarriages of the world, nor murmur against the wise proceedings of God in the severall dispensation to wards his Church on earth: when he punisheth, he doth it in measure, lesse than our sins deserved: and when we search and try our waies and returne unto him, he knoweth how to worke his owne glory in our deliverance. Those stones which are appointed for a glorious building are first under the saw, and the hammer, to be hewed and squared; and those Christians in whom the Lord will take most delight, he usually thereunto fitteth by trials and extremities. Hee that is

VERSE 2.

Hab. 3. 16.

Mic. 5. 5.

Ioh. 16. 33.

Mat 10. 34.

Eph. 2. 17.

Esa. 32. 17.

brought to tremble in himselfe, may with most confidence expect to rejoyce in God.

Note fourthly this is the honour of Christs kingdome to be a peaceable, quiet, and secure kingdome, not onely after the victory, but in the midst of enemies. *This man saith the Prophet of Christ, shall be the peace, when the Assyrian, the enemy, is in the land.* Wee have peace in him, when wee have tribulation in the world. Christ saith of himselfe. *I came not to send peace but a sword;* and yet the Apostle saith, *That hee came, & preached peace to those which were as farre off, and to them which were neere.* How shall these things be reconcil'd? Surely as a man may say of a Rocke, Nothing more quiet, because it is never stirr'd and yet nothing more unquiet, because it is ever assaulted: so wee may say of the Church, Nothing more peaceable, because it is established upon a Rocke, and yet nothing more unpeaceable, because that rocke is in the midst of seas, windes, enemies, persecutions: But yet still the Prophets Conclusion is certaine, *The worke of righteousness is peace, and the effect of righteousness, quietnesse and assurance for ever.*

VERSE



VERSE 3.

Thy people shall be willing in the day of thy Power, in the Beauties of Holinesse from the wombe of the morning: thou hast the dew of thy youth.



He Prophet before shewed the Raigne of Christ over his enemies; hee now speaketh of his Raigoe over his people, and describeth what manner of subjects or souldiers Christ should have. I will not trouble you with varietie of expositions (occasioned by the many Metaphors, and different translations) but give in a few words those which I conceive to be most literal and pertinent to the place.

Thy people] that is, those whom thou dost receive from thy Father, and, by setting up the standard and Ensigne of thy Gospell, gather to thy selfe. *Shall be willing*] the word is *willingnesse*, that is, a people of great *Willingnesse and Devotion*, or (as the originall word is elsewhere used, *Psal. 119. 103.*) shall bee *free will offerings* unto

The faithful are Christs own people.

VERSE 3.

Eph. 4. 8.
Eph. 5. 8.

unto thee. The Abstract being put for the Concrete and the plurall for the singular, notes how exceeding forward and free they should be: as the Lord to signifie that his people were most rebellious, saith, that they were *Rebellious as Iesse*, *Ezek. 1. 8.* So then the meaning is, Thy people shall, with most ready and forward cheerefulness, devote, consecrate and render up themselves to thy government as a reasonable sacrifice, shall bee of a most liberall, free, noble, and unconstrained spirit in thy service, they shall bee *Voluntaries* in the warres of thy Kingdome. In the *Day of Thy Power, or Of thine Armies*, by these words we may understand two things, both of them aiming at the same generall sense: First, so as that [*Armies*] shall be the same with [*Thy people*] before; In the Day when thou shalt assemble thy Souldiers together, when thou shalt set up thine Ensignes for them to seeke unto, that is, when thou shalt cause the preaching of thy Gospell to sound like a Trumpet, that men may prepare themselves in armies to fight thy battels, then shall all thy people with great devotion and willingness gather themselves together under thy colours, and freely devote themselves to thy militarie service. Secondly, so as that by *Power* or *Armies* may bee meant the *Meanes* whereby this free and willing Devotion in Christs people is wrought: that is, when thou shalt send forth the Rod of thy strength, when thou shalt command thy Apostles and Ministers to goe forth and fight against the kingdomes of Sinne and Satan, when thou shalt in the dispensation of thine Ordinances reveale thy Power and spirituall strength unto their Consciences, then shall they most willingly relinquish their former service, and wholly devote themselves unto thee, to fight under thy banners, and to take thy part against all thine enemies.

Beauty of Holinesse.

293

In the Beauty of Holinesse] This likewise we may severally understand. Either, *In thy Holy Church*, Which may well so be called with allusion to the Temple at Jerusalem, which is called *The Beauty of Holinesse*, *Psal.* 29.2. and a *Holy and Beautiful house*, *Esay* 64. 11. and a *glorious high throne*, *Jer.* 17.12. And hither did the tribes resort in troopes, as it were in armies, to present their free-will offerings, and celebrate the other services of the Lord. Or else we may understand it *Causally*, thus; *In the Day of thy Power*, that is, when thou shalt reveale thy strength and Spirit; and in the *Beauties of Holinesse*, that is, when thou shalt reveale how exceeding beautiful, and full of lovelinesse thy Holy wayes and services are, then shall thy people be perswaded with all free and willing devotion of heart to undertake them. Or lastly, thus; as the Priests who offered sacrifices to the Lord were clothed with *Holy and Beautiful garments*, *Exod.* 28. 2.40. or as those who in admiration of some noble Prince voluntarily follow the service of his warres, doe set themselves forth in the most complete furniture and richest attire as is fit to give notice of the noblenesse of their minds: (for * beautiful armor was wont to be esteemed the honor of an armie.) So they who willingly devote themselves unto Christ, to be Souldiers and Sacrifices unto him, are not onely armed with strength, but adorned with such other graces, as make them *Beautiful as Tirza*, comely as *Jerusalem*, faire as the *Moone*, cleere as the *Sunne*, and terrible as an army with banners. All which three Explications meete in one generall, which is principally intended, that Holinesse hath all beauties in it, and is that onely which maketh a man lovely in the Eyes of Christ.

From the wombe of the morning: thou hast the dew of thy youth] There is a middle point after those words, [*The Wombe of the Morning*,] which may seeme to dis-joine the clauses, and make those words referre wholly to the

VERSE 3.

Psal. 84.7

* *Judg.* 5. 30
Curtius, lib. 3
C^o 5. vid. *Brison*, de Reg.
Persarum, lib. 3
pag. 323—C^o
Tbo. Demsteri ad
Rosin. Antiq.
paralipom. lib.
10. cap. 1. *Cans.*
6. 4, 10

VERSE 3.

Psal. 54. 13, 14

15

Mich. 4. 7
 Rev. 22. 16
 Luke 2. 78
 Mal. 4. 2
 Rom. 13. 12
 1 John 2. 8

the preceeding. In which relation, there might be a double sense conceived in them. Either thus, *In the Beauties of Holinesse*, or in Holinesse very beautiful more then the *Aurora* or *wombe of the morning*, when she is ready to bring forth the Sunne. And then it is a notable metaphor to expresse the glorious beauty of Gods wayes. Or thus, thy people shall be a willing people from the very *wombe of the morning*; that is, from the very first forming of Christ in them, and shining forth upon them, they shall rise out of their former nakednesse and security, and shall adorne themselves with the beautiful graces of Christs Spirit, as with cloathing of wrought gold and rayment of needle-work, and shall with gladnesse and rejoycing, with much devotion and willingness of heart be brought unto the King, and present themselves before him as Voluntaries in his service. But because the learned conceive that the middle point is onely a distinction for convenient reading, not a disjunction of the sense, I shall therefore rest in a more received exposition. Thy Children shall be borne in great abundance unto thee, by the seed of thy word, in the wombe of the Church, as soone as the morning, or sunne of righteousness shall shine forth upon it. As the dew is borne out of the coole morning ayre as out of a wombe, distilling downe in innumerable drops upon the earth; so thine elect shall be borne unto thee, by the preaching of thy word and first approach of thy heavenly light, in innumerable armies. And this explication is very suteable to the harmonic of Holy Scripture, which useth the same metaphors to the same purpose in other places. The *Remnant of Jacob*, saith the Prophet, *shall bee in the midst of many people as a dew from the Lord*. And Christ is called the *Bright-morning-starre*, and the *Day-spring*, and the *Sun of Righteousnesse*, and the time of the Gospel is called the *time of the Day*, or the approach of Day. So that, *from the wombe of the morning*, is from the heavenly light

light of the Gospel, which is the wing or beame whereby the Sunne of Righteousnesse revealeth himselfe, and breaketh out upon the world, as the rising Sunne, which rejoyceth like a Giant to runne his race, shall the succession increase, and armies of the Church of God be continually supplied.

The words thus unfolded doe containe in them a lively Character of the subjects in Christs spiritual Kingdome. Described, first by their Relation to him, and his propriety to them, *Thy People*. Secondly, by their present condition, intimated in the word, *Willing*, or *Voluntaries*, and (if we take [*Thy People*] and [*Armies*] for Synonymous termes, The one notifying the order and quality of the other) expressed in the Text, and that is, to be *military men*. Thirdly, by their through and universal resignation, subjection, and devotednesse unto him. For when he conquereth by his word, his conquest is wrought upon the wills and affections of men. *Victorque volentes Per populos dat jura. Thy People shall be willing.* The ground of which willingnesse is further added, (for so chiefly I understand those words) *The Day of thy Power*. So that the willingnesse of Christs subjects is effected by the power of his grace and Spirit in the revelation of the Gospel. Fourthly, By their honourable attire, and military robes, in which they appeare before him, and attend upon him, *In Beauties of Holinesse*, or in the various or manifold graces of Christ as in a garment of divers colours. Fifthly and lastly, by their age, multitudes, and manner of their birth; They are the *Dew of the morning*, as many as the small drops of dew, and they are borne to him out of the *wombe of the morning*, as dew is generated, not on the earth, but in the aire, by a *Heavenly calling*, and by the shining of the *morning-starre*, and *day-spring* upon their consciences. Yee are all the *Children of light*, saith the Apostle, and the *Children of the day*; we are not of the night, nor of darknesse, *1 Thes. 5. 5.*

VERSE 3.

^a Mar. 1. 21
John 10. 3
Cant. 2. 16
& 7. 10

^b Col. 1. 16, 17
Rom. 9. 5
^c Heb. 1. 2, 3
& 2. 7, 8

^d Esay 63. 19

Acts 2. 36
Eph. 1. 22
Psal. 2. 8
Esay 8. 18
Job. 17. 6

I said before, that I approve not the mincing and crumbling of Holy Scriptures. Yet in these parts of them, which are written for models and summaries of Christian Doctrine, I suppose there may be weight in every word, as in a rich Jewel there is worth in every sparke. Here then first we may take notice of Christs Propriety to his people. [*Thy people*] All the Elect and Believers doe ^a belong unto Christ. They are *His People*. They are his *Owns sheep*. There is a mutal and reciprocal propriety between him and them. *I am my beloveds, and my beloved is mine*. His desire is towards me, *His*, I say, not as he is God onely, but a right of inseparable domination as we are his creatures. For all things were ^b created by him and for him. And he is over all. God blessed for ever. Nor his onely as he is the ^c first-borne and the heire of all things. In which respect he is Lord of the Angels, and God hath set him over all the works of his hands. But as he is the mediator and head in his Church. In which respect the faithful are his by a more peculiar propriety. ^d *We are thine, thou never barest rule over them, they were not called by thy name*. The Devils are his *Vassals*. The wicked of the world his *prisoners*. The faithful onely are his *subjects, and followers*. His *Jewels*, his *Friends*, his *Brethren*, his *Sonnes*, his *Members*, his *Spouse*. His, by all the relations of intimatenesse that can be named.

Now this Propriety Christ hath unto us upon several grounds. First, by Constitution and Donation from his Father. God hath made him Lord and Christ. He hath put all things under his feet, and hath given him to bee Head over all things to the Church. Aske of me, and I will give thee the heathen for thine inheritance, and the uttermost parts of the earth for thy possession. Behold, I and the children whom thou hast given mee. Thine they were, and thou gavest them to me. For as in regard of Gods Justice, we were bought by Christ in our redemption,

The faithful are Christs owne people.

297

sion, so in regard of his Love, we were given unto Christ in our election, that he might redeeme us.

Secondly, by a right of purchase, treaty and covenant betweene Christ and his Father. For we, having sold away our selves, and being now in the enemies possession, could not be restored unto our primitive estate without some interuening price to redeeme us. Therefore saith the Apostle, he was made under the Law, *in a* *Baragochan*, that he might *Buy out* those that were under the Law. And againe, yea are *Bought with a price*. He was our surety, and stood in our stead, and was set forth to declare the righteousness of God. God dealt in grace with us, but in justice with him.

Thirdly, by a right of conquest and deliverance. He hath plucked us out of our enemies hands, he hath dispossessed and spoiled those that ruled over us before, he hath delivered us from the power of Satan, and translated us into his owne Kingdome; we are *his freemen*, he onely hath made us free from the Law of sinne and death, and hath rescued us as spoils out of the hands of our enemies, and therefore we are become *his servants*, and owe obedience unto him as our Patron and deliverer. As the Gibeonites when they were delivered from the sword of the children of Israel, were thereupon made hewers of wood, and drawers of water for the congregation: So we being rescued out of the hands of those tyrannous Lords which ruled over us, doe now owe service and subjection unto him that hath so mercifully delivered us. Being made free from sinne (saith the Apostle) ye become the Servants of Righteousnesse. And we are delivered from the Law, that being dead wherein we were held, that we should serve in newnesse of Spirit. And againe, He died for all, that they which live should not henceforth live unto themselves, but unto him which died for them and rose againe.

Fourthly, by covenant and stipulation. I entred into

VERSE 3.

Gal. 4.5
1 Cor. 6.20
Tit. 2.14
Heb. 7.22
Rom. 3.25

Luke 1.12
Bf. 26.13, 14, 15
*Ingratus Liber-
us: qui Patrono
non praestas obse-
quium*
Joh 9.26, 27

Rom 6.18
& 7.6

2 Cor. 5.15

cove nant

V E R S E 3.

Ezek 16-8

Rom. 6. 3. 5

Gal. 3. 27

Acts 19. 5

^a Socras. Hist.

lib. 7. cap. 17

Laurent. de la

Bar. in Tertull.

lib. de Coron.

milit. cap. 1.

Ambros. Tom. 4.

lib. de iis qui

mysterijs initi-

antur. cap. 7.

^b Tertull. de Co-

rona milit. cap. 3

^c de spectaculis.

cap. 4. Am-

bros. To. 4. de Sa-

cram. lib. 1. ca. 2

Basil. Mag. To. 2

de Spir. Sancto.

cap. 11. Vid.

Brisson. Com-

ments. in lib. Do-

minico. &c.

pag. 137.

^d 1 Pet. 3. 22^e Eph. 2. 2

covenant with thee, and thou becamest mine. Therefore in our Baptism we are said to be Baptized into Christ, and to put on Christ, and to be Baptized into his name, that is, wholly to consecrate and devote our selves to him as the servants of his family. Therefore they which were Baptized in the ancient^a Church, were wont to put on white rayment, as it were the Liverie and Badge of Christ, a Testimony of that purity and service which therein they vowed unto him. And therefore it is that we still retaine the ancient forme of vow, promise, or profession in Baptisme, which^b was to renounce the Devil, and all his works, the world, with the pompe, luxury and pleasures thereof. And this is done in a most solempne and deliberate manner by way of answer to the question and demand of Christ. For which purpose St. Peter calleth Baptisme *αὐτῶν ἀπάντη ἀπεκρίθησαν*, *The Answer*, or the interrogative triall of a good conscience towards God. He that conformeth himself to the fashions, and setteth his heart upon the favors, preferment, empty applause, and admiration of the world, that liveth *κατ' αἰσῶνα*, according to the rules and courses, and sinful maximes of worldly men, in such indifferency, compli-ancy and connivance as may flatter others, and delude himselfe; he that is freely and customarily over-ruled by the temptations of Satan, that yeeldeth to loosenesse of heart, to vanity of thoughts, lusts of eye, pride of life, luxury, intemperance, impurity of mind or body, or any other earthly and inordinate affection, is little better in the sight of God than a perjured, and a runnagate person, flinging off from that service unto which he had bound himself by a solemn vow, and robbing Christ of that interest in him which by a mutual stipulation was agreed upon.

Lastly, by the vertue of our communion with him, and participation of his grace and fulnesse. All that we are in regard of Spirit and life is from him, *wee are nothing*

² 2 Cor. 12. 11

of our selves. And we^f can do nothing of our selves. All that we are is from the grace of Christ. ^g By the grace of God I am what I am. And all that we doe is from the grace of Christ, ^h I am able to doe all things through Christ that strengthneth me. As when we doe evil, ⁱ it is not we our selves, but sin that dwelleth in us : So when we doe good, it is ^k not we, but Christ that liveth in us. So that in all respects we are not our owne, but his that died for us.

Now this being a point of so great consequence, needfull it is that we labor therein to try and secure our selves that wee belong unto Christ. For which purpose wee must note, that a man may belong unto Christ two manner of wayes: First, by a meere *External profession*. So all in the visible Church that call themselves Christians, are his, and his word and oracles theirs. In which respect they have many priviledges, (as the Apostle sheweth of the Jewes.) Yet notwithstanding such men continuing unreformed in their inner man, are nearer unto cursing than others, and subject unto a sorer condemnation, for despising Christ in his Word, and Spirit, with whom in their Baptisme they made so solemne a Covenant. For God will not suffer his Gospel to be cast away, but will cause it to prosper unto some end or other, either to save those that believe; or to cumulate the damnation of those that disobey it. He will be more careful to cleanse his garner, and to purge his floore, than of other empty and barren places. A weed in the garden is in more danger of rooting out than in the open field. Such belong unto Christ, no otherwise than Ivy to the tree unto which it externally adheres. Secondly, a man may belong unto Christ by *Implantation into his body*: Which is done by *faith*. But here we are to note, that as some branches in a tree have a more faint and unprofitable fellowship with the roote than others; as having no further strength than to furnish themselves with leaves, but not

VERSE 3.

^f John 15. 5
^g 1 Cor. 15. 10
^h Phil. 4. 13
ⁱ Rom. 7. 20
^k Gal. 2. 20

Esay 29. 13

Esay 55. 10, 11

Luke 3. 17

VERSE 3.

Jam. 2. 26

1 Tim. 1. 5

John 15. 2

not with fruit: so, according to the several vertues or kindes of faith, may the degrees of mens ingrafture into Christ be judged of. There is a dead, unoperative faith, which like *Adam* after his fall, hath the nakednesse thereof covered onely with leaves, with meere formal and hypocritical conformities. And there is an unfained, lively, and effectual faith, which is availeable to those purposes for which faith was appointed; namely to justify the person, to purifie the heart, to quench temptations, to carry a man with wisdom and an unblameable conversation through this present world, to worke by love, to grow and make a man abound in the service of the Lord. And this distinction our Saviour giveth us, *That there are some branches in him which beare not fruit, and those he taketh away: And others which beare fruit, and those he purgeth that they may bring forth more. Those onely are the branches, which he desires to owne.*

And thus to belong unto Christ is that onely which maketh us *λαός θεού* and *οὗς κλητοί*, *A purchased, a peculiar people unto him.* And there are several wayes of evidencing it. I will only name two or three, and most in the Text. First, we must know that Christ is a *Morning-starre*, a *Sunne of Righteousnesse*, and so ever comes to the soule with *selfe-evidencing properties*. Unto him belongeth that royall prerogative, to write *Τεστis Μετσο* in the hearts of men, to be himselfe the witnesse to his owne Acts, purchases, and covenants. Therefore his Spirit came in tongues of fire, and in a mighty winde, all which have several wayes of manifesting themselves, and stand not in need of any borrowed or forraigne confirmations. If Christ then be in the heart he will discover himselfe. His Spirit is the Original of Grace and strength, as concupiscence is of sinne. It is a seed in the heart which will spring up and shew it selfe. And therefore as lust doth take the first advantage of the faint

The faithful are Christs own people.

303

VERSE 3.

faint and imperfect stirrings of the reasonable soul in little infants, to evidence it selfe in pride, folly, stubbornnesse, and other childish finnes. So the Spirit of grace in the heart cannot lie dead, but will worke, and move, and as a Spirit of burning by the light, heate, purging, comforting, inflaming combating vertue which is in it, make the soul which was barren, and settled on the lees, and unacquainted with any such motions before, stand amazed at its owne alteration, and say with *Rebekah*, *If it bee so, why am I thus?* Externals may bee imitated by art; but no man can paint the soul or the life, or the sense and motion of the creature. Now Christ and his Spirit are the internall formes, and active principles in a Christian man, *Christ liveth in us*; when Christ who is *our Life* shall appeare, &c. Therefore impossible it is that any hypocrite should counterfeite, and by consequence obscure those intimate and vitall workings of his grace in the soul, whereby hee evidenceth himselfe thereunto. It is true, a man that feareth the Lord may walke in darknesse, and be in such discomforts as he shall see no light; and yet even in that condition Christ doth not want properties to evidence himselfe, in tendernesse of conscience, feare of sin, striving of Spirit with God, closenesse of heart and constant recourse to him in his word, and the like; onely the soul is shut up and overclouded that it cannot discern him. The Spirit of Christ is a *Seale*, a *ministe*, an earnest, an earnest, a *first fruit* of that fulnesse which is promised hereafter. It is Christs owne Spirit, and therefore fashioneth the hearts of those in whom it is unto his heavenly image, to long for more comprehension of him, for more conformity unto him, for more intimacie and communion with him, for more grace, wisdom, and strength from him; it turneth the heart and course of the soul from that earthly and sensuall end unto which it wrought before; as a good branch having been ingrafted into a wild stock converteth

Eph. 3. 14.
1 Jo. 4. 13.

VERSE 3. Verteth the sappe of a Crab into pleasant fruit.

Againe, if a man be one of Christs people, then there hath a *day of power* passed over him, the sword of the Spirit hath entred into him, hee hath beene conquered by the rod of Christs strength, he hath felt *Iohns* axe laid to the root of his conscience, and hath beene perswaded by the terrour of the Lord; for the comming of Christ is with shaking: the conscience hath felt a mightie operation in the Word, though to other men it hath passed over like emptie breath; for the Word *worketh effectually in those that beleeve*, and bringeth about the purposes for which it was sent. To those that are called it is the power of God, 1 Cor. 1. 22:

Ezek. 16. 9. 14

Esay. 61. 3.

Againe, where Christ comes, he comes with *beautie and holinesse*, those who lay in their blood and pollutions before bare and naked, are made exceeding beautifull, and renowned for their beauty, *perfect through the comelines which he puts upon them*. He comes unto the soul with beauty and pretious oile, and garments of praise, that is, with comfort, joy, peace, healing, to present the Church a Holy Church without spot or wrinkle to his Father.

Iohn. 7. 38. 15.

2.

Cant. 4. 2.

Esay. 32. 15.

Rom. 7. 4.

Lastly, where Christ commeth he cometh with a *wombe of the morning*, with much light to acquaint the soul with his truth and promises; and with much fruitfulness, making the heart, which was barren before, to flow with rivers of living water, to bring forth fruit more and more, and to abound in the workes of the Lord: These are the particular evidences of our belonging to Christ in the Text, and by these we must examine our selves. Doe I finde in my soul the new name of the Lord Iesus written, that I am not onely in tittle, but in truth a Christian? Doe I finde the secret nature and figure of Christ fashioned in mee, swaying mine heart to the love and obedience of his holy wayes? Doe I heare the voice, and feele the hand and iudicature of his blessed Spirit within me, leading me in a new course, ordering

ring mine inner man, sentencing and crucifying mine earthly members? Am I a serious and earnest enemy to my originall lusts, and closest corruptions? Doe I feele the workings and kindlings of them in mine heart with much paine and mourning, with much humiliation for them; and deprecation against them? Is Christ my center? Doe I finde in mine heart a willingness to be with him, as well here in his word, wayes, promises, directions, comforts, yea, in his reproches and persecutions, as hereafter in his glory? Is it the greatest businesse of my life to make my selfe more like him, to walke as he also walked, to be as he was in this world, to purifie my selfe even as he is pure? Hath the terrour of his wrath perswaded me, and shaken my conscience out of its carnall securitie, and made me looke about for a refuge from the wrath to come, and esteeme more beautifull than the morning brightnesse the feet of those who bring glad tidings of deliverance and peace? Hath his Gospellan effectual feminall vertue within me to new forme my nature and life daily unto his heavenly Image? Is it an ingrafted word which mingleth with my conscience, and hideth it selfe in my heart, actuating, determining, moderating, and over-ruling it to its owne way? Am I cleansed from my filthinesse, carefull to keepe my selfe chaste, comely, beautifull, a fit spouse for the fairest of ten thousand? Doe I rejoyce in his light, walking as a childe of light, living as an heire of light, going on like the Sunne unto the perfect day, labouring to abound alwayes in the work of the Lord? Then I may have good assurance that I belong unto Christ. And if so, that will be a seminary of much comfort to my soul.

For first, if we are Christs, then he *careth for us*, for propriety is the ground of care. *He that is an hireling*, saith our Saviour, *and not the shepherd, whose own the sheepe are not, seeth the wolfe comming, and leaveth the sheepe, &c. Because hee is an hireling he careth not for the sheepe.*

Ioh. 10. 12. 13. 14.

VERSE 3

Ezek. 34. 11-15

Heb. 3. 5, 6.

Ezek. 16. 8, 9.

Ezek. 15. 5.

Psal. 80. 15.

Esay. 63. 8-19

Esay. 26. 13.

Ezek. 16. 8, 9.

Iohn. 15. 2.

Tit. 2. 14.

Psal. 4. 3.

2 Tim. 2. 21.

sheepe. But I am the good Shepherd, and know my sheepe, and am knowne of mine, because they are mine, therefore I am carefull of them. He watcheth over us, he searcheth and seeketh us out in our stragglings, and feedeth us. This is the principall argument we have to beleve, that God will looke upon us for good, notwithstanding our manifold provocations, because he is pleased to owne us, and to take us as his owne peculiar people. Though the Church be full of ruines yet because it is his own house, he will repaire it; though it be blacke aswell as comely, yet because it is his owne Spouse, he will pitie and cherish it; though it bring forth wilde grapes, and bee indeed meet for no worke, yet because it is his owne vine, planted by his owne right hand, and made strong for himselfe, he will therefore be carefull to fence and prune it. This is the onely argument we have to prevaile with God in prayer, that in Christ we call him *Father*, wee present our selves before him, as his *owne*, we make mention of no other Lord or name over us, and therefore he cannot deny us the things which are good for us.

Secondly, if wee are Christs, then hee will certainly *purge us*, and make the members fuseable to the head. I sware unto thee, and entred into covenant with thee, saith the Lord, and *thou becamest mine*, and immediately it followes, *then washed I thee with water*, yea, I thoroughly washed a way thy blood from thee. Every branch in me that beareth fruit, he purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit. He purifieth to himselfe a *peculiar people*: If we be his *peculiar people*, and set apart for himselfe (as the Prophet David speakes) he will undoubtedly *purifie us*; that we may be honourable vessels, sanctified and meet for the Masters use, and prepared unto every good worke. He will furnish us with all such supplies of the spirit of grace, as the condition of that place in his body requires, in the which he hath set us. Grace and glory will he give, and no good thing will he withhold

hold from those who walke uprightly, our propriety to Christ, giveth us right unto all good things: *All is yours, and you are Christs.*

Thirdly, if we are Christs, then he will *spare us*. This was the argument which the Priest was to use betweene the Porch and the Altar, *Spare thy people, O Lord*, and give not thine heritage to reproach. Then wil the Lord be jealous for his Land, and *piy his people*. They *shal be mine*, saith the Lord, in the day that I make up my jewels; and I will *spare them*, as a man *spareth his own Son* that serveth him. Of my servant, to whom I give wages for the merit of his worke, not out of love or grace, I expect a service proportionable to the pay he receives: But in my child I reward not the dignity of the worke, but onely the willingnesse, the loving and obedient disposition of the heart; and therefore I pass over those failings and weaknesses which discover themselves for want of skill or strength, and not of love, praising the endeavours, and pardoning the miscarriages. Thus doth the Lord deal with his children.

Fourthly, if we be Christs, he will *pray for us*. I pray not for the world, but for *them which thou hast given me, for they are thine; and all mine are thine, and thine are mine, &c.* so that we shall be sure to have helpe in all times of need, because we know that the Father heareth his Sonne alwaies; and those things which in much fear, weaknesse, and ignorance we ask for our selves, if it be according to Gods will, and by the dictate and mouth of the Spirit in our heart. Christ himself in his intercession demandeth for us the same things. *And this is the ground of that confidence which we have in him, that if we ask any thing according to his will he heareth us, and we have the petitions that we desire of him.* For as the world hateth us, because it hated him first; so the Father loveth and heareth us, because hee loveth and heareth him first.

VERSE 3.

Joel 2. 17, 18.

Exod. 32. 12.

Numb. 14. 13.

Isa. 64. 9.

Mal. 3. 17.

John 17. 9, 10.

John 11. 42.

1 John 5. 14.

VERSE 3.

John 10.3.4

Psal. 140.19

John. 8.17.

Psal. 119.125

Verse 64.

Jer. 30.10.11

Ezra 9.13

Qui cruciatur,
non considerat
quemadmodum
laetatur; qui cu-
ras, considerat
quemadmodum
secatur. Aug.

Fifthly, if we be Christ's, then he will teach us, and commune with us, and reveale himself unto us, and lead us with his voice. He calleth his owne sheep by name, and leadeth them; and putteth them forth, and goeth before them: Because Israel was his owne people, therefore he shewed them his words. *The Law was theirs, and the Oracles theirs*, when he entred into covenant with a people, that they become his, then he writeth his Law in their hearts, and teacheth them. This is the Prophet Davids argument, *I am thy servant, give me understanding*: Because I am thine in a special relation, therefore acquaint me with thee in a special manner. *The earth is full of thy mercy*, there is much of thy goodness revealed to all the nations of the world, even to those that are not called by thy name: but as for me, whom thou hast made thine own by a neerer relation, let mee have experience of a greater mercy, *Teach me thy Statutes*.

Sixthly, if we be his, hee will chastise us in mercy, and not in fury; though he leave us not altogether unpunished, yet he will punish us lesse then our iniquities deserve; he will not deal with us as with others: *Though I make a full end of all nations whither I have driven thee, yet I will not make a full end of thee, but I will correct thee in measure. I will correct thee to cure, but not to ruine thee*.

The second thing considered in the words, was the *Present condition of the people of Christ*, which was to be *military men*, to joyn with the armies of Christ against all his enemies. As he was, so must we be in this world; no sooner was Christ consecrated by his solemne Baptisme unto the worke of a Medintour, but presently hee was assaulted by the Tempter: and no sooner doth any man give up his name to Christ, and break loose from that hellish power under which he was held; but presently Pharaoh and his hosts, Satan and his confederates

rates pursue him with deadly fury; and pour out floods of malice and rage against him. Hell and Death are at truce with wicked men, there is a covenant and agreement betwixt them, Satan holdeth his possession in peace: but when a stronger then he cometh upon; and overcometh him, there is from that time implacable venome and hostility against such a soule; the malice, power, policy, stratagems, and machinations of Satan; the lusts and vanities, the pleasures, honours, profits, persecutions, frownes, flatteries, snares of the wicked world: the affections, desires, inclinations, deceits of our own fleshly hearts, wil ever ply the soule of a Christian, and force it to perpetual combats.

There is in Satan an everlasting enmity against the Glory, Mercy, and Truth of God; against the power and mystery of the Gospel of Christ. This malice of his exerciseth it selfe against all those that have given themselves to Christ, whose Kingdome hee mightily laboureth to demolish: by his power persecuting it, by his craftinesse and wily insinuations undermining it; by his vast knowledge and experience in palliating, altering, mixing, proportioning and measuring his temptations and spirituall wickednesse in such manner, as that he may subvert the Church of Christ, either in the purity thereof, by corrupting the Doctrine of Christ with heresie, and his worship with idolatry and superstition: or in the unity thereof, by pestering it with schisme and distraction; or in the liberty thereof, by bondage of Conscience; or in the progresse and enlargement thereof, endeavouring to blast and make fruitlesse the Ministry of the Gospel. And this malice of Satan is wonderfully set on and encouraged both by the corruption of our nature, those armies of lusts and affections which swarm within us, entertaining, joyning force, and co-operating with all his suggestions; disheartning, reclaiming and pulling back the soule when it offers to make any opposition; and also by the

VERSE 3.

Iſai. 28. 15.

Luke 11. 21.

VERSE 3.

men, and materials of this evil world: By the examples, the threats, the interests, the power, the intimacie, the wit, the tongues, the hands, the exprobrations, the persecutions, the insinuations and seductions of wicked men. By the profits, the pleasures, the preferments, the acceptance, credit and applause of the world.

By all which meanes Satan most importunately pursueth one of these two ends, either to *subvert* the godly by drawing them away from Christ to apostacie, formality, hypocrisie, spiritual pride, and the like; or else to *Discomfort* them with diffidence, doubts, light of sinnen, opposition of the times, vexation of spirit, and the like afflictions. And these oppositions of Satan meet with a Christian in every respect or consideration, under which he may be conceiv'd: consider him in his *spiritual estate*, in his *several parts*, in his *temporal relations*, in his *actions* or *employments*; and in all these Satan is busie to overturne the Kingdome of Christ in him. In his *spirituall estate*, if he be a *weake Christian*, he assaulteth him with perpetuall doubts and fears touching his election, conversion, adoption, perseverance, Christian liberty, strength against corruptions, companies, temptations, persecutions, &c. If he be a *strong Christian*, he labourerth to draw him unto self-confidence, spiritual pride, contempt of the weak, neglect of further proficiencie, and the like. There is no *natural part* or facultie which is not aimed at likewise by the malice of Satan; for Christ when he comes takes possession of the whole man, and therefore Satan sets himselfe against the whole man. Corporeall and *sensitive faculties*, tempted either to *sinfull representations*, letting in and transmitting the provisions of lust unto the heart, by gazing and glutting themselves on the objects of the world: or to *sinfull expentions*, finishing and letting out those lusts which have beene conceived in the heart. The *phantasie* tempted by Sanaticall injections and immutations to be the forge of loose, vain, unprofitable,

unprofitable, and uncleane thoughts. The *understanding* to earthly wisdom, vanity, infidelity, prejudices, misperceptions, fleshly reasonings, vaine speculations and curiosities, &c. The *will* to stiffenesse, resistance, dislike of holy things, and pursuit of the world. The *conscience* to deadnesse, immobilitie, and a stupid benumbednesse, to slavish terrors and evidences of hell, to superstitious bondage, to carnal securitie, to desperate conclusions. The *affections* to independence, distraction, excesse, precipitancie, &c. In *temporal conditions*, there is no estate of health, wealth, peace, honor, estimation, or the contraries unto these: no relation of husband, father, magistrate, subject, &c. unto which Satan hath not such suteable suggestions, as by the advantage of fleshly corruptions may take from them occasion to draw a man from God. Lastly, in regard of our *actions and employments*, whether they be *Divine*, such as respect God, as acts of pietie, in reading, hearing, meditating, and studying his Word, in calling upon his name, and the like, or such as respect *our selves*, as acts of temperance, and sobriety, personal examinations, and more particular acquaintance with our owne hearts; or such as respect *others*, as acts of righteousness, charity, and edification. Or whether they be actions *natural*, such as are requisite to the preservation of our being, as sleep and diet: or actions *civil*, in our *callings or recreations*, in all these Satan laboureth either to *pervert* us in the performance of them, or to *divert* us from it. There is then no condition, facultie, relation, or action of a Christian man, the which is not alwaies under the eye and envie of a most raging, wise and industrious enemy. And therefore great reason there is, that Christians should be *Military men*, well instructed in the whole armour of God, that they may be able to stand against the wiles of the Devil, and to quench all his fiery darts. It is our calling to wrestle against principalities and powers, and

VERSE 3 spiritual wickednesses in high places, to resist the devill, to strive against sinne, to mortifie earthly members, to destroy the body of sinne, to denie our selves, to contradict the reasonings of the flesh, to checke and controule the stirrings of concupiscence, to resist and subdue the desires of our evil hearts, to withstand and answer the assaults of Satan, to out-face the scornes, and despise the flatteries of the present world; in all things to endure hardnesse as the souldiers of Jesus Christ. Our cause is righteous, our captaine is wise and puissant, our service honourable, our victory certaine, our reward masse and eternal, so that in all respects great encouragements we have to be voluntaries in such warre, the issue whereof is our enemies perdition, our Masters honour, and our owne Salvation.

The third thing observed was the through and *universal* Resignation and devotednesse of Christs people unto him. Thy people shall be *willing*, or a people of *great devotion* in the day of thy Power. From whence I shall gather two observations: First, They that belong unto Christ as his people, are most thoroughly and *willingly subject unto his government*, doe consecrate, resigne, and yeild up their whole soules and bodies to serve in his warres against all his enemies. For the distinct understanding of which point, we are to observe first, that *by nature* we are *utterly unwilling* to be subject unto Christ. The carnal minde is *enemie* against God; it is *not subject* to the Law of God, *neither indeed can bee*. For if Christ be over us, the body of sinne must die; it once crucified him, and he will be reveng'd upon it. By nature we are willingly subject unto no Law, but the Law of our members, nor to no will, but the will of the flesh; full of contumacie, rebellion, and stoutnesse of spirit against the truth and beauty of the word or wayes of God. The Love of corrupted nature is wholly ^a set upon our owne wayes, as an ^b untamed heifer,

Rom. 8. 7, 8, 10

Mal. 3. 17

1 Sam. 15. 23

Ecclef. 8. 11

Prov. 14. 14

Jer. 2. 24 & 8. 6

Hof. 4. 16

or a wilde asse; men ^cwander, and ^dgoe about, and ^ewearie themselves in their full compasse and swinge of lust, and will not be turned. And therefore it is that they bid God ^fdepart from them, and desire not the knowledge of his wayes, that they leave the pathes of uprightnesse; that having ^gcrooked hearts of their owne, they labour likewise to pervert and ^hmake crooked the Gospel of Christ, that they may from thence steale countenance to their sinnes, contrary to that holy affection of ⁱDavid, *Make my way strait before me*: And they ^ksnuffe and rage, and ^lpull away the shoulder, and ^mfall backward, and ⁿthrust away God from them. And hence it is that men are so apt to cavil, and foolishly to charge the wayes of God; first, as *grievous wayes*; too full of austerity, narrownesse and restraint. ^o*I knew that thou wert an austere man*; and this is an ^phard saying, *who can beare it?* ^q*The land is not able to beare all his words*. ^r*There is a Lion in the way*, a certaine damage and unavoidable mischief will follow me if I keepe in it. Thus as ^sIsrael, when they heard of Giants and sonnes of *Anak*, had no heart to Canaan, but cried, and whined, and rebelled, and mutined, and in their heart turned back into Egypt; that is, had more will to their owne bondage, than to Gods Promise: so, when a natural man heares of walking in a narrow way with much exactnesse and circumspection, that come what baite of preferment, pleasure, profit or advantage will, yet he must not turne to the right hand or to the left, nor commit the least evil for the greatest good: that as the people in the wilderness were to goe onely where the cloud and pillar of Gods presence led them, though he carried them through giants, terrours and temptations: so a Christian must resolve to follow the Lambe whither soever he goeth; He then turneth backe unto his iniquities, and refuseth to heare the words of the Lord. Secondly, as *unprofitable wayes*: ^u*for who will shew us any good?* is the onely lan-

VERSE 3.

^c Je. 2. 20
^d Jer. 31. 22
^e E. 17. 10
^f Job 21. 14
^g Deut. 32. 5
^h Gal. 1. 7
ⁱ 1 Pet. 3. 16
^k Psal. 5. 8
^l Ma. 1. 13
^m Nehem. 9. 29
ⁿ A. 8. 7. 58
^o A. 8. 7. 39
^p Mt. 23. 34
^q John 6. 60
^r Amos 7. 10
^s Prov. 32. 13
^t Num. 13. 31
^u & 14. 14
Neh. 9. 16, 17

^v Jer. 22. 10
^w Psal. 4. 6

VERSE 3

* Job 22. 17

* Mal. 3. 14. 15

* Mich. 2. 7

1 Tim. 4. 8

1 Sam. 2. 30

* Ezek. 18. 25

1 Pet. 4. 4

Ezay 8. 18

Zech. 3. 8

1 Cor. 1. 24

b Hol. 4. 4

c Jer. 2. 27

Hol. 5. 5, 6

a Kin. 17. 24. 26

d Qui gebennas

metuit, non pec-

care metuit, sed

ardere; ille autē

pecare metuit.

qui peccatum ip-

sum sicut geben-

nas odit. Aug.

Epi. 1. 44. In ipsa

intus voluntate

peccat, qui non

voluntate, sed vi-

more non peccat.

Idem con. 2. Epi.

Pelag. li. 1. cap. 9

et lib. 2. c. 9.

Non sicut firam

et simeo et odi,

ita etiam patrem

verecor quem ti-

meo et amo. Cle.

Alex. Strom. li. 2.

guage of carnal men : * *What can the Almighty doe for us, say the wicked in Job ? It is in vaine to serve God, what profit have we that we have kept his ordinances, &c ?* If we must take our conscience along in all the businesses of our life, there will be no living in the world; notwithstanding the Lord saith, that his words doe good to those that walke uprightly, that godlinesse hath the Promises even of this life : that God will honour them that honor him. Thirdly, as * *unequal, and unreasonable wayes, as a* strange, a mad, and a foolish strictnesse, rather the me-
 teor of a speculative braine, than a thing of any real ex-
 istence; rather *votum* than *veritas*, a wish or figment, than a solid truth. And from such prejudices as these men grow to wrestle with the Spirit of Christ, to with-
 stand his motions, to quench his suggestions, and to dis-
 pute against him. ^b *This people are as they that strive with the Priest*, such a bitter and unconcitable enmity there is betweene the two seeds.

Secondly, we may observe, that notwithstanding this natural avernesse, yet many by the *Power of the Word* are wrought violently and compulsorily to render some unwilling services to Christ, by the spirit of bondage, by the feare of wrath, by the evidences of the curse due to sinne, and by the wakefulness of the conscience. ^c *They have turned their backe unto me, and not their face* saith the Lord; that notes the disposition of their will. ^d *But in the time of their trouble, they will say, Arise and save me*; that notes their compulsorie and unnatural devotion. *They shall goe with their backs and their hearts*, that is, with their pretended sacrifices, and external ceremonies to strike the Lord; but they shall not finde him; he hath withdrawnne himselfe : As when the Lord sent Lions amongst the Samaritanes, then they sent to enquire after the manner of his worship, fearing him, but yet still serving their owne Gods. But this compulsory obedience doth not proceed from ^d a feare of sinne, but a feare of hell.

well. And that plainly appeareth in the readinesse of such men to apprehend all advantages for enlarging themselves, and in making pretences to fling away and steale from the Word of Grace, in consulting with carnal reason to silence the doubts, to loose the knots, and to breake the bonds of the conscience a flounder, and to turne into every diverticiele which a corrupted heart can shape, in taking every occasion and pretext to put God off, and delay the payment of their service unto him. Thus *Felix*, when he was frighted with the discourse of *Sainte Paul* put it off with pretence of some farther convenient season, and the unwilling Jewes in the time of reedifying the temple at Jerusalem. *This people say the time is not come, the time that the Lords house should be built*; in sighting the warnings, and distinguishing the words of Scripture out of their spiritual and genuine puritie; and for *bellying the Lord*, and saying, *In sooth he, The word of the Lord, saith the Prophet, is to them a reproach, they have no delight in it*; that is, they esteeme me when I preach thy words unto them rather as a slanderer than as a Prophet. Wouldst thou then know the nature of thy devotion? Abstract all conceits of danger, all workings of the spirit of bondage, the fear of wrath, the preoccupations, bell, the situations and sweatings of a troubled conscience, and if all these being secluded, thou canst still afford to dedecate thy selfe to Christ, and be greedily ambitious of his image, that is an evident assurance of an upright heart.

Thirdly, we may observe, that by the Power of the Word there may yet be further wrought in natural men a certaine *Vellitie*, a languid and incomplete will, bounded with secret reservations, exceptions, and conditions of its owne, which maketh it upon every new occasion mutable and inconsistent. When the hypocritical Jewes came with such a solemn protestation unto the Prophet *Jeremie*, *The Lord be a true and faithful*

widnesse

Vb RES. B. 37

Aug. de Natur. & Grat. cap. 57. cont. 2. ep. Pelag. l. 3. c. 4. & To. 4. li. de Spi. & lit. cap. ult.

Ag. 24. 25

1 Hag. 1. 2

Jer. 5. 12, 13 & 6. 10

Nec si per hypothesin a Deo postulatae acceptis faciendi ea quae sunt prohibita citra illam penam: — sed nec si per suum habueris fore, ut Deum laseant qua geris, in animum unquam induceris aliquid agas praeter rectam rationem, Clem. Alex. Strom. l. 4. Vid. Aquir. par. 3. qu. 2. v. 1. c. 6. Semisanciam hac atq: hac versare & jactare voluntatem, &c. Aug. confess. l. 8. c. 8.

Jer. 42. 3, 5, 6. & 43. 1.

was once more by the experience of *David* in innocencie
 reduc'd unto the same acknowledgement. The people
 in one place would have made Christ a King: so much
 did they seeme to honour him, and yet at another time
 when their over-pliable and unresolved affections were
 wrought upon by the subtil Pharisees, they cried against
 him, as against a slave, Crucifie him, crucifie him. So
 may it be in the general services of God, men may have
 wishings and wouldings, and good liking of the truth,
 and some faint and floating resolutions to pursue it:
 which yet having no firme roote, nor proceeding from
 the whole bent of the heart, from a through mortification
 of sinne, and evidence of Grace, but from such weak
 and wavering principles, as may be perturbed by every
 new temptation, like letters written in sand, they vanish
 away like a morning dew, and leave the heart as hard
 and scorched as it was before. The young man (whom
 for his ingenuity and forwardnesse Christ loved) came
 in a sad and serious manner to learne of Christ the
 way to heaven: and yet we finde there were secret
 reservations which he had not discerned in himselfe, up-
 on discovery whereof by Christ he was discouraged and
 did repent of his resolution. *Mark* 10. 21, 22. The
 Apostle speaketh of a Repentance: *nos; to be repented of;*
2 Cor. 7. 10. which hath firme, solid, and permanent rea-
 sons to support it, therein secretly intimating that there
 is likewise a Repentance which riseth out of an incom-
 plete will, and admitting certaine secret and undiscerned
 reservations, doth upon the appearance of them, flag and
 fall away, and leave the unfaithful heart to repent of its
 repentance. Saint *James* tells us that a double-minded man
 is unstable in all his wayes, *James. 1. 8.* never uniforme nor
 constant to any rules. Now this division of the minde
 stands thus: The heart on the one side is taken up with
 the pleasures of sinne for the present; and on the other,
 with the desires of salvation for the future; and now ac-
 cording

VER. 1. 2. 3.

V. R. S. B.

according to the workings and representations of the one or other life at the time more fresh and predominant, in like manner it standeth for that time either cherished or suppressed. Many men at a good Sermon, when the matter is fresh and newly presented, while they are looking on their face in the glasse, or in any extremie of sicknesse, when the provisions of lust doe not relish for the present, when they have none but thoughts of salvation to depend upon, are very resolute to make promises, vowes, and professions of better living; but when the pleasures of sin grow strong to present themselves againe, they return, like a man recover'd of an ague, with more stomacke and greedinesse to their lusts againe; As water which hath been stop'd for a while rusheth with the more violence, when its passages are opened. A double heart is like the boles of a Scale, according as more weight is put into one or other, to witte they differently over-ruled unto either motion, up or downe. When I see a vapour ascend out of the earth into the aire, why should I not thinke that it will never leave rising till it get up to heaven? and yet because the motion is not natural, but caused either by expulsion from a heat within, or by attraction from a heat without, when the cause of that ascent is abated, and the matter gathers together into a thicker consistence, it growes heaue and falls downe againe. Even such is the affection of those faint and unresolved desires of men, who like Agrippa, are but half-perswaded to believe in Christ.

But now lastly we must observe, that in the day of Christ's power, when he by his word and Spirit worketh effectually in the hearts of men, they are then made free-will offerings, Totally willing to obey and serve him in all conditions. The heart of every one firreth him up, and his Spirit maketh them willing for the work and service of the Lord, *Exod. 35. 21.* They *yeild themselves* unto the Lord, and their members as weapons of righteousness unto him, *2 Chron. 30. 8.* *Rom. 6. 19.* They offer

offer and present themselves to God as a living Sacrifice, and therefore they are called *προσφορα*, an oblation sanctified by the Holy Ghost, Rom. 12.1. Rom. 15.16. Therefore they are said to come unto Christ by the vertue of his Fathers teaching, John 6.45. To runne unto him, *Isaiab 55.5.* To gather themselves together under him as a common head, and to flow or flock together with much mutual encouragement unto the mountaine of the Lord, *Hos. 1.11. Isai. 2.2.3.* To waite upon him in his Law, *Isai. 42.4.* To enter into a sure Covenant, and to write and seale it, *Nehem. 9.38.* In one word, To serve him with a perfect heart, and with a willing minde, 1 Chron. 28.9. when the heart is perfect, undivided, and goeth all together, the minde will be willing to serve the Lord.

This willingnesse of Christs people sheweth it selfe in two things: First, in begetting most cordiall and constant Enmities against all the enemies of Christ, never holding any league or intelligence with them, but being alwaies ready to answer the Lord, as David did Saul, *Thy servant will goe and fight with this Philistine.* Hee that is a voluntiere in Christs armies, is not disheartned with the potentie, policie, malice, subtilty, or prevailing faction of any of his adversaries. Hee is contented to denie himselfe, to renounce the friendship of the world, to bid defiance to the allurements of Satan, to smile upon the face of danger, to hate father, and mother, and land, and life, to be cruel to himselfe, and regardlesse of others for his Masters service. Through honour and dishonour, through evil report and good report, through a Sea and a wilderness, through the hottest services, and strongest oppositions will hee follow the Lambe whithersoever he goeth: though he receive the word in much affliction: yet he wil receive it with joy too. Secondly, in begetting most loving, constant, and dear affections to the mercie grace, glory, and wayes of God, an universal conformity

VERSE 13.

unto Christ our Head, who was contented to take upon him the forme of a servant, to have his ear bored; and his Will subjected unto the Will of his Father: *I delight exceedingly with O my God, yea, thy Law is within my heart. Psalm 40.8.* And as he was, so are all his in this world, of the same minde, judgement, spirit, conversation, and therefore of the same will too.

Now this dear and melting affection of the heart toward Christ and his wayes, whereby the soul longeth after him, and hasteth unto him, is wrought by several principles: First, by the *Conviction of our natural estate*, and a through humiliation for the same. *Pride is ever the principle of disobedience.* They were the proud men who said unto *Jeremiah*, *thou speakest falsely, the Lord hath not sent thee*, *Jer. 43.2.* And they were the proud men who hardened their necks, and withdrew the shoulder, and would not heare, and refused to obey, *Nehew. 9.16, 17, 19.* A man must be first brought to deny himselfe, before hee will be willing to follow Christ, and so lug a crosse after him. A man must be first *humble himselfe*, before he walke with God, *Mich. 6.8.* The poore only receive the Gospel. The hungry onely finde sweetnes in bitter things. Extremities will make any man not only willing, but thankful to take any course wherein he may recover himselfe and subsist againe. When the soule finds it self in darknesse, and hath no light, and begins to consider whither darknesse leads it; that it is even now in the mouth of hel, under the paw of the roaring Lion, under the guilt of sione, the curse of the Law, and the hatred and wrath of God, it cannot chuse but most willingly pursue any probability, and with most enlarged affections meete any tender of deliverance. Suppose wee, that a Prince should cause some bloody malefactor to be brought forth, should set before his eyes all the racks and tortures which the wit of man can invent to punish prodigious offenders withall,

and

and should cause him to taste some of those extremities: and then in the midst of his howling and anguish, should not only reach out a hand of mercie to deliver him, but should further promise him upon his submission to advance him like *Joseph* from the iron which enters into his soule unto publick honour and service in the State; would not the heart of such a man be melted into thankfulness, and with all submission resigne self unto the mercy and service of so gracious a Prince? Now the Lord doth not only deale thus with sinners: doth not only cause them by the report of his Word, and by the experience of their own guilty hearts, to feel the weight, fruitlesse-ness, and shame of sin, and the first fruits of that eternal vengeance which is thereunto due: nor onely set forth Christ before them as a rock of redemption, reaching out a hand to save, and offering great and precious promises of an exceeding, eternall, abundant weight of glory: but besides all this, doth inwardly touch the heart by the finger of his Spirit, framing it to a spirituall and divine conformity unto Christ. How can the soul of such a man in these present extremities of horror, which yet are but the pledges of infinite more which must ensue; and in the evidence of so wonderfull and sweet promises, the scales of the eternal favour and fellowship of God, choose but with much importunity of affection to lay hold on so great a hope which is set before it, and with all readinesse and ambition of so high a service, yeild up it selfe into the hands of so gracious a Lord, to be by him ordered and over-ruled unto any obedience?

Secondly, this willingness of Christs People is wrought by a *spiritual illumination of minde*. And therefore the Conversion of sinners is called a *Conviction*, because it is ever wrought in us *Secundum modum iudicii*, as wee are reasonable and intelligent creatures. I take it (under favour and submission to better judgements) for a

firm

VERSE 3.

a) Col. 4. 17

Acts 14. 26.

2 Tim. 4. 5.

Rom. 15. 19.

b) 2 Cor. 1. 18.

Luke 24. 32

1 Cor. 8. 2.

firm^e truth; that if the minde of a man were once thoroughly and in a spiritual manner (as it becometh such objects as are altogether spirituall) possessed of the adequate goodnesse and truth which is in grace and glory, the heart could not utterly reject them; for humane liberty is not a brutish, but a reasonable thing; it consisteth not in contumacie or head-strongnes, but in such a manner of working, as is apt to be regulated, varied, or suspended by the dictate of right reason. The only cause why men are not willing to submit unto Christ, is because they are not thoroughly, and in a manner suitable to the spiritual excellencie of the things, illighted in their minde.

The Apostle often maketh mention of ^a fulfilling, and making full proof of our ministry, and of preaching the Gospel fully, namely, with the evidence of the Spirit and of power, and with such a manifestation of the truth, as it doth commend it self unto the conscience of a man. The ^b Word of God, saith the Apostle, is yea and nay, that is, a thing that may be admitted or denied at pleasure, but such a word as hath no in-evidence in it selfe, nor leaveth any uncertainty or hesitancie in a mind fitted to receive it. And as we may thus distinguish of Preaching, that there is an imperfect, and a full preaching; so may wee distinguish of understanding the things preached, in some it is full, and in others but superficial; for there is a Twofold illumination of the mind, the one Theoretical and meerly Notionall, consisting in knowledg; the other Practical, experimental, and spirituall, consisting in the irradiation of the soule by the light of Gods countenance, in such an apprehension of the truth as maketh the heart to burn thereby: When we know things as we ought to know them, that is, when the manner and life of our knowledge is answerable to the nature and excellencie of the things knowne, when the eye is spiritually opened to believe, & seriously to conclude that the things spoken are of most precious and everlasting consequence

quence to the soul, as things that concerne our peace with God: This is the *Learning of Christ* the teaching of the Father, the knowing of things which passe knowledge, the setting to the scale of our owne hearts that God is true, the evidence of spirituall things not to the braine, but to the conscience. In one word, this is that which the Apostle calleth, *A spirituall Demonstration*. And surely in this case, the heart is never over-ruled contrary to the full, spiritvall, and infallible evidence of Divine truths, unto a practicall judgement. Therefore the Apostle saith that *Eve being Deceived* was in the transgression, and there is frequent mention made of the *deceitfulnesse of sin*, to note that sin got into the world, by error and seduction. For certainly the will is *ὁρεξις μὲν τὰ λόγους*, a *Rationall Appetite*, and therefore (as I conceive) doth not stirre from such a good as is fully and spiritually represented thereunto, as the most universall, adequate, and unquestionable object of the desires and capacities of a humane soul; for the freedome and willing consent of the heart is not lawlesse, or without rules to moderate it, but it is therefore said to be free, because whether out of a true judgement it move one way, or out of a false, another; yet in both it moveth *naturally, secundum modum sibi competentem*, in a manner suteable to its owne condition.

If it bee objected that the heart being unregenerate is utterly averse unto any good, and therefore is not likely to bee made willing by the illumination of the minde. To this I answer, that it is true, the will must not onely bee moved, but also renewed and changed, before it can yeeld to Christ: But withall, that God doth never so fully and spiritually convince the judgement, in that manner of which I have spoken, without a speciall worke of grace thesupon, opening the eye, and removing all naturall ignorance, prejudice, hesitancie, inadvertency, misperswasion, or any other distemper of the minde

Y

which

1 Tim. 2. 14.

Oportet non tantum moveri, sed etiam novam fieri. Prosper.

VERSE 3.

Psal. 51. 12.

1 Tim. 1. 7.

2 Cor. 3. 17.

which might hinder the evidence of spirituall truth. By which meanes hee also frameth and fashioneth the will to accept, embrace, and love those good things, of which the minde is thus prepossessed.

Thirdly, this *willingnesse* of Christs people is wrought by the *Communion* and *adspiration* of the *Spirit of Grace*, which is a *free spirit*, a *spirit of love*, and a *spirit of liberty*, a spirit which is in every faculty of man, as the soul and principle of its Christianity or Heavenly being and working. And therefore it makes every faculty *secundum modum sibi proprium* to worke unto spirituall ends and objects. As the soul in the eye causeth that to see, and in the eare to heare, and in the tongue to speake: so the spirit of Grace in the minde causeth it rightly to understand, and in the will causeth it freely to desire Heavenly things; and in every faculty causeth it to move towards Christ in such a way and manner of working, as is futable to its nature:

Fourthly, this *willingnesse* of Christs people ariseth from the *apprehension* of Gods deare love, bowels of mercy, and riches of most unsearchable grace, revealed in the face of Iesus Christ to every broken and penitent spirit. Love is naturally, when it is once apprehended, an Attractive of love. And therefore it is that the Apostle saith, *Faith worketh by love*, that is, By faith first the heart is perswaded and affected with Gods Love unto us in Christ. *I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himselfe for me*, Gal. 2. 20. Eph. 3. 17. 18. Being thus perswaded of his love to us, the heart is framed to love him againe: for who can be perswaded of so great a benefit as the remission of sins, and not be most deeply inflamed with the love of him, by whom they are remitted? 1. *Iob. 4. 19. Luk. 7. 47.* and lastly by this reciprocal love of the heart to Christ, *faith becommeth effectuall* to worke obedience and conformity to his will, *Love is the fulfilling of the Law*, he that loves God would with

with all joyfullnesse fulfill every jot of Gods Law if it were possible: *This is the love of God*, saith the Apostle, *that we keep his Commandements, and his Commandements are not grievous.* True love overcomes all difficulties, is not apt to pretend occasions for neglecting any service of God, nor to conceive any prejudices against it, but puts an edge and alacrity upon the spirit of a man: he can no more be said to love Christ, who doth not willingly undergoe his yoke, than that woman to love her husband who is ever griev'd at his presence, and delighteth more in the society of strangers.

Fifthly, this *willingnesse* of Christs people ariseth from the *beauty and preciousnesse of those ample Promises*, which by the love of Christ are made unto us. It is said of *Moses* that he did *chuse* (and that is the greatest act of willingnesse) rather to suffer affliction with the people of God, than to enjoy the pleasures of sin for a season: and the ground of this willingnesse was, *he had a respect unto the recompence of the reward*, Heb. 11. 25, 26. so Christ endur'd the Crosse, and despised the shame, that is, the shame (which would much have stagger'd and disheartned an unresolved man) was no prejudice or discouragement unto him, to abate any of his most willing obedience, and the motive was, *for the joy that was set before him*, Heb. 12. 2. And Saint Paul professeth of himselfe that hee *pressed forward*, hee was not onely willing, but importunate and contentious to put forth all his spirits, and like riders in a race to rouse up himself in a holy fervour and emulation, and all this was *for the Price of the high calling of God in Christ Iesus*, which was, as it were, before his face in the Promises thereof. *Philippians* 3. 14 so the Apostle assureth us, That a Christians Hope to bee like unto Christ hereafter, will cause him to purifie himself even as hee is pure, 1 *Iob* 3. 3. when a man shall sit downe and recount with *David*, what God hath done for him already. *Who am I,*

VERSE 3.

O Lord God and what is my house, that thou hast brought mee hitherto? And what GOD hath further promised to doe for him more. Thou hast also spoken of thy servants house for a great while to come. Of a childe of wrath, thou hast called mee to an inheritance of the Saints in light, and into the fellowship of more glory than can be shadowed forth by all the lights of Heaven, though every Star were turned into a Sun; I say, when the soul shall thus recount the goodnesse of God. how can it but bee wondrously enlarged with thoughts of thankfulness, and grieved at the slow and narrow abilities of the other parts to answer the urgent and wide desires of a willing soul.

Sixthly, this willingnesse of Christs people ariseth from the experience of that peace, comfort, life, liberty, triumph and security which accompanieth the Spirit and the service of Christ. Nothing makes a man more fearefull of warres, than the dangers and hazards which are incident thereunto. But if a man can serve under such a Prince, whose employments are not onely honourable. but safe; if hee, who is able and faithfull to make good his words, promise us that none either of the stratagems or forces of the enemy shall doe us hurt, but that they shall flie before us, while wee resist them: who would not bee a Voluntary in such services as are not liable to the casualties and vicissitudes which usually attend other warres, wherein hee might fight with safety, and come off with honour? David had experience of Gods power in delivering him from the Lion and the Beare, and was well assured that that God who was carefull of sheepe, would be more pitifull to his people Israel, and that made him with much willingnesse ready to encounter Goliath, whose assurance was onely in himselfe and not in God: When a man shall consider what God might have done with him, hee might have sent him from the wombe to Hell, depriv'd him of the means of grace, left him to the rebellion

Christ's people a willing people.

327

VERSE 3.

rebellion and hardnesse of his evil heart, and to the rage of Satan, burnt his bones, and dried up his bowels with the view of that wrath which is due to sinne, and what he hath done with him; he hath called him to the knowledge of his will, refreshed him with the light of his Countenance, heard his prayers, given an Issue to his temptations, and a reviving out of bondage, fastned him as a naile in his holy place, given him his favour which is better than light, and spoken of his servant for a long time to come; O how readily will the spirit of such a man conclude, Lord, according to thine owne heart hast thou done all this unto me, and I have found so much sweetnesse in thy service above all mine owne thoughts or expectations, that now, O Lord, my heart is prepared, my heart is prepared, I will sing and rejoyce in thy service.

Lastly, this *willingnesse* of Christ's people ariseth from that excellent *beauty and attractive vertue* which is in holinesse. *Thy Law is pure, therefore thy servants loveth it.* And therefore we finde Christ and his Church doe kindle the coales of love, and kirre up those flames of mutuall dearenesse towards one another, doe cherish those longing, languishing, and ravished affections, and fufspring of hearts, by the frequent contemplations of each others beautie. *Behold, thou art faire my love, Behold, thou art faire, thou hast Doves eyes, Behold thou art faire my beloved, yea pleasant, &c. Cant. 1. 15 16.* These are the principles of that great devotion and willingnesse which is in the people of Christ unto his service.

And hereby wee may make triall of the truth of that profession, subjection, and obedience which we all pretend unto the Gospell of Christ. It is then onely sound when it proceeds from a willing and devoted heart, from purpose, fervour and earnestnesse of Spirit; for as God in mercy accounts *the will for the deed*; because where there is a willing minde there will certainly be all anse-

A& 11. 13.

Rom. 12. 11.

Gal. 4. 18.

VER. 3.

* Qui perficitur
apud te paratum
fuisse virtutem,
reddis pro vir-
tute mercedem.
Nunquid Cain
cū in Dō munus
offerret jam per-
eunte at fratrem?
Et amen patri-
cidium mente
conceptum Deū
providens ante
damnavit, ut
illius cogitatio
prava & pēni-
tiosa conceptio
Deo providente
profecta est:
ita & in Dei
servitū, apud quos
confessio cogita-
tur, & marty-
riū mente con-
cipitur, animus
ad bonum deli-
ctum, Deo iudice
coronatur. Aliud
est martyr o ani-
mum deesse, ali-
ud animo defu-
isse martyrium,
nec enim sangui-
nem vestrum
queris Deus, sed
fincm. Cyr. de
mori. Neque e-
nim in sacrificiū
quæ Abel, &
Cain primi ob-
tulissent, munera tantum Deū, sed corda iniebat, ut ille placeret in vultu qui placebat in corde.
Idem de Orat. Domini.

nable endeavours to execute that will, and to reduce it into
act, so he esteemes the deed nothing without the * will :
Cain and Abel did both sacrifice, it was the heart which
made the difference betweene them : let the outward
conversation be what it will, yet if a man regard iniqui-
tie in his heart, God will not heare him. *Gravius est di-
ligere peccatum quam facere :* It is a worse token (saith
Gregorie) of an evill man to love sinne, then to commit
it, for that it may be committed out of temptation and in-
firmity, and so may be either in part the sin of another
that tempteth us, or at least not the sinne of our whole
selves, but of those remainders of corruption which dwell
within us. But our love is all our own, Satan can but offer a
temptation, the heart it selfe must love it : and love is
strong as death, it worketh by the strength of the whole
man, and therefore ever such as the will is (which is
the seat of love) such is the service too: And the rea-
son is, First, because the will is the first mover, and the
master-whee in spirituall workes, that which regula-
teth all the rest, and keepeth them right and constant ;
that which holdeth together all the faculties of the soule
and body in the execution of Gods will. In which sense,
amongst others I understand that of the Apostle, *That*
love is the bond of perfection, because when love resideth
in the heart, it will put together every faculty to doe
that work of God perfectly which it goes about. And
therefore by a like expression it is called *The fulfilling of*
the Law, because love aimes still at the highest, and at the
best in that thing which it loves, it is ever an enemy to
defects. He that loves learning will never stop, and say
I have enough, in this likewise love is as death. And he
that loves grace, will be still *Ambitious to abound* in the
worke of the Lord, and to presse forward unto per-
fection, to make up that which is wanting to his faith, to

be sanctified thorowout, to bring forth more fruit, to walke in all pleasing, to be holy, and unblameable, and unreproueable, without spot or wrinkle. It is an absurd thing in religion to dote upon mediocrities of grace; *in eo non potest esse nimium, quod esse maximum debet*; He that with all the exactnesse and vigour of his heart, can never gather together all grace, can surely never have too much. In false religions no man so much magnified as he that is strictest: that Papist which is most cruell to his flesh, most assiduous at his beads, most canonically in his houres, most macerated with superstitious penance, most frequently prostrated before his idols, is of all other most admired for the greatest Saint. O why should not an holy strictnesse be as much honoured as a superstitious? why should not exactnesse, purity, and a contending unto perfection, be as much pursued in a true as in a false religion? Why should not every man strive to be filled with grace, since he can never have enough till he have it all, till he is brimfull? He that truly loves wealth, would be the richest; and he that loves honour, would be the highest of any other: certainly Grace is in it selfe more lovely than any of these things. Why then should not every man strive to be most unlike the evill world, and to be more excellent than his neighbour, to be holy as God is holy, to be as Christ himselfe was in this world, to grow up in unity of faith, and in the knowledge of him, unto a perfect man? Certainly, if a man once set his will and his heart upon Grace, he will never rest in mediocrities; he will labour to abound more and more, he will never thinke himselfe to have apprehended, but forgetting the things which are behinde, he will reach forth to those things which are before him, for all the desires of the heart are strong, and will over-rule any other naturall desire. The griefe of Davids heart made him forget to eate his bread. The desire of Christs heart to convert the Samaritan woman, made him carelesse of

VERSE 3.

his owne hunger. It is my meat to doe the will of him that sent me, and to finish his worke. A true heart will goe on to finish the worke which it hath begunne. *The wicked sleepe not*, saith *Salomon*, *except they have done mischief*; And the enemies of *Saint Paul* provided to stop the clamours and demands of an empty stomacke with a solemne vow that they would neither eat nor drinke till they had slaine *Paul*. Lust never gives over till it finish sinne, and therefore the Love of Christ should never give over till it finish Grace.

Judg. 5. 2. 9.

Secondly, because *God is more honored in the obedience of the will*, than of the outward man. Humane restraints may rule this, but nothing but Grace can rule the other; for herein we acknowledg God to be the searcher of hearts, the discernor of secret thoughts, the Judge and Lord over our consciences. *Whatsoever ye doe* (saith the Apostle) *doe it heartily as to the Lord, and not to men*. Noting unto us, that a man doth never respect the Lord in any service which cometh not willingly, and from the inner man. Now he worketh in vaine, and loseth all that he hath wrought, who doth not worke for him who is maker of the businesse he goes about, and who onely doth reward it. Therefore saith the Apostle, *Doe it heartily as to the Lord, knowing that of the Lord you shall receive the Reward of the Inheritance, for you serve the Lord Christ*. He onely is the pay-master of such kinde of worke, and therefore doe it onely as to him, so that he may approve and reward it.

Before I leave this point touching the willingnesse of Christs people, here is a great case, and of frequent occurrence to be resolved, Whether those who are truly of Christs people may not have feares, torments, uncomfortablenesse, wearinesse, unwillingnesse in the wayes of God? *Saint John* in generall states the case, *There is no feare in love, but perfect love casteth out feare: Because feare hath torment*, 1 *Joh. 4. 18.* so that it seemes where there

there is torment, and wearinesse, there is no love : for the clearing of this case, I shall set downe some few positions.

First, in generall, where there is true obedience there is ever a *willing and free Spirit*, in this degree at the least, a most deepe desire of the heart, and serious endeavour of the spirit of a man to walk in all well-pleasing towards God: a longing for such fulnesse of Grace, and enlargement of soule as may make a man fit to runne the way of Gods commandements.

Secondly, where there is this *will*, yet there may upon other reasons be such a *fearre* as hath paine and torment in it, and that in two respects: First, there may be a *fearre of Gods wrath*, the soule of a righteous man may be surpriz'd with some glimpses and apprehensions of his most heaue displeasure, he may conceive himselfe far up as Gods marks to shoot at, *Job. 7. 20.* that the *poisoned arrows and terrors of the wrath of God doe stick fast upon him*, *Job. 6. 4.* that *his transgressions are sealed up and reserved against him*, *Job 14. 17.* The hot displeasure of the Lord may even *tear his bones*, and make his soule sore within him, *Psal. 6. 1, 2, 3.* He may conceive himselfe *forgotten and cast out by God*, surpris'd with fearefulness, trembling, and the horrour of death, *Psal. 13. 1.* *Psal. 55. 4.* Christ may withdraw himself and be gone, in regard of any comfortable and sensible fruition of his fellowship, and in that case the soule may faile and seeke him but not finde him, and call upon him but receive no answer, *Cant. 5. 6.* A man may feare the Lord, and yet be in darkenesse, and have no light, *Eesai. 50. 10.* Secondly, there may be a great *fearre even of performing spirituall duties*. A broken and dejected man may tremble in Gods service, and upon a deepe apprehension of his owne unworthinesse, and erroneous applying of that sad expostulation of God with wicked men, *What hast thou to doe to take my Covenant in thy mouth?*

VERSE 3.

month? *Psal. 50. 16.* And, *what hath my beloved to doe in mine house, seeing she hath wrought lewdnesse with manny?* *Ier. 11. 15.* he may be startled, and not dare adventure upon such holy and sacred things without much reluctance, and shame of spirit. *O my God, saith Ezra, I am ashamed and blush to lift up my face to thee my God: for our iniquities are increased over our heads, Ezra 9 6.* Thus it is said of the poore woman who upon the touch of Christs garment had beene healed of her bloody issue, *That she came fearing and trembling, and fell downe before Christ, and told him the truth, Marke 5. 33.* But yet great difference there is betweene this feare of the Saints, and of the wicked. The feare of the wicked ariseth out of the evidences of the guilt of sinne, but the feare of the Saints from a tender apprehension of the *Majestie of God*, and his most pure eyes which cannot endure to behold uncleannesse (which made *Moses* himselfe to tremble, *Act. 7. 32.*) and out of a deepe sense of *their owne unworthinesse* to meddle with holy things. And such a feare as this may bring much *uncomfortablenesse* and distraction of spirit; but, *never at all any dislike or hatred of God*, or any stomacke full disobedience against him. For as the feare of the soule deterres, so the necessity of the precept drives him to an endeavour of obedience and well-pleasing. Slavish feare forceth a man to doe the duty some way or other, without any eye or respect unto the manner of doing it. But this other which is indeed a filiall, but yet withall an uncomfortable feare, rather dissuades from the duty it selfe, the heart being so vile; and unfit to performe so pretious a duty in so holy a manner as becomes it.

Thirdly, as the Saints may have *feare* and *uncomfortablenesse* (which are contrary to a free spirit) so they may have a *wearinesse* and some kinde of *unwillingnesse* in Gods service. Their spirits like the hands of *Moses* in the mount may faint and hang downe, may be damp'd with

with carnall affections, or tired with the difficulty of the worke, or pluck'd back by the importunity of temptations, so that though they beginne in the spirit, yet they may be bewitched and transported from a thorough obedience to the truth, *Gal. 3. 13.* A deadnesse, heavinessse, insensibility, unactivenesse, confusednesse of heart, unpreparednesse of affections, insinuation of worldly lusts and earthly cares may distract the hearts, and abate the cheeresfullnesse of the best of us. And hence come those frequent exhortations to stirre up our selves, to prepare our hearts to seeke the Lord, to what the Law upon our children, to exhort one another, lest the deceitfullnesse of sinne harden us, to be strong in the Grace of Christ, not to faint or be weary of well-doing, and the like. All which, and sundry like intimate a sluggishnesse of disposition, and naturall bearing back of the will from Gods service.

Fourthly, the *Proportion* of this discomfort and *weari-nessse* ariseth from these grounds: First, from the *strength of these corruptions* which remaine within us: for ever so much fleshlinesse as the heart retaines, so much bias a man hath to turne him from God and his wayes, so much clog and encumbrance in holy duties. And this remainder of flesh is in the will as well as in any other faculty to indispose it unto spirituall actions, as it is in our *members* that we *cannot doe* the things we would, *Gal. 5. 17.* so in proportion it is in our *Wills*, that we cannot with all our strength *desire* the things which we should, and therefore *David* praiseth God for this especiall Grace, Who am I, and what is my people, that we should be able to offer so willingly after this sort? for all things come of thee, and of thine owne have we given thee, *1 Chro. 29. 14.*

Secondly, from the dulnesse or sleepinesse of Grace in the heart, which without daily reviving, husbanding, and handling will be apt to contract a rust, and to be over-

VER. 23.

over-growne with that bitter root of corruption within. As a bowle will not moove without many rubs and stops in a place overgrown with grasse, so the will cannot move with readinesse towards God, when the Graces which should actuate it are grown dull and heaue. A rustie key will not easily open the lock unto which it was first fitted; nor a neglected Grace easily open or enlarge the heart.

Thirdly, from the violent importunity and *immodesty of some strong temptation*, and unexpellible suggestions, which frequently presenting themselves to the spirit doe there beget jealousies to disquiet the peace of the heart: for Satans first end is to rob us of Grace, for which purpose he heartneth our lusts against us: but his second is to rob us of comfort, and to toss us up and downe betwene our owne feares and suspitions: for unwearied and violent contradictions are apt to beget wearinesse in the best. Consider him that endured such contradiction of sinners against himself, saith the Apostle, *lest ye be wearied and faint in your minds, Heb. 12. 3.*

Fourthly from the *present weight of some heauie fresh sinne*, which will utterly indispose the heart unto any good. As we see how long security did surprise David after his murder and adulterie. Thus as *Jonah* after his flight from God, fell asleepe in the ship: so stupiditye and unaptnesse to work is ever the childe of any notable and revolting sinne. When the conscience lieth bleeding under any fresh sinne, it hath first a hard taske to goe through in a more bitter renewing the teares of repentance. And hard workes haue for the most part some feares and reluctancies in the performing of them. Secondly, it hath not such boldnesse and assurance to be welcome to God. It comes with shame, horror, blushing and want of peace, and so cannot but finde the greater conflict in it selfe. Thirdly, sinne diswonts a man from God, carries him to thickets and bushes. The soule loves

not

not to be deprehended by God in the company of Satan or any sinnefull lust. That childe cannot but feelee some struglings of shame and unwillingnesse to come unto his father, who is sure when he comes to be upbraided with the companions which he more delights in:

Fifthly, from the *proportions of the desersions of the Spirit*: for the Spirit of God bloweth where and how hee listeth; and it is he that worketh our wills unto obedience. If he be grieved and made retire, (for he is of a delicate and jealous disposition) if he turne his winde from our sailes, alas, how slow and sluggish will our motion bee? How poore our progresse? Vpon these and severall other the like grounds, may the best of us bee possessed with feares, discomforts, and unwillingnesse in Gods service. But yet

Fifthly, none of all this takes off the *will à Toro*, though it doe *à Tanto*, but that the faithfull in their greatest heavinesse and unfitnessse of spirit, have yet a stronger byas towards God, than any wicked man when hee is at best. For it is true of them in their lowest condition, that they *Desire* to feare Gods name. *Nehem. 1. 11.* That the *desire* of their soul is towards the remembrance of him, *Esay 26. 8* that they are seriously displeased with the distempers and uncomfortablenesse of their Spirit, *Psal. 42. 5.* that they long to be enlarged that they may run the way of Gods Commandments, *Psal. 119. 32.* That they *set their affection* unto God and his service, *1 Chron. 29. 3.* That they *prepare their hearts* to seek the Lord God, *2 Chron. 30. 19.* That they *strive, groane, wrestle*, and are unquiet in their dumps and dulnesse, earnestly contending for joy and freedome of Spirit, *Psal 51. 8. 11 12.* In one word, that they dare not omit those duties, which yet they have no readinesse and disposednesse of heart to performe; but when they cannot doe them in *alacrity*, yet they doe them in *obedience*, and serve the Lord when hee hideth his face from them: *I said, I am cast*

VERSE 3.

cast out of thy sight, yet I will looke againe towards thy holy Temple, Ionah 2.4. He that feareth the Lord will obey his voice, though he walke in darknesse, and have no light, Esay 50. 10. So then the faithfull have still thus much ground of comfort, that God hath their wils alwaies devoted and resign'd unto him, though thus much likewise they have to humble them too, the dayly experience of a back-sliding and tired spirit in his service; and should therefore bee exhorted to stirre up the spirit of grace in themselves, to keep fresh and frequent their communion with Christ. The more acquaintance and experience the heart hath of him, the more abundantly it will delight in him, and make haste unto him, that it may with Saint Paul apprehend him in fruition, by whom it is already apprehended, and carried up unto heavenly places in assurance and representation. As long as we are here; there will bee something lacking to our faith; some mixture of unbeliefe and distrust with it, 1 Thes. 3. 10. Marke. 9. 24. corruptions, temptations, afflictions, trials, will bee apt to beget some feares, discomforts, wearinesse, and indisposedenesse towards Gods service. The sense whereof should make us long after our home, with the Apostle grone, and wait for the adoption, even the redemption of our bodies, for the manifestation of the sons of God, (for though we are now sons, yet it doth not appeare what we shall be, 1 Ioh. 3. 2.) should make us pray for the accomplishment of his promises, for the hastening of his Kingdome, where we shall be changed into an universal spiritualnesse, or purity of nature, where those relicks of corruption, those struglings of the law of the members against the law of the minde shall bee ended, those languishings, decayes, ebbes and blemishes of grace shall bee removed, where all deficiencies of grace shall bee made up, and that measure and first fruits of the Spirit which we here receive, shall be crowned with fulnesse, and everlasting perfection. Here wee are

are likewise the stones and other materials of *Solomons* Temple, but in the act of fitting and preparation, no marvell if we be here crooked, knotty, uneven, and therefore subject to the hammer, under blowes and buffets. But when we shall be carried to the heavenly building which is above, and there laid in; there shall bee nothing but smoothnesse and glory upon us, no noise of hammers, or axes, no dispensation of Word or Sacraments, no application of censures and severity; but every man shall be filled with the fulnesse of God, Faith turned into sight, Hope turned into fruition, and Love everlastingly ravished with the presence of God, with the face of Iesus Christ, with the fulnesse of the Holy Spirit, and with the communion and society of all the Saints. And so much for the first observation out of the third particular, concerning the *willingnesse of Christs people*.

There was further therein observed the *Principle of this Willingnesse*, [*In the day of thy power, or of thine armies*] that is, when thou shalt send abroad Apostles, and Prophets, and Evangelists, and Doctours, and Teachers for evidencing of the Word and Spirit unto the consciences of men. Whence wee may secondly observe, that the [*Heart of Christs people is made willing to obey him by an act of Power,*] or by the strength of the Word and Spirit. It is not barely enticed, but it is conquered by the Gospel of Christ, 2 Cor. 10. 4, 5: And yet this is not a compulsory conquest (which is utterly contrary to the nature of a reasonable will, which would cease to bee it selfe, if it could be compell'd) but it is an effectual conquest. The will (as all other faculties) is dead naturally in trespasses and sins: And a dead man is not raised to life againe by any enticements, nor yet compell'd unto a condition of such exact complacency and suteablenesse to nature by any act of violence. So then a man is made willingly subject unto Christ, neither by meere morall persuasions, nor by any violent impulsions; but by a power,

VERSE 7:

power, in it selfe *supernaturall, spirituell, or Divine.* and in its manner of working *sweetly tempered to the disposition of the will,* which is never by grace destroyed, but perfected. Therefore the Apostle saith, that it is *God who worketh in us to will and to doe, Phil. 2. 13.* first, hee frameth our will according to his owne (as *David* was said to bee a man *after Gods owne heart*) and secondly, by that will, and the imparate acts thereof, thus sanctified and still assisted by the Spirit of grace, hee setteth the other powers of nature on worke in further obedience unto his Will. And therefore the Prophet *David* praised God that had enabled him and his people *to offer willingly* unto the service of Gods house, and prayeth him that hee would ever keepe that willing disposition in the imaginations and thoughts of the hearts of his people, *1 Chron 29, 14, 18.* Therefore, the Apostle saith, that *Our faith standeth not in the Wisedome of men, but in the power of God, 1 Cor: 4. 5.* Therefore likewise it is called *The faith of the operation of God who raised Christ from the dead, Col. 2. 12.*

For the more distinct opening and evidencing this point, how Christs people are made *Willing by his power.* I will onely lay together some brieve positions which I conceive to bee thereunto pertinent, and proceed to that which is more plaine and profitable. First, let us consider the *nature of the will,* which is, to be a *Free agent or mover,* to have *ex se.* and within it selfe an *indifferencie* and *undeterminatenesse* unto severall things: so that when it moves or not moves, when it moves one way or other, in none of these it suffers violence, but workes according to the condition of its owne nature.

Secondly, we may note that this indifferency is twofold, either habituall, belonging to the constitution of the will, which is nothing else, but an originall aptitude, or intrinsecall non-repugnancy in the will, to move unto contrary extremes, to worke, or to suspend its owne working;

working, or else actual, which is in the exercise of the former, as objects present themselves: & this is twofold, either a freedom to good or evil, or a freedom to wil, or not to wil

Thirdly, notwithstanding the wil be in this manner free, yet it may have his freedom in both regards so determined, as that in such or such a condition, it cannot do what it should; or forbear what it should; or cannot do what it should not, nor forbear what it should not. Man fallen, without the Grace of God, is free only unto evil, and Christ in the time of his obedience, was free wholly unto good. Man free to evil; but yet so, as that he only doth it voluntarily, he cannot voluntarily leave it undone: Christ free onely to good, yet so, as that he doth it most freely, but could not freely omit the doing of it.

Fourthly, the will worketh not in this condition of things unto moral objects without some other concurrent principles which sway and determine it several wayes, so that the will is *principium quod*, the faculty which moves; and the other *principium quo*, the quality or vertue by which it moves. And these qualities are in natural men the *flesh* or the originall concupiscence of our nature, which maketh the motions of the wil to be *dehinc* as *adpropius*; the wil of the flesh; and in the regenerate, the *Grace and Spirit of Christ*, so far forth as they are regenerate.

Fifthly, as the wil is ever carried either by the flesh or the spirit to its objects, so neither to the one or the other without the preceding conduct and direction of the practical judgment, whether by grace illightned to judge aright, or by corrupt affection bribed and blinded to misguide the will; for the wil being a rational appetite, never moveth but *per modum judicii*, upon apprehension of some goodnes & convenience in the thing wherunto it moves.

Sixthly, the judgement is never thoroughly illightned to understand Spiritual things in that immediate and ample beauty and godnesse which is in them, but onely by the Spirit of Christ, which maketh a man to have the

VERSE 3.

self-same mind, judgement, opinion and apprehension of heavenly things which he had; so that Christ and a Christian do *τὴν αὐτήν*, *thinketh the same thing*, as the Apostle speaks, *Phil. 2.5*. By the which Spirit of grace, working first upon the judgment to rectifie that; and to convince it of the evidence and necessity of that most universal and adequate good which it presenteth, the whole nature is proportionably renew'd, and Christ formed as wel in the will and affections, as in the understanding; as the body in the womb is not shaped by piece-meale, one part after another, but altogether by proportionable degrees and progresses of perfection. So that at the same time when the Spirit of grace by an act of Heavenly illumination is present with the judgement of reason to evident, not the truth onely, but the excellency of the knowledge of Christ thereunto, it is likewise present by an act of heavenly perswasion, and most intimate allurements unto the will and affections, sweetly accommodating its working unto the exigence and condition of the faculties, that they likewise may with such liberty and complacency as becomes both their owne nature, and the quality of obedience required, apply themselves to the desire and prosecution of those excellent things which are with so spiritual an evidence set forth unto them in the ministry of the Word. As by the same soule the eye seeth, and the ear heareth, and the hand worketh: So when Christ by his Spirit is formed in us, (for the Spirit of Christ is the *Αἷμα πρῶτον*, or soule of a Christian man, that which animateth him unto an heavenly being and working) every power of the soule and body is in some proportionable measure enabled to work *ὑπομαχοῖ*, in such manner as is convenient and proper to the quality of its nature, to the right apprehension and voluntary prosecution of spiritual things. The same Spirit which by the word of Grace doth fully convince the judgment, and let the light of the knowledge

Rom. 8 9, 10,
11.

1 Cor. 6. 17.

ledge of the glory of God shine upon the minde; doth by the same word of grace proportionably excite, and assist the will to affect it, that as the understanding is elevated to the spiritual perception, so the will likewise is enabled to the spiritual love of heavenly things.

By all which wee may observe that this working of the Spirit of grace, whereby wee become voluntaries in Christs service, and whereby he worketh in us both to will and to do those things which of our selves wee were not obedient unto, neither indeed could be, is both a sweet and powerfull worke; as in the raising of a man from the dead (to which in the Scriptures the renewing of a sinner is frequently compared;) there is a worke of great power, which yet being admirably suteable to the integrity of the creature, must needs bring an exact complacency and delight with it. We may frequently in holy Scriptures observe, that of the same effect severall things may be affirmed by reason of its connexion unto severall causes, and of the severall casualties or manners of concurrence with which those severall causes have contributed any influence unto it. As the obedience of Christ was of all other the most free and voluntarie service of his Father; if we consider it with respect unto his most Holy, and therefore most undistracted and unhindered will; (for if it were not voluntary, it were no obedience) and yet notwithstanding it was most certaine and infallible, if we consider it with respect to the sanctitie of his nature, to the unmeasurablenesse of his union to the plenitude of his uneducible and unerring Spirit, to the mystery of his hypostatical union, and the communication of properties betweene his natures, whereby whatever action was done by him, might justly be called the action of God, in which regard it was impossible for him to sinne. In like manner, the passive obedience of Christ was most free and voluntary, as it respected his owne will, for he troubled himselfe, he hum-

VERSE 3.

VERSE 3.

* For it *Assu-**er*us the hus-band of *Esther*

were the same,

who was fa-her

to *Darius* theMedian, *Dan.*9. 1. (as *Mel-**chior Canus* 1.

11. c. 5. p. 308.

thinker) then

it is plaine that

the utter desola-

tion of the

Jewes would

have prevented

their restitution

under *Cyrus*,

who was grand-

child to that *Af-**surus* 2 & if, as

others, we take

him to have

been *Cambyses*the son of *Cyrus*or *Darius Hy-**staspis* (as *Curiö**lib.* 2. & *Trinius*in *Esth.* c. 1) or*Xerxes* son to*Darius* (as *Ge-**nebrard* l. 2. p.331. *Jun.* in *Er.*4. 6. *Esther* 1. 1*Helvicus Scal.**Emēd.* xep. 1. 6)or *Artaxerxes**Longimanus.* (as *Bellarmin.* l. 1. de verbo Dei. c. 7. Et de scriptoribus verbo *Mardocheum*p. 32.) or *Artaxerxes Mnemon* (as *Tornielus An. mun.* 3651. (c. 1. 1.) Then we must note,that though the restoring of the Captivity began in *Cyrus* *Isai.* 44. 28. yet it was not ac-complished on the sudden. Since above 100. years after, *Artaxer. Longim.* published anEdict. *Ezr.* 7. 12. like that of *Cyrus*, *Ezr.* 1. 3. to give liberty for building the City, and

for every one of the Jewes that were willing to returne into their own country again. and

bled and emptied himself, he laid downe his own life, he became obedient unto death, even the death of the Crosse; and yet, thus it was written, and thus it behoved, or was necessary for Christ to suffer, if wee respect the predetermine counsel and purpose of God, who had so ordained, *Acts* 4. 28. God would not suffer a bone of Christs to be broken, and yet he did not disable the souldiers from doing it, for they had stil as much strength and liberty to have broken his, as the others who were crucified with him; but that which in regard of the truth and prediction of holy Scriptures was most certainly to be fulfilled, in regard of the second causes by whom it was fulfilled, was most free and voluntary. Wee finde what a chain of meer casualties and contingencies (if we look onely upon second causes) did concur in the offence of *Vashti*, in the promotion of *Esther*, in the treason of the two Chamberlaines, in the wakefulness of the King, in the opening of the Chronicles, in the acceptance of *Esthers* request, and in the favour of the King unto her, and all this ordered by the immutable and efficacious providence of God (which moderates and guides causes and effects of all sorts to his own fore-appointed ends) for the deliverance of his people from that intended slaughter determined against them, the execution whereof, would in part have voided that great promise of their returning out of captivity after seventie years: with relation unto which promise their deliverance at this time was in regard of Gods Truth and purpose necessary, though in regard of second causes brought about by a cumulation of contingencies. In like manner, when the hearts of men do voluntarily dedicate

and submit themselves to the Kingdome of Christ, if we looke upon it with relation unto the Spirit of Grace, which is the *principium quo*, the formal vertue whereby it is wrought; so it is an effect of power, and as it were, an act of conquest; and yet looke upon it with relation unto the heart it selfe, which is *Principium quod*, the material efficient cause thereof, and so it is a most free, sweet, connatural action, exactly temper'd to the exigencie of the second cause, and proceeding there-from with most exact delight, answerably to the measure of the Grace of illumination, or spiritual evidence in the minde, whereby our natural blindness, prejudices, and misperceptions may be remov'd: and to the measure of the Grace of excitation, assistance, and co-operation in the heart, whereby the natural frowardness and reluctancy thereof may be subdued.

In one word, there are but three things requisite to make up a free and voluntarie action. First, it must be *cum iudicio rationis*, with a preceding judgement. Secondly, it must be *cum indifferentia*, there must be an internal indeterminatenesse and equal disposition of it selfe unto severall extremes. Thirdly, it must be *cum dominio actus*, the will must have the power of her owne works. And all these three do sweetly consist with the point of the Text, That the heart is made willing to obey Christ by an act of power.

For first, this power we speake of is only the power of the Word and Spirit, both which do alwaies worke in the ordinary course of Gods proceeding by them with men, *secundum iudicium*, by a way of judgement and conviction, by a way of teaching and demonstration, which is suteable to a rational facultie.

Secondly, which way soever the will is by the Spirit of Grace directed and perswaded to move, it still retaines an habitual or internal habitude unto the extremes, so that if it should have moved towards them, that motion

VERSE 3.

would have beene as natural and suitable to its condition as this which it followeth ; for the determination of the act is no extinguishment of the liberty thereunto.

Thirdly, when the Spirit by the power of the word of Grace doth worke the will in us , yet still the will hath the dominion of its own act, that is, it is not servilely, or compulsorily thereunto overswayed , but worketh, *ex motu proprio*, by a selfe-motion , unto which it is quickened and actuated by the sweetnesse of divine Grace , as the seed of that action , according to that excellent knowne speech of Saint *Augustine*, *Certum est nos velle cum volumus, sed Deus facit ut velimus*. Thus wee see how the subjection of Christs people unto his kingdome is a voluntary act, in regard of mans will , and an act of power in regard of Gods Spirit inwardly illighting the minde with the spiritual evidence, not only of the truth , but the excellencie and superlative goodnesse of the Gospel of Christ ; and inwardly touching the heart, and framing it to a lovely conformity and obedience thereunto.

The ground of this point why there is an act of power required to conquer the wills of sinners unto Christ , is that notable enmitie, stoutnesse, reluctancie, rebellion, wearinesse, averfenesse ; in one word, fleshlinesse which possesseth the wills of men by nature . such forwardnesse unto evil , so much frowardnesse against good , such a spring and byas from private ends, and worldly objects, such feares without, such fightings within, such allurements on the right hand, such frowns and affrightments on the left ; such depths of Satan, such hellish and unsearchable plots of principalities and powers , to keepe fast and faithful to themselves this chiefe mistris of the soule of man ; such flie and soaking , such furious and fiery temptations , to flatter or to fright it away from Christ ; such strong prejudices, such deepe reasonings, such high imaginations, such scornfull and meane conceits of the purity and power of the wayes of Christ, such deceit-

deceitfulness of heart, such mis-perswasions and presumptions of our present peace, or at least of the easiness of our future reformation, such strong surmises of carnal hopes which will be prevented, or worldly dangers incurred, or private ends disappointed; such lusts to be denied, such members to be hewed off, such friends to be forsaken, such passions to be subdued, such certaine persecutions from the world, such endlesse solicitations of Satan, such irreconcilable contentions with the flesh; in the midst of all these pul-backs, how can we thinke the will should escape and breake thorow, if God did not send his Spirit, as once the Angel unto Lot, Gen. 19. 16. to lay hands upon it while it lingers and hankers after its wonted course, to use a merciful conquest over it, and, as the Scriptures expresse it, * to lead it, to draw it, to take it by the arme, to carry it in his bosome, to bear it as an eagle ber young ones on her wings; nay, by the terrours of the Lord, and the power of his Word and wrath, to pull and snatch it as a brand out of the fire? Certainly, there is so much extreme perverseness, so much hellishness, and devilish antipathy to God and his service in the heart by nature, that if it were left to its own stubbornness to kick, and rebell, and fall back, and harden it selfe, and were not set upon by the Grace of Christ, no man living would turne unto him, or make use of his blood; by the same reason that any one man perisheth, every man would ree; because in all there is as fundamental and original enmitie to the wayes of Grace, as there is in any.

The consideration whereof may justly humble us in our reflexion upon our selves, whom neither the Promises of heaven can allure, nor the blood and passions of Christ perswade, nor the flames of hell affright from our sinnes, till the Lord by the sweet and gracious power of his holy Spirit subdue and conquer the soule unto himselfe. If a man should rise from the dead, and truly

* Rom. 8. 14.
John 6. 44
Hos. 11. 3
Isa. 40. 11
Deut. 1. 31
Deut. 32. 11
Jude ver. 23

VERSE 3.

a Gen. 49. 6.
 Jer. 6. 17.
 Jer. 44. 16.
 Luke 19. 27.
 Ephes. 2. 3.
 b 1 Sam. 15. 23.
 c Malac. 3. 13.
 d Rom. 9. 19.
 10. 21.
 e Exec. 2. 3, 4.
 f Ho. 5. 2.
 2 Cor. 10. 5.
 g Jer. 7. 27.
 Jer. 8. 5, 6.
 Jer. 18. 18.
 h Jer. 19. 15.
 Zech. 7. 11.
 i Jer. 6. 10.
 Rom. 3. 11.
 2 Thess. 3. 2.
 Esai. 1. 3.

relate unto the conscience the woful and everlasting
 horrors of hell, if a mans natural capacity were made as
 wide to apprehend the wrath, fury and vengeance of a
 provoked God, the foulness, guilt, and venom of a
 soul fuller of sinnes than the heavens of starres, as the
 most intelligent devils of hell doe conceive them. If an
 Archangel or *Seraphim* should be sent from heaven to
 reveale unto the soul of a natural man the infinite glory
 of Gods presence, the full pleasures of his right hand, the
 admirable beauty of his wayes, the intimate conformity
 and resemblance betwene his divine nature in himselfe,
 and Image of his holinesse in the Creature, the unsearch-
 able and bottomlesse love of Christ in his Incarnation and
 sufferings, the endlesse, incomprehensible vertue and pre-
 tiounesse of his blood and prayers; yet so desperately
 evil is the heart of man, that if after all this, God should
 not afford the blessed operation and concurrence of his
 own gracious Spirit, the revelation of his owne arme and
 power upon the soule, to set on those instrumental cau-
 ses, it would be invincible by any evidence, which all the
 cries and flames of hell, which all the armies and hosts of
 heaven were able to beget. There is no might or power
 able to snatch a man out of the hands of his sin, but only
 Gods Spirit. Notable are the expressions which the holy
 Ghost every where useth, to set forth this wretched con-
 dition of the heart by nature: *3* wilfulnesse and self-
 willednesse, *we will not hearken, we will not have this man*
to reign over us; 4 *delinquency*, many wiles in one. *5* Rebellion
 and stubbornnesse, *6* stoutnesse of heart; *7* contestation
 with God, and gain-saying his Word; *8* Impudence, stiff-
 ness, and hard-heartedness, *9* mischievous profoundnesse,
 and deep reasonings against the Law of God; *10* pertinac-
 ie, resolvednesse, and abiding in mischief; they hold fast
 deceit; obstinacie and *11* selfe-obduration, *They have*
hardned their necks that they might not heare; 12 Impoten-
 cie, immoveablenesse, and undocilenesse, their heart is un-

circumcised; they cannot heare, there is none that understandeth or seeketh after God: ^kscorne and slighting of the messages of the Lord: where is his Word? *Where is the promise of his coming?* ^lIncredulity, and belying the Lord in his Word, saying it is not he: *Who hath believed our report, and to whom is the arm of the Lord revealed?* ^mWrestling, resisting, and fighting with the Word, rejecting the counsell of God; vexing and striving with his holy Spirit, *Ye have alwaies resisted the holy Ghost.* ⁿRage and fiercenesse of disordred affections, despising of goodnesse, trayterous, heady, and high-minded thoughts. ^oBrutishnesse of immoderate lust, the untamed madnesse of an enraged beast, without any restraint of reason, or moderation. In one word, a ^phell, and gulfe of unsearchable mischiefe, which is never satisfied. It is impossible that any reasonable man, duly considering all these difficulties, should conceive such an heart as this to be overcome with meere moral perswasions, or by any thing lesse than the mighty power of Gods owne Grace. To him therefore we should willingly acknowledge all our conversion and salvation. So extremely impotent are wee, O Lord, unto any good, so utterly unprofitable, and unmeet for our Masters use, and yet so strongly hurried by the impulsions of our own lust towards hell, that no *precipice*, nor danger, no hope nor reward, no man or Angel is able to stop us, without thine own immediate power: and therefore *Not unto us, O Lord, not unto us, but unto thy name onely* be attributed the glory of our conversion.

Again, by this consideration we should be provoked to stirre up and call together all our strength in the Lords service, to recover our mis-spent time, to use the more contention and violence for the Kingdome of Heaven, when we consider how abundant wee have bene in the works of sinne, in the pursuing of vast desires which had neither end nor hope in them. O how happy

VERSE 3.

^k Jer. 17. 15
² Chro. 30. 10
² Pet. 3. 4
^l Isa. 53. 1
¹ Jer. 5. 12.
^m Gen. 6. 3
ⁿ Luke 7. 30
¹ Isa. 63. 10
¹ AEs 7. 9
ⁿ 2 Tim. 3. 2,
^{3, 4}
¹ Rom. 1. 19, 31
^o Jer. 2. 24
^{8, 6}
¹ Hof. 8. 6
^p Jer. 17. 9
¹ Habak. 2. 5

VERSE 3.

happie a thing would it be, if men could serve God with the same proportion of vigour and willingnesse of mind, as they served Satan and themselves before? I was never tired in that way, I went on indefatigably towards hell, like a swift Dromedary, or an untamed heifer; I pursued those evill desires which had vanity for their object, and miserie for their end, no fruit but shame, and no wages but death. But in the service of Christ I have a price before me, an abiding Citie, an enduring substance, an immarcescible crown to fix the highest of my thoughts upon: I have the Promises of Christ to strengthen me, his Angels to guard, his Spirit to lead, his Word to illighten me. In one word, I have a Soule to save, and a God to honour. And why should not I apply my power to serve him, who did reach forth his owne power to convert me? A long way have I to goe, and I must doe it in a spanne of time; so many temptations to overcome, so many corruptions to shake off, so many promises to believe, so many precepts to obey, so many mysteries to study, so many works to finish, and so little time for all. my weakneses on one side, my busineses on another, my enemies and my sinnes round about me take away so much, that I have scarce any left to give to God. And yet, alas, if I could serve God on earth, as he is served in heaven, If I had the strength of Angels, and glorified Saints, to doe his will, it would come infinitely short of that good will of God in my redemption, or of his power in my conversion. If God should have said to all the Angels in heaven, there is such a poor wretch posting with full strength towards hell, goe, stand in his way and drive him back again; all those glorious armies would have been too few to block up the passages between sin and hell; without the concurrence of Gods own Spirit and power, they could have returned none other answer but this, We have done all we can to perswade and turn him, but he will not be turned.

If

If then the Lord did put to his owne power to save me ; great reason there is that I should set my weake and impotent faculties to honour him ; especially since he hath beene pleased both to mingle with his service great joy , liberty, and tranquillity here, and also to set before it a full, a sure, and a great reward, for my further animation and encouragement thereunto.

VERSE 3.

The fourth thing observed in this Verse was the attire wherein Christs people should attend upon his service , *In the Beauties of Holinesse*] These words referre to those before, and that either to the word [*People*] or to the word [*willing*]. If to [*People*] then they are a further description of Christs Subjects or Souldiers, they shall be all like servants in Princes Courts, beautifully arraigned, like the Priests of the Law, that had garments of beauty and glory; and so *Schindler* expounds it, *In societate Sacerdotum*. If to the word [*willing*] then it notes the ground and inducement of their great devotion and subjection unto Christs Kingdome, that as the people came up in troopes to the Lords house, which was the Beauty of his Holinesse, or as men do flock together to the sight of some honorable and stately solemnity: so Christs people should by the beauty of his banners be allured to gather unto him, and flye in multitudes as Doves unto their windowes. Which way ever we understand the words, we may from them observe, First, *That holinesse is a glorious and a beautiful thing*. The holy oyle with which all the vessels of the Sanctuary were to be consecrated, was a type of that Spirit which sanctifieth us and maketh us Kings and Priests unto God, and it was to be compounded of the purest and most delicate ingredients which the art of the Apothecary could put together. Therefore our Saviour still calleth his Spouse the *fairest of women*, to note, that no other beautie in the world is to be compared with Holinesse. Therefore our Faith, and Holinesse is called a *Wedding Garment*, at which

Exod. 30.23

Cent. 4. 12

Mat. 22. 12

VERSE 3^d

^a Rom 13 14
Col. 3. 12

^b Psa. 45. 13, 14
Esa. 61. 10
Jer. 2. 32
Eze. 16. 8, 14

^c Cant. 5 10, 16
^d Hag. 2. 7
^e Psa. 84. 1, 87, 3
Revel. 21. 18, 23

^f 2. Cor. 7. 1
^g Zech. 3. 3, 4
Esa. 1. 5, 6
^h John 15. 3
17. 17

which Solemnitie men use above all other to adorne themselves with their costliest and most beautiful attire. Therefore we are said to ^a Put on the Lord Jesus, and to Put on bowels of mercie, and humblenesse of minde, and meeknesse, &c. and therefore likewise the Church is compared to a ^b Bride decked in her choicest ornaments and jewels, broidred work, silke, fine linnen, bracelets, chaines, jewels, crownes, gold, silver, perfect comlinesse, garments of salvation, and of praise, robes of righteousness, &c. And Christ the husband of his Spouse, the ^c chiefest and most amiable of ten thousand, even altogether lovely, The ^d Desire of all Nations, and the allure-ment of all hearts that can looke upon him. And ^e Jerusalem the palace of this glorious couple described by the most precious and desirable things which can be thought on. Jasper the wall, gold the pavement, pearle the gates, pretious stones the foundation, and the Lord the light thereof. Of our selves by reason of sin we are full of ^f filthinesse and deformity in flesh and spirit, & clothed with filthy garments, and overspread from the head to the foot with blaines and putrefactions. It is only the holy Word of God which ^h maketh us cleane from our filthinesse and from all our pollutions. By the washing of water through the word Christ sanctifieth us, that he may present unto himselfe *ἁγῶς ἁμωσύας* a glorious Church without spot or wrinkle, that it might be holy and without blemish, Ephes. 5. 27. And therefore the Apostle Saint Peter exhorteth Christian women to adorne the inner man of the heart with the ornament of a meeke and quiet spirit, which is in the sight of God (whose pure eye they ought rather to please than the wanton eye of man) of great price, 1 Pet. 3. 3, 4. And the truth hereof may be proved even from the practice of hypocrites themselves: for no man will counterfeit villanies, and make a shew of the vices, which indeed he hath not, except he be desperately thereunto swayed by an humor

of pleasing his wicked companions. And therefore St. *Austin* complaineth of it as of a prodigious corruption of his nature, that he did sometimes belie himself to his wicked associates, and boasted of the wickednesse which he durst not practise. No woman will paint her self with dung, or spread inke upon her face: It must be beautiful in it selfe which any man will ordinarily counterfeit: so that Holinesse hath the prerogative of an enemies suffrage, which is one of the strongest evidences to testifie the beauty and excellency thereof.

This point will more distinctly appear if we consider either the *Author, Nature, Properties, or Operations* of this Holinesse. First, the *Author* is God himself by his Spirit. *The very God of peace sanctifie you wholly*, saith the Apostle: and *the God of peace make you perfect in every good worke to doe his Will.* Therefore the Spirit is called a Spirit of Holinesse, by the power whereof Christ rising from the dead was declared to be the Son of God, to note the answerablenesse between raising from the dead, or giving life where there was none before, and the sanctification of a sinner. Therefore the Apostle calleth it the renewing of the Holy Ghost, and the forming of Christ in us, the quickening and creating us to good works. By all which we may note, that what Beauty the Creation brought upon that empty and unshaped Chaos when it was distributed into this orderly frame which we now admire; or what beauty the reunion of a living soule unto a dead and gasty body doth restore unto us; the same beauty doth Holinesse bring unto the soule of a man which was filthy before. But yet further wee must note, that God did not make man as other ordinary Creatures, for some low and inferiour use, (and yet *Solomon* saith, that they were made *all beautifull* in their time) but there was a pause, a consultation, a more than common wisdom, power, and mercy revealed in the workmanship of man: for God made man for his own

VERSE 3.

1 Thes. 5. 23
Heb. 13. 20 21
Rom. 1. 4

Ti. 3. 5
Gal. 4. 19.
Eph. 2. 5, 10

VERSE 3.

Psal. 4. 3.

Ib. 43. 21.

a 1 Tim. 3. 15.

b 2 Cor. 6. 16.

c Jer. 3. 17

d Isa. 60. 13.

e 1 Cor. 3. 9

f Cant. 7. 5

owne more peculiar delight, company and communion, one whom he would enter into a more intimate league and covenant withall. *The Lord hath set apart the man that is godly for himself. This people have I formed for my selfe, they shall shew forth my praise.* I will magnifie the beauty of my glorious vertues in those whom I have sanctified for my selfe. Thus we find what perfect comeliness the Lord bestowed upon his people, when he entered into covenant with them, and made them his *owne*: One which was alwaies to leane on his bosome, and to stand in his owne presence; *Ezek. 16. 8, 14.* The Church is the Lords (a) *own house*, his (b) *Temple* in the which he will dwell and walk; it is his (c) *Throne*, in which hee sitteth as our Prince and Law-giver. And in this regard it must needs be extraordinary beautiful; for the (d) *Lord will beautifie the place of his Sanctuary*, and will make the place of his feet glorious. Now then, if by holinesse we are made (e) *Gods building*, and that not as the rest of the world is, for Creatures to inhabite, but as a Temple for himselfe to dwell in, as a (f) *Gallery* for him to walke and refresh himself in, certainly holinesse which is the Ornament and engraving of this Temple must needs be a glorious thing, for there is much glory and wisdom in all Gods workes.

Secondly, if we consider the *Nature* of Holinesse, it must needs be very *Beautifull*. In general, it consists in a *Relation of conformity*, as all Goodnesse, save that of God doth: for no creature is so absolute as to have its being from it selfe, and therefore its Goodnesse cannot consist in any thing which hath its original in it selfe. It is the Rule and end which denominateth the Goodnesse of any created thing; that therefore which ought not to work for its own end, ought not to worke by its owne Rule, for he who is Lord of an end, must needs be Lord of the meanes and directions which lead unto that end. And this is indeed the ground of all sinne, when men make

make themselves; their own will, wit, reason or resolutions, to be the spring and fountain of all their actions. Therefore sinne is called our *own wayes*, and the lusts of our own hearts, and our *owne counsels*, because it is absolutely from our selves, and hath no constituted rule to moderate or direct it. Impossible it is for any Creature, as it comes out of Gods hands, to be without a Law, or to be an original law unto it selfe: for as hee who hath none over him cannot possibly be subject unto any Law, in as much as a Law is but the declaration of a Superiours wil, what he requires to be done, and what he threatneth on default thereof to inflict: so hee that is under the wisdome and ends of another, must needs likewise be subject to the Lawes which his will prescribes for advancing and compassing his own ends, who, if he be in his own Nature and Ends most holy, must needs be holy in the Lawes which he enacts. By all which we may observe, that holinesse consisteth in conformity; so that according to the excellency of the pattern whereunto it refers so is the measure of its beauty to be conjectured. And the pattern of our holinesse is God himselfe, *Bee you holy, as your Father which is in Heaven is holy.* Other Creatures have some prints and paths of God in them, and so are all beautifull in their time: but Man had the Image of God created in him, his will was set up in our heart as a Law of nature, most pure, right, holy, good, wise and perfect. and that Law did bear the same relation to mans life, as his soule doth unto his members, to animate, forme, and organize every motion of the heart, every word of the mouth, every action of the soule and body, according unto the will of God. When after this, man threw away his Image, and God was pleased in mercy againe to renew Holinesse in him, he did it again by another patterne, or rather the same exhibited in another manner. Hee made him then conformable to the image of his Son, the heavenly *Adam*,

Rom. 8. 29.
1 Cor 15. 49.
who

VERSE 3.

who is himselfe the image of the invisible God, the express Character of his Fathers brightnesse, a Sun of Righteousnesse, a morning Star, the Light of the world, the Fairest of ten thousand. So that compare Holinesse with the first Original draught thereof in Paradise, the nature of *Adam* as it came new out of Gods fashioning; or that with the Law of God written in his heart; or that with the Holinesse of God, of which it was a ray shining into the soule; or that Image of God with it self in Christ the second *Adam*, and every way Holinesse in its nature, consists in a Conformity and Commensuration to the most beautiful things.

Thirdly. if we consider some of the chief *Properties* of Holinesse, we shall find it in that regard likewise very beautiful. First, *Rectitude* and *Uprightnesse*, sincerity and simplicity of heart; *God made man upright, but they have found out (a) many inventions; that is have sought up and down through many turnings and by-ways to satisfie crooked affections. It was (b) Davids Prayer, Make thy way strait before my face; and it is the Apostles instruction, (c) Make strait paths for your feet, lest that which is lame be turned out of the way. True holinesse is a plain and an even thing, without falsehood, guile, perverseness of Spirit, deceitfulness of heart, or starting aside. It hath one end, one rule, one way, one heart, whereas hypocrites are in the Scripture called (d) Double minded men, because they pretend to God, and follow the world. And (e) crooked men, like that (f) swelling of a wall, whose parts are not perpendicular, nor level to their foundation. Now rectitude, sincerity, and singleness of heart is ever both in the eyes of God and man a beautiful thing.*

Secondly, *Harmony* and *Uniformity* within it selfe. The Philosopher saith of a *just man*, that he is like a *Dye*, which is every way even and like it selfe; turn it how you will, it falls upon an equall bottome. And so Holinesse

(a) Eccl. 7. 29

Jer. 31. 22

Isa. 57. 10

(b) Psal. 5. 8

(c) Heb. 11. 13

(d) Jam. 1. 8

(e) Deut. 32. 5

(f) Isa. 30. 12,

13.

linesse keeps the heart like its selfe in all conditions as a Watch, though all together it may be tossed up and downe with the agitation of him that carrieth it about him; yet that motion doth no way perturb the frame, or disorder the workings of the spring and wheels within: so though the man may be many wayes tempted, and disquieted, yet the frame of his heart, the order of his affections, the government of the spirit within him is not thereby stopped, but holds on in the same tenor. Wee know in the body, if any part do exceed the due proportion, it destroyes the beauty and acceptablenesse of the rest. Symmetry and fitnesse of the parts unto one another, is that which commends a body. Now Holinesse consisteth in this proportion; there is in it an *exactness*, an *exactnesse* of Obedience, an equall respect unto all Gods Commandements, and hatred of every false way, an universal worke upon the whole Spirit, soule, and body, a supply made unto every joynt, a measure dispensed unto every part, not a grace due unto Christian integrity, which is not in some proportion fashioned in a man. Christ hath no *Monsters* begotten by his Spiritual seed: for Monsters are ever caused either by an excesse, or by a defect of seed; in the one case nature being overcharged, is forc'd to labour that which remaines and will not be laid aside, into some superfluous members; and in the other, for want of materials, to leave her worke unfinished, and destitute of some necessary parts. But now first, we are to note, that a man can have no superfluity of Grace, we can never have too much of that, the fulnesse whereof we should labour to get; and for the other danger, we know Christ hath a Residue of spirit to supply any defect, and to make up whatsoever is a way for the fashioning of Christ in us. So then Holinesse fashioneth the whole man. He that leaves any one faculty of his soule neglected, or any one part of the Service or Law of God disobeyed, (I

VERSE 3.

speake of a total, and constant neglect) is undoubtedly an Hypocrite, and disobeyes all; *James 2. 10, 11.* As David with a little stone slew *Goliath*, because his forehead was open; so can our enemy easily deale with us, if he observe any faculty naked and neglected. The actual and total breach of any one Commandement (*Total*, I meane, when the whole heart doth it, though haply it execute not all the obliquity which the compasse of the sinne admits) is an implicate, habitual, interpretative, and conditional breach of all; His soule stands alike disaffected to the holinesse of every Commandement, and he would undoubtedly adventure upon the breach of this, if such exigences and conditions as misguided him in the other, should thereunto as strongly induce him. He that hath done any one of these abominations, hath done all these abominations in Gods account: *Ezek. 18. 10, 13.* There being then in a Christian man a suteable life, and vigor of holinesse in every part, and a mutual conspiring of them all in the same wayes and ends; there must needs likewise be therein an excellent beauty.

Thirdly, *growth* and further *Progresse* in these proportions: for it is not only uprightnesse and Symmetry of parts, which causeth perfect beauty and comelinesse, but stature likewise. Now Holinesse is a thriving and growing thing. The Spirit is seed, and the Word is raine, and the Father is an Husband-man, and therefore the Life of Christ is an *abounding Life*, *John. 10. 10.* The rivers of the Spirit of Grace spring up unto Eternity, *John 7. 36.* As Christ hath no Monsters, so neither hath he any *Dwarfs* in his mystical Body: but all his grow up unto the pitch of perfection, which it becometh them to have in him, even unto the measure of the stature of the fulnesse of Christ, *Ephes. 4. 12 13.* The meaning of the Apostle is, that Christ is not alwayes an Infant in us, as when he is first formed; but that he doth *Grandescere* in *Sanctis*, as *Musculus* well expresseth it, that he groweth

up still unto the stature of a man : for wheresoever there is faith and holiness, there is ever ingenerated an appetite for augmentation. Faith is of a growing, and Charity of an *abounding nature*, 2 *Thes.* 1.3. By the Word of truth, as by incorruptible seed we were begotten, and by the same Word, as by the sap and milke are we nourished, and grow up thereby. This affection Holinesse ever works, as it did in the Disciples, *Lord, increase our faith*; and in *David*, *Strengthen, O God, that which thou hast wrought for us*.

Fourthly, besides the Rectitude, Harmony, and Maturity which is in Holinesse, there is another property, which maketh the Beauty thereof surpasse all other Beauty, and that is *Indeficiencie*. The measure of Christ must be the Rule of our growth, but Christ never was overtaken by old age, or times of declining; he never saw corruption: So we must proceed from strength to strength, like the Sunne to the perfect day, but there is no sinking or setting of Holinesse in the heart. They that are planted in Gods House, do still bring forth fruit in their *Old age*, and are even then fat and flourishing. As our outward man decayeth, so our inward man groweth day by day. Our holinesse is a branch of the life of Christ in us, which doth never of it selfe runne into death, and therefore is not *apta nata* of it selfe to decay: for that is nothing but an earnest, inchoation, and assurance of death. *That which waxeth old, saith the Apostle, is ready to vanish away*, *Heb.* 8. 13.

Fourthly, and lastly, if we consider the *Operations* of Holinesse, that likewise will evidence the Beauty thereof, for it hath none but gracious and honourable effects. It filleth the Soule with Joy, Comfort, and Peace: All Joy, Unspeakable and Glorious Joy, Peace, quietnesse, assurance, songs, and everlasting Joy. It maketh the Blinde see, the Deafe heare, the Lame leape, the Dumbe sing, the Wilder nesse and parched ground to be-

VERSE 3.

Jam. 1. 18. 21

1 *Per.* 1. 23.

& 2. 2

Luke 17 5

Psalme 68. 28

Psalme 92. 14

Rom. 15. 13

1 *Per.* 1. 8

Esay 32. 17

Esay 35. 5. o

VERSE 3.

Ezay 24.6

Cant. 2. 4, 5

Psal. 45. 15

Cant. 1. 4

Cant. 7. 5

John 14. 21, 23

Heb. 12. 14

Psal. 45. 11

Cant. 4. 9

come springs of water. It entertaineth the soule with feasts of fatted things, and of refined wines, and carrieth it into the Banqueting-house unto apples and flagons. It giveth the soule a deare communion with God in Christ, a sight of him, an accessse unto him, a boldnesse in his presence, and admission into most holy delights, and intimate conferences with him in his bed-chamber, and in his galleries of love. In one word, it gathers the admiration of men, it secures the protection of Angels, and which is argument of more beauty than all the creatures in the World have besides, it attracteth the eye and heart, the longings and ravishments, the tender compassions and everlasting delights of the Lord Jesus.

I have insisted on those properties of Holinesse, which denote *inward beauty*, because all the graces of the Spirit doe beautify inherently. But the word properly signifying *Decus* or *Ornatum*, outward adorning by a metaphor of rich apparel, expressing the internal excellency of the soule, notes unto us two things more.

First, that the people of Christ are not only sanctified within, but have interest in that unspotted holinesse of Christ, wherewith they are cloathed as with an ornament. So the Priests (*a*) of God are said to be *clothed with righteousness*, and we are said to (*b*) *put on Christ*: And the righteousness of Christ is frequently compared to (*c*) *long white robes*, fit to (*d*) *cover our finnes*, to hide our nakednesse, and to protect our persons from the wrath of God: so that to the eye of his Justice we appeare, as it were parts of Christ; as when Jacob wore *Esaus* garment, he was as *Esaue* to his father, and in that relation obtained the blessing. God carrieth himselfe towards us in Christ, as if we our selves had fulfilled all *righteousnesse*, as if there were no ground of contestation with us, or exception against us. And this is indeed the *beautie of holinesse*: The model, prototype, and original of all *beautie*.

a Psal. 132. 9*b* Gal. 3. 27*c* Revel. 3. 18

4. 4.

6. 11.

7. 9.

d Psal. 32. 1

Secondly,

The Beauty of Holinesse.

359

Secondly, from the metaphorical allusion (as it is usually understood) it notes unto us likewise, that all the people of Christ are *Priests unto God*, to offer up sacrifices acceptable unto him by Jesus Christ. They have all the privileges, and the duties of Priests, to approach unto God: we have libertie to enter into the holiest by the blood of Jesus; to consult and have communion with him, to be his Remembrancer: for as his Spirit is his Remembrancer unto us, (He shall bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you) so is he our Remembrancer unto God, to put him in minde of his mercy and promises, to make mention of him, and to give him no rest. To know, and propagate his truth; this was the Office of the Priest, to bee the Keeper of Knowledge, and to teach it unto others: and this knowledge in the Gospel doth overflow the earth, and make every man, in a spiritual sense, a Priest, an Edifier, and Edifier of his brother; to offer to him such sacrifices as he now delighteth in, the sacrifices of thanksgiving, the sacrifices of a broken and contrite spirit, the sacrifices of praise, confession, good works, and mutual communicating unto one another: in one word, the sacrificing of a mans whole selfe; to be consecrated as a kinde of first fruit unto God, being sanctified by the holy Ghost. There is no man actually belonging unto the Kingdome of Christ, who hath not all these holy affections wrought in him, and maketh conscience of them, as of his calling, and the duties of his life.

Wee see then that Holinesse is the badge of Christs Subjects; they are called *The people of his Holinesse*: Israel was Holinesse unto the Lord, and the first fruits of his increase consecrated unto him and his service as a kinde of first fruits. The livery of Christs servants is a parcel of the same holy Spirit with which his owne humane nature was clothed. All the vessels and ministe-

VERSE 3.

1 Pet. 2.5

Esay 56.7

Revel. 1.6

Heb. 10.19

John 14.16

Esay 43.26

Esay 62.6,7

Mal. 2.7

Esay 11.9

Col. 3.16

Heb. 3.13

Jude ver. 20

Psal. 107.22

Psal. 51.17

Heb. 13.15,16

Phil. 4.18

Rom. 12.1

Rom. 15.16

Esay 66.20

Jam. 1.18

Esay 63.18

Jer. 2.3

Jam. 1.18

Exod. 40.9

VERSE 3.

c Psal. 93.5

d 2 Cor. 6.16

e Rom. 6.13

y Eph. 1.13

z 1 Cor. 2.12

a Tit. 2.14

b Heb. 1.14

c Ezck. 9.4

d Mal. 2.3

Jer. 11.15

Psal. 50.16,17

Esay 1. 11,14

riall instruments of the Tabernacle were anointed with the holy Oyle; and the house of the Lord was an house of Holinesse, to signifie that every Christian should be by the Spirit of God sanctified, because he is ^a a Temple; and every member, because it is ^a a vessel and instrument for the Masters use. *The Spirit of Holinesse* is that which *distinguisheth*; and as it were, *marketh* the sheepe of Christ from the wicked of the world: yee are ^y sealed with the *Holy Spirit of promise*: ^z yee have not received the spirit of the world, but the Spirit which is of God. Holinesse ^a *setteth us apart* for Gods Service, for his ^b *Presence* and fruition; ^c *protecteth* and *priviledgeth* us from the wrath to come, in the day when he shall separate betweene the pretious and the vile, and make up his Jewels: without this no man can either serve, or see, or escape God, either doe his Will, enjoy his favour, or decline his fury. All our *services* without this are but ^d *Dung*, and who would thanke that man for his service, who with wonderful officiousnesse should bring nothing but heapes of Dung into his house? If a man could powre out of his veines rivers of blood, and offer up every day as many prayers as thoughts unto God, if his eyes were melted into teares, and his knees hardened into borne with devotion; yet all this, if it be not the fruit of Holinesse, but of will-worship, or superstition, or opinion of merit and righteousness, it is but as Dung in Gods sight. *Wherefore liest thou upon thy face? there is an accursed thing in the Campe.* What ever sinne thy Conscience tels thee lieth next thy heart, and warmes it, so that thou art unwilling to part from it, take heed of bringing it into Gods presence: or provoking him with thy services, for he will throw them backe like dung into thy face. *What hath my beloved to doe in mine house, seeing she hath wrought lewdnesse with many? What hast thou to doe to take my Covenant in thy mouth, seeing thou hatest instruction? Who hath required this at your hands,*

to tread in my Courts? Bring no more vaine oblations, incense is an abomination unto mee, &c. Till a man put away the evil of his doings, and cleanse himselfe, all his worship of God is but mocking of him, and prophaning his Ordinances. In vaine did the Marriners pray while *Jonah* was in the ship; in vaine did *Joshua* intercede while the accursed thing was in the Campe. A man shall lose all which he hath wrought in Gods worship, and have neither thanks nor reward for it, so long as he harboureth any uncleane affection in his heart, and will not yeild to part from it. Any sinne which wasteth the conscience (as every great and presumptuous sinne doth in whomsoever it is) unqualifieth that person for the Kingdom of Heaven. Grace maketh a believer sure of salvation, but it doth not make him wretchlesse or secure in living; though there be not an extinguishment yet there is a suspension of his right upon any blacke and notorious fall: that man must not dare to lay claim to Heaven; that hath dared in a presumptuous manner to provoke the Lord. Our Holinesse is not the cause of our salvation, but yet it is the way thereunto; he which by any wasting and presumptuous sin putteth himselfe out of that way, must by repentance turne into it againe; before he can hope to finde out Heaven; for without Holinesse no man shall see the Lord. He that is an hundred miles from his owne house, notwithstanding his propriety thereunto, shall yet never actually enter therein, till he hath travelled over the right way which leads unto it. There is an Order, a *primo ad ultimum* in the salvation of men, many intermediate passages between their vocation and their Glory: Justification, Repentance, Sanctification, as a scale or ladder betwix Earth and Heaven. He that falls from his holinesse and purity of conscience, though he be not quite down the ladder, and hath the whole worke to begin again, as much as ever; yet doubtlesse he shall never get to the top till he recover the step from which he fell.

VERSE 3.

And if in this case it be true that the righteous shall scarcely be saved; O then where shall that man appeare whom God at the last shall finde without this garment and sewe upon him? When there was a tempest, he who slept and least thought of it, was throwne into the Sea; and when the day of wrath shall come, those that have neglected their estate most; shall doubtlesse be in the greatest danger. And therefore we should labour to goe to Gods Throne with our garments and our mark upon us; for all other endowments, our learning, our honours, our parts, our preferments, our earthly hopes and dependencies will none follow us, but we shall live to see either them or the comforts of them depart. *Achitophel* had wisdom like an Oracle of God, but he liv'd to see it bid him quite farwel, for he died like a very foole or childe, who when he may not have his owne will, will be reveng'd upon himselfe. *Human* had more honour than the ambition of a subject usually aspires unto, and yet he lived to see it bid him farwel, and died the basest death which himselfe could devise for his most hated and despised enemy. *Jehoiakim*, a king, lived to see his Crowne take its leave, and was buried with the burial of an Ass, and drag'd like carrion out of the gates of the City. There will be nothing at last left for any man to cast his trust upon but God, or Angels, or our fellowes; and if then God be against us, though all which remains were on our side, alas what is an handful of stubble to a world sett on fire? but yet there will not be that advantage, but the combat must be single between God and a sinner. The good Angels rejoyce to doe Gods Will, and the wicked will rejoyce to do man any mischief; these will be only ready to accuse, and those to gather the wicked together unto the wrath of him that sitteth on the Throne. O what would a man give then for that Holinesse which he now despiseth? what Covenants would such a man be content to subscribe unto, if God would

would then shew him mercy when the Court of mercy is shut up? wouldst thou returne to the earth and live there a thousand yeares under contempt and persecution for my service? O yes, not under thy service onely, but under the rockes and mountaines of the earth, so I may be hid from the face of the Lambe. Wilt thou be content to goe to Hell and serve me there a thousand yeers in the midst of Hellish torments, and the reviling of damned creatures? O yes, even in Hell infinitely better would it be to be thy servant, than thine enemy. Wilt thou revenge every oath with a yeare of prayers, every bribe or corruption with a treasury of almes, every vanity with an age of precisenesse? Yes Lord, the severest of thy commands to escape but the smallest of thy Judgements. O let us be wise for our selves; there shall be no such easie conditions then proposed, when it will be impossible to observe them; and there are now farre easier proposed, when we are invited to observe them.

Lastly, from hence we learne that none will be *willing* to come unto Christ till they see *Beauty* in his Service, which with a carnal eye they cannot doe; for naturally the heart is possesst with much prejudice against it, that the way of religion in that exactnesse which the Word requires, is but the phantasme of more sublimated speculations, a meere notional and airy thing, which hath no being at all, but in the wishes of a few men, who fancie unto themselves the shape of a Church, as *Zenophon* did of a Prince, or *Plato* of a Commonwealth. And therefore though with their tongues they doe not, yet in their hearts men are apt to lay aside that rigour and exactnesse which the Scripture requires, namely, to pull out our right eyes, to cut off our right hands, to hate father and mother, and wife, and lands, and our owne life, to deny our selves, to crosse our owne desires, to mortifie our earthly members, to follow the Lambe through evil report and good report, through afflictions

VERSE 3.

Esay 8.14,18

Zech. 7.8

Luke 2.34

Quantus in
Christiano popu-
lo honor Christi
ubi religio igno-
bilem facit?

— per hoc om-
nes quodammo-
do mali esse co-
guntur, ne viles
habeantur. Sal-
vian.

Cant. 1.5,8

Cant. 5.7,10

afflictions and persecutions, and manifold temptations whither soever he goeth, to warre with principalities and powers, and spiritual wickednesse, to acquaint our selves with the whole Counsel of God, and the like: and in stead thereof to resolve upon certaine more tolerable maximes of their owne to goe to Heaven by, certain mediocrities between piety and prophanenesse, wherein men hope to hold God fast enough, and yet not to lose either the world or their sinful lusts. This is a certaine and confessed truth, that the spirit which is in us by nature, is contrary to the Spirit of purity and power which is in the Word: and therefore the universall and willing submission of the heart unto this, must needs finde both many antipathies within, and many discouragements and contempts without. Christ was set up for *a signe of contraiiction* to be spoken against, and that *in the houses of Israel and of Juda*: and as it was then, so is it now, even in *Abrahams family*, in the household and visible Church of Christ, *They that are of the flesh persecute those that are after the spirit*; Christ had never greater enemies than those which professed his Name. This is one of the forest engines Satan hath against his Kingdome, to make it appeare in the eyes of men, as a despicable, contemptuous, and unbeautiful thing. And therefore no man comes under Christs government till that prejudice by manifest evidence of the Spirit be removed. And for this reason the wayes of Christ are set forth as *beautiful, even under crosses and afflictions. I am black with persecution, with the beating of the Sunne upon me; but yet I am comely*, O yee daughters of Jerusalem. When the watch-men smote the Church and wounded her, and tooke away her veile, yet still she acknowledged Christ, for whose sake she suffered these persecutions, to be *white and ruddy, the fairest of tenne thousand*: and the same opinion hath Christ of his Church; though she be afflicted and tossed with tempest, yet he esteemeth of her as

of

of a beautiful structure. *How faire and how pleasant art thou, O love, for delights?* And this is that we should all endeavour, to shew forth in a shining and unblameable conversation, the *Beauty of the Gospel*, that the enemy may have no occasion from any indiscretions, affectations, unnecessary reservednesse, and deformities, ungrounded scrupulosities, over-worldly affections, or any other mi-carriages of those who professe not the name only, but the power of religion, to blaspheme or sling off from a way, against which they have such prejudices offered them: for all that which the faithful have common with the world, shall yet be sure to be charg'd upon their profession by wicked men, who have not either reason or charity enough to distinguish betweene Gods rule, and mans error. *Submit your selves, saith the Apostle, to every ordinance of man for the Lords sake, &c.* For so is the Will of God, that with well-doing you may put to silence the ignorance of foolish men: for this is certaine, the ignorance of foolish men will not so much lay the blowes upon your persons, as upon that truth and religion which you professe, when you needlessly withstand any such Ordinances as you might without sinne obey.

The last thing observed in this verse was the *Multitudes* of Christs subjects, and the *manner* of their birth; *From the wombe of the morning, thou hast the dew of thy youth.* Thy Children are borne in as great abundance unto thee; as the dew which falleth from the morning wombe.

From whence we may note; First, that Christ in the day of his Power, in the morning of his Church, had *multitudes of children* borne unto him. This promise the Lord made to *Abraham*, and it is not to be limited to his children after the flesh, but to his children of promise, that his seed should be as the *Starres*, and as the *Dust* for multitude. And the Prophet applies that promise to *Israel*

VERSE 3.

Esa. 54.11, 12
Cant. 4.1, 7

Gen. 22.7
Gen. 28.14

VERSE 3.

Num. 23. 10

Hos. 1. 10

Esay 11. 9
Rev. 14. 1

Acts 14. 16

Mat. 10. 5

John 14. 12

Israel by promise, when those after the flesh should be dissipated and become no people, yet saith the Prophet, the number of the children of Israel shall be as the sand of the sea which cannot be measured nor numbered, &c. meaning the Israel of God amongst the Gentiles. Thus the faithful are said to flock like Doves unto their windows, and to swell into a sea of great waters, *an hundred and foure and forty thousand*, with an innumerable company more, all sealed and standing before the Lambe.

Now this was *in die copiarum*, in the time when Christ first sent abroad his armies and the rod of his strength into the world. Before this, God suffered men to walke in their owne wayes; yea, while he was on the earth he forbade his Disciples to enter into the Cities of the Samaritans, or the Gentiles. And he promised them that they should doe greater works than he himsele had done, because he went unto his Father: for when he ascended up on high, he then led captivity captive, that ignorance and thraldome under which the world was held he triumphed over, and gave gifts of his Spirit unto men of all sorts in abundance; Visions to the young, Dreames to the aged, and his gracious Spirit unto all. We never reade of so many converted by Christs personal preaching (which was indeed but the beginning of his preaching, for it is the Lord which speaketh from heaven still) as by the Ministry of his Apostles; he thereby providing to magnifie the excellencie of his spiritual presence, against all the carnal superstitious of those men who seeke for a visible, corporal presence of Christ on the earth, charmed downe out of heaven under the lying shapes of separated accidents: And who cannot be content with that *All-sufficient Remembrancer*, which himsele hath promised to his Church, *Joh. 14. 26.* except they may have others, and those such as the holy Scriptures every where disgraceeth as teachers of lyes and vanity.

nity, The Crucifixes and Images of their owne erecting; therein infinitely derogating from that All-sufficient provision, which the Lord in his Word and Sacraments (the onely living and full Images of Christ crucified, Gal. 3.1) hath proposed unto men as alone able to make them wise unto salvation, being opened and represented unto the Consciences of Men, not by humane inventions, but by those Holy ordinances and offices which himselfe hath appointed in his Church, the preaching of his Word, and administration of his Sacraments. And surely they, who by Moses and the Prophets, by that Ministry which Christ after his ascension did establish in his Church, doe not repent, would bee no whit the nearer, no more than Judas or the Pharisees were, if they should see or heare Christ in the flesh. Therefore it is observed after Christs ascension, that the Word of God grew mightily and prevailed; and that there were men daily added unto the Church. That the Savour of the Gospel was made manifest in every place. That the Children of the desolate were more than of the married wife. Therefore the Believers after Christs ascension are called *πύλος ἡ πόλις*. The multitude of them that believed, and multitudes of men and women were added to the Lord. Tenne to one of that there was before: Tenne men shall take hold out of all languages of the Nations, of the skirt of him that is a Jew, saying, We will go with you; that is, shall take the Kingdome of Heaven by violence, as Saul laid hold on the skirt of Samuel's Mantle, that he might not goe from him.

The reason hereof is to magnifie the exaltation and spirituall Presence and Power of Christ in the Church. While he was upon the earth he confind his ordinary residence and personal preaching unto one people, because his bodily presence was narrow, and could not be communicated to the whole world. For he took our nature with those conditions and limitations which belong thereunto.

Acs 19.20

Acs 3.47

2 Cor. 2.14

Eph 54.1

Acs 4.32

Acs 5.14

Zech. 8.20, 23

Math. 11.12

1 Sam. 15.27

VERSE 3.

1 Cor. 1. 27, 28

1 Cor. 2. 3, 4, 5

2 Cor. 4. 7
Zech 4. 6

1 Cor. 16. 9

unto. But his Spirit and power is over the whole Church, by them he walketh in the midst of the Candlesticks. Christs bodily presence and preaching the Jewes withstood, and crucified the Lord of Glory. But now to shew the greatnesse of his Power by the Gospel, hee goes himselfe away, and leaves but a few poore and persecuted men behinde him, assisted with the vertue of his Spirit, and by them wrought works which all the world could not withstand. He could have published the Gospel as he did the Law by the ministry of Angels; he could have anointed his Apostles with regal oyle, and made them not Preachers onely, but Princes, and Defenders of his faith in the world. But he rather chose to have them to the end of the world poore and despised men, whom the world (without any shew of just reason which can be by them alledged) should over-looke, and account of as low and meane conditioned men, that his Spirit might in their Ministry be the more Glorified. *God hath chosen the foolish things of the world to confound the wise, and weake things of the world to confound things that are mighty, and base things of the world, and things which are despised hath God chosen; yea, and things that are not, to bring to nought things that are; that no flesh should glory in his presence.* But that his owne Spirit might have all the honour: therefore *I was with you in weaknesse, saith the Apostle, and in feare, and in much trembling. &c. That your faith should not stand in the wisdom of men, but in the Power of God. And againe, we have this treasure in earthen vessels, that the excellency of the power may be of God, and not of us. Not by might, nor by power, but by my Spirit, saith the Lord.* Thus we finde that when the Church was most persecuted, it did then most grow; and in the worst times it brought forth the greatest fruit, to note the power of Christs Kingdome above all the attempts of men. *A great doore, and effectual is opened unto me, saith the Apostle, and there are many adversaries; intimating*

ting, that the Gospel of Christ had great successe when it was most resisted. All persecutors (as S. Cyprian observes) are like Herod, they take their times, and seek to slay Christ, and overthrow his Kingdome in its Infancy, and therefore at that time doth he most of all magnifie the power and protection of his Spirit over the same. Never were there so many men converted as in those Infant-times of the Church, when the Dragon stood before the woman, ready to devoure her Childe, as loone as it should be borne. The great Potentates of the World, which did persecute the Name of Christ, were themselves at last thereunto subjected. *Non à repugnantibus, sed à morientibus Christianis*; not by fighting, but by dying Christians. As a Tree shaken sheds the more fruit, and a Perfume burnt diffuseth the sweetest Savor; so persecuted Christianity doth the more flourish by the power of that Holy Spirit, whose foolishnesse is wiser, and whose weakenesse is stronger than all the oppositions and contradictions of men.

But if there be such multitudes belonging unto Christs Kingdome, is not universality and a visible pompe a true note to discern the Church of Christ by? To this I answer, that a true chare&ristical note or difference ought to be convertible with that of which it is made a note, and onely suteable thereunto; for that which is common unto many, can be no evident note of this or that particular. Now universality is common to Antechristian, Idolatrous, and malignant Churches. The Arian herisie invaded the World, and by the Imperial countenance spread it selfe into all Churches. The Whore was to sit upon many waters, which were peoples, and multitudes, and nations and tongues; the Kings of the earth were to be made drunke with the wine of her fornications, and all nations to drinke thereof. Therefore touching these multitudes in the Church, we are thus to state the point: Consider the Church in it selfe, and so it is a very vast body.

VERSE 3.

Infantiam Christi studiosè persequuntur, & antequam formetur Christus in nobis, in ipsa pia conversationis initio ut extinguatur spiritus, & succedat vita iusticia, penitus elaborant. Cyprian. Serm. de stella & Magis. Aug. pist. 42.

Πᾶσι τοῖς ἁγίοις ἐν ἁποστολῇ διέκοιτο; Νεζ. Οἱ αὐτοὶ.

Rev. 17. 15.
& 18. 3

VERSE 3.

Brierwood of
Religion.

*Manifesta se
tum Dei virtus
contra odia hu-
mana porrexit :
cum tanto magis
Christus pradi-
catur, quanto
magis pradicari
inhibetur.
Hilar. contra.
Auxent.*

47, but yet consider it *comparatively* with the other more prevailing and malignant part of the World, and so it is but a *little flocke*; as many graines and measures of corn may lie hid under a great heap of chaffe. Secondly, the Church now is *many*, *comparatively* with the old Church of the Jewes, *more are the children of the desolate than of the married wife*, Esay 54. 1. But not *comparatively* with the adversaries of the Church in general. We see of thirty parts of the world, nineteene are either Idolatrous or Mahumetan, and the other eleven serving Christ in so different a manner, as if there were many Christs, or many Gospels, or many wayes to the same end. Thirdly, though Christ alwayes have a *numerous off-spring*, yet in several Ages there is observable a different purity and conspicuousnesse, according to the different administrati-
ons and breathings of the Spirit upon his Garden. In some ages the Doctrine more uncorrupt, the profession and acceptation more universal than in others. In the Apostles times there were *many borne unto Christ*, by reason of the more abundant measure of Spirit, which was shed abroad upon them, Tit. 3. 6. In the times of the Primitive persecutions there were many likewise borne, because God would glorify the foundations of his Church, and the Power of his Spirit above the pride of men. In the first countenancing of it by Imperial Lawes and fa-
vours, it was very general and conspicuous, because pro-
fessed by the obedience, and introduc'd by the power of those great Emperours, whom the World followed. But after that long peace and great dignities had corrup-
ted the mindes of the chiefe in the Church, and made them looke more after the pompe than the purity there-
of, the mystery of iniquity (like a weed) grew apace, and over-spread the Corne; first abusing, and after that sub-
jecting the power of Princes, and bewitching the Kings of the earth with its fornication.

Hence likewise we may learne to acknowledge Gods
mercy

mercy in the worst times; in those ages wherein the Church was most oppressed, yet many have yielded themselves unto Christ. *The Woman was with Child, and was delivered even when the Dragon did persecute her, Revel. 12. 14.* and even then God found out in the wilderness a place of refuge, defence, and feeding for his Church. As in those cruell times of *Arrianisme* when heresie had invaded the world, and in those blinde and miserable ages wherein Satan was loosed, God still stirred up some notable instruments by whom hee did defend his truth, and amongst whom hee did preserve his Church, though they were driven into solitary places, and forced to avoid the assemblies of Hereticall and Antichristian Teachers.

Wee learne likewise not to censure persons, places or times; God had seven thousand in Israel, when *Elias* thought none but himselfe had been left, all are not alike venturous or confident of their strength, *Nicodemus* came to Christ by night, and yet even then Christ did not reject him. Therefore we must not presently censure our neighbours as cold or dead, if they discover not immediately the same measure of courage and publike stoutnesse in the profession of Christ with our selves; some men are by nature more retir'd, silent, unsociable, unactive men: some by the engagement of their places, persons, and callings wherein they are of more publike and necessary use in the Church, are put upon more abundant caution and circumspection in the moderate carriage of themselves than other men. *Paul* was of himselfe very zealous and earnest in that great confusion, when *Gaius* and *Tristarchus* were haied into the theatre, to have gone in unto the people in that their outrage and distemper: but the wisdome of the Disciples, and some of his chiefe friends is herein commended; that they sent unto him desiring him that hee would not adventure into the theatre, and that they suffered him not; *Act. 19. 30. 31. R. 19.*

*Hieronymus
Contr. Lucife-
rianos. Vincen-
tius Lyrinensis
in commonito-
rio.*

VERSE. 3.

Greg. Nazian.
Orat. 20.

grave observation which *Gregory Nazianzen* makes of that great champion, and universall agent for composing the differences, and distractions of the Church. *S. Basil*, that *pro temporis ratione & Hæreticorum principatu*, by reason of the prevalence of adversaries and condition of the times, hee did in the controversies concerning the Deity of the Holy Ghost abstaine from some words which others of an inferior ranke did with liberty and boldnesse use; and that this hee did in much wisdom, and upon necessary reasons; because it was not fit for so eminent a person, and one who had such generall influence by the quality of his place and greatnesse of his parts in the welfare of the Church, by the envie of words or phrases to exasperate a countenanced enemy, and to draw upon himselfe, and in him upon the Church of God, any inevitable and unnecessary danger: And surely if the wisdom and moderation of that holy man were with the same pious affection generally observed, that men when they doe earnestly contend for the truth once delivered, (which is the duty of every Christian) did not in heate of argument load the truth they maintaine, with such hard and severe, though it may bee true expressions as beget more obstinacie in the adversary; and it may bee suspicion in the weak or unresolved looker on, differences amongst men might bee more soberly composed, and the truth with more assurance entertained.

Again, wee have from hence an encouragement to goe on in the wayes of Christ, because wee goe in great and in good Company: many wee have to suffer with us, many wee have to comfort and to encourage us. As the people of Israel when they went solemnely up to meeete the Lord in *Sion* went on from troop to troop, the further they went, the more companie they were mixed withall, going to the same purpose: so when the Saints goe towards heaven to meeete the Lord there, they doe

Psal. 84. 7.

nor

not onely goe unto an *innumerable Company of Angels*, and *just men*, but they meete with *troopes in their way*, to encourage one another. All the discouragement that *Elias* had, was, that hee was alone; but we have no such plea for our unwillingnesse to professe the truth and power of Religion now. Wee are not like a lambe in a wide place, without comfort or company; but wee are sure to have an excellent guard and convoy unto Christs Kingdome. And this use the Apostle makes of the multitudes of beleevers, that wee should by so great a *Cloud of witnesses*, bee the more encouraged in our patient running of that race which is set before us, *Heb. 12. 1.*

Lastly, It should teach us, *to love the multitudes*, the assemblies and the *Communion of the Saints*, to speak often to one another, to encourage & strengthen one another, not to forsake the assembling of our selves together as the maner of some is; to concurre in mutuall desires, to conspire in the same holy thoughts and affections; to bee of one heart, of one soul, of one judgement, to walke by one & the same rule, to besiege heaven with armies of united Prayers; to be mutually serviceable to the City of God, and to one another as fellow members. Therefore hath the Lord given unto men *severall gifts*, and to no one man all, that thereby wee might bee enabled and induced to worke *together* unto one end, and by *Love* to unite our severall graces for the edification of the body of Christ, *Ephes. 4. 11, 13.*

Now for the manner of producing or procuring these multitudes, it is set forth unto us in two Metaphors. *A wombe, and Dew of the morning.* Now the birth of Dew is first *generatio caelestis*. That which is exal'd is an earthly vapor, but the heavenly operation changeth it into *Dew*; no art of man is able to doe it. It is also *undiscovered and secret*, when it is fallen you may see it, but how it is made you cannot see. Lastly, it is a *sudden Birth*, in a night, or morning it is both begotten, concei-

VERSE 3.

Heb. 12. 22-23.

1 Kings: 19. 14

VERSE 3.

ved, and brought forth. Here then wee have foure notes.

John 3. 3.
Esa. 8. 18.
Heb 2. 12. 13.
Gal. 4. 26.
Esa. 51. 18.
1 Cor. 4. 15.
Philcm. v. 10.
Gal. 4. 19.
1 Pet. 1. 23.

1 Pet. 1. 23.
John 3. 5.

Gal 4. 19.
AR. 20. 31.

First, that all Christs subjects are withall his *Children*. They are *borne unto him*. *Christianity* is a *Birth*, except a man bee borne againe, hee cannot see the Kingdome of God. There is a *Father*. Christ our Father by generation; Behold, I and the Children whom thou hast given mee; as wee are his brethren by adoption. Hee is not ashamed to call us brethren. There is a *Mother*, Ierusalem which is above is the *Mother of us all*. And there are subordinate instruments, both of one and other, the holy Apostles, Evangelists, Doctors, and Pastors, who therefore are sometimes called *Fathers* begetting us, in Christ Iesus I have begotten you through the Gospel; and sometimes *Mothers* bearing, and bringing forth; of whom I travel in birth againe untill Christ bee formed in you. There is a *holy seed* out of which these Children of Christ are formed; namely the *Word of God*, which liveth and abideth for ever. For the heart of a man new borne unto Christ, cometh from the word as a paper from the presse, or as a garment from a perfume, transformed into that quality of spiritualnesse and holinesse which is in the word. There is a *Vivificant* or *formative vertue*, which is the energie and concurrence of the spirit of grace with the word, for the truth is not obeyed but by the Spirit, except a man bee borne of water and the Spirit, water as the seed, and the Spirit as the formative vertue quickning and actuating that seed, hee cannot enter into the Kingdome of God. There are *Throwes and paines* both in the Mother and the Childe; much trouble and care in the ministry of the word *as mine widow with whom I travel in paine againe*. I ceased not to warne every one night and day with tears. As a woman with Childe, by reason of the fear and danger of miscarriages, doth abridge her self of many liberties; in meates, physick, violent exercise, and the like; so those who travel in birth with

All Christs subjects are his Children.

375

VERSE 3

with the Children of Christ are put to deny themselves many things, and to suffer many things for the success of their service. *I will eat no flesh while the world standeth rather than make my brother to offend. I am appointed a Preacher, and an Apostle, a Teacher of the Gentiles; for the which cause I also suffer these things. I endure all things for the Elects sake, that they may obtain the salvation which is in Christ Jesus.* And there is pain in the Child too; a sinner doth not leave the warmth and pleasure of his former condition without pain; Christ comes not without shaking unto the soul. There is a *New being or nature*; a corruption of our old man, and a formation of the new. *Old things are done away, behold all things are become new*; the same holy nature, the same mind, judgment, will, affections, motions, desires, dispositions, are by the Spirit wrought in us which were in him. Hee that hath this hope *purifieth himself, even as he is pure; as he is, so are we in this world*; Patient as he is patient, *Heb. 12. 2.* Holy as he is holy *1 Pet. 1. 15.* Humble as he is humble, *John 13. 14.* Compassionate as hee is compassionate, *Col. 3. 13.* Loving as hee is loving; *Ephes. 5. 2.* in all things labouring to shew Christ fashioned in our nature and in our affections. There is a new conversation answerable to our new nature; that as God is good in himself, and doth good in his works, *Psal. 119. 68.* so we both are as Christ was, *1 John 4. 17.* and walk as he walked. *1 John 2. 6.* There is new food, and appetites thereto suitable. A desire of the sincere, immediate, untampered, uncorrupted milk of the Word as it comes with all the spirits and life in it, that we may grow thereby. *New Priviledges and Relations*; the Sons of God, the Brethren of Christ, the Citizens of Heaven, the Household of the Saints, *New Communion and Society*; the Fellowship of the Father and the Son by the Spirit; fellowship with the holy Angels; we have their Love, their Ministry, their Protection, fellowship with

1 Cor. 8. 13.
2 Tim. 1. 11. 12
2 Tim. 2. 10.

Tit. 3. 5.
2 Cor 5. 17.
Eph. 4. 22. 23.
Rom. 12. 2.
1 John. 3. 3,
4. 17.

1 Pet. 2. 1.

VERSE 3.

Eph. 5. 8.
Rom. 13. 12.

the Spirits of just men made perfect, by the seeds and beginnings of the same perfection, by the participation of the same Spirit of Holiness, by expectation of the same glory and finall redemption.

In the meantime then wee should walke as Children of the light, or as it is here, as Children of the morning. The Day is given us to work in, and therefore in the morning, as soon as wee have our Day before us, wee should endeavour to walk honestly. Night-works are commonly works of uncleanness, violence, dishonour, and therefore want a cover of darkness to hide them. Theeves use to come in the night, 1 Thes. 5. 2. The eye of the adulterer waiteth for the twilight, saying, no eye shall see mee, and disguiseth himself, Job 24. 15. In the twilight, in the evening, in the black and dark night, he goeth to the house of the strange woman, Proverb. 7. 9. The Oppressour diggeth through houses in the dark. For the morning is to them as the shadow of Death, Job 24. 16, 17. They that are drunken are drunken in the night, 1 Thes. 5. 7. Sins are of the nature of some fullen weeds, which will grow no where but in the side of Wels, and of dark places. But works of Christianity are neither unclean, nor dishonourable; they are beautifull, and royall works, they are exemplary, and therefore publik works, they are themselves light (*let your lights shine before men*) and therefore they ought to be done in the light.

Mark, 10. 15.
Phil. 2. 15.
1 Cor, 14. 20.
1 Pet, 2. 2. 3.

If wee bee Children, wee should express the affections of Children. The innocencie, Humilitie, and Dove-like simplicity of little Children; as the Sons of God blameless, pure, and without rebuke. Children in malice, though men in understanding. The Appetite of little Children, As new born babies desire the sincere milk of the Word that wee may grow thereby. In all impatiency the breast will pacifie a little Infant, in all other delights the breast will entice it and draw it away: even so should the

word,

The birth of a Christian is heavenly.

377

VERSE 3

Word and worship of God work upon us in all our distempers, and in all our deviations; Christ was hungry and faint with fasting; it was about the sixth hour, and hee had sent his Disciples to buy meate, and yet having an occasion to doe his Father service, he forgot his food, and refused to eate. *Ioh. 4. vs. 8. 34. The love of Children; Hee that is begotten, loveth him that did beget him. 1 Iohn. 5. 1. with a Love of thankfulness. Wee love him because Hee loved us; 1 Iohn. 4. 19. I love the Lord, because hee hath heard my voice; and my supplication, Psal. 116. 1. With a love of obedience; faith worketh by love, Gal. 5. 6. Love is the fulfilling of the Law; Rom. 13. 10. If a man love mee, he will keep my Words, Ioh. 14. 23. with a love of reverence, and awful fear. A Son honoureth his Father; Mal. 1. 6. If you call on the Father, &c. Pass the time of your sojourning here in feare, 1 Pet. 1. 17. The faith of Children; For whom should the child rely on for maintenance and supportance but the Father? Take no thought, saying, what shall we eat, or what shall wee drink; or wherewith shall wee bee clothed; For your Heavenly Father knoweth that you have need of all these things; Math. 6. 31. 32. The hope, assurance, and expectation of Children; For as Children depend on their Parents for present supply, so for portions and provisions for the future; Fathers lay up for their Children, and so doth God for his. There is an inheritance reserved for us, 1 Pet. 1. 4. Lastly, the Prayers and requests of Children. Because yet we are Sons, God hath sent forth the Spirit of his Son into your hearts, crying, Abba Father. Gal. 4. 6.*

Note 2. The Birth of a Christian is a divine and heavenly work. God is both Father and Mother of the Dew, by his power and wiidom, a Father; by his providence and indulgence, a Mother, Proganitor, genitrixque, therefore hee is call'd in *Clem Alex. Metripater*, to note that those casualties which are in the second agents divided,

VERSE 3.

are eminently and perfectly in him united, as all things are to be resolved into a first Unity. *Hath the Rain a Father, or who hath begotten the droppes of dew? saith Job. Out of whose womb came the Ice? and the heavy Frost of heaven, who hath gendred it? None but God is the Parent of the Dew. It doth not stay for, nor expect any humane concurrence, or causality. Mich. 5. 7. E/ai. 55. 10. such is the call and conversion of a man to Christ, A Heavenly calling, Heb. 3. 1. The operation of God in us, Col. 2. 12. A birthnot of blood, nor of the will of the flesh nor of the will of man, but of God, John 1. 13. 1 John 3. 9. Paul may plant, and Apollo may water, but it is God that must bless both, nay it is God who by them, as his instruments, doth both: Of his own will begat hee us, Iam. 1. 18. The Ministers are a Savor of Christ, 2 Cor. 2. 15. It is not the garment, but the perfume in it which diffuseth a sweet sent. It is not the Labor of the Minister, but Christ whom he preacheth, that worketh upon the Soul. I laboured more abundantly than they all; yet not I, but the Grace of God which was with mee, 1 Cor. 15. 10.*

It is not good therefore to have the faith of God in respect of persons; the seed of this Spirituall generation cannot otherwise be given us than in earthen vessels, by men of like passions and infirmities with others. Therefore when pure and good seed is here and there sowed, to attribute any thing to persons, is to derogate from God; where gifts are fewer, parts meaner, probabilities less, God may and often doth give an increase above hope, as to *Daniels* Pulse; that the excellency of the Power may bee of him, and not of man. Though it be a lame or a leprous hand which soweth the seed, yet the success is no way altered: good seed depends not in its growth on the hand that sowes it, but on the Earth that covers, and on the Heavens that cherish it, So the Word borroweth not its efficacy from any hu-

mane

The birth of a Christian is heavenly.

379

maine vertue, but from the heart which ponders, and the Spirit which sanctifies it.

When then thou comest unto the Word, come with affections suitable unto it. All earth will not beare all seed; some wheat, and some but pulse; there is first required a *finest*, before there will bee a *fruitfulness*; Christ had many things to teach which his Disciples at the time could not carry away, because the Comforter was not then sent, who was to lead them into all truth; they who by use have their senses exercised, are fit for strong meate. The truth of the Gospel is an Heavenly truth, and therefore it requires an Heavenly disposition of heart to prosper it. It is *wisdom to those, that are perfect*, though to others foolishness and offence. The onely reason why the Word of truth doth not thrive is, because the heart is not fitted nor prepared unto it. The seed of it self is equall unto all grounds, but it prospers onely in the honest and good heart; the rain in it self alike unto all, but of no vertue to the rocks, as to other ground, by reason of their inward hardness and incapacity. The Pharisees had covetous hearts, and they mocked Christ: the Philosophers had proud hearts, and they scorned *Paul*. The Jewes had carnall hearts, and they were offended at the Gospell. The people in the wilderness had unbelieving hearts, and the Word preached did not profit them. But now a Heavenly heart comes with the affections of a Schollar to be taught by God; with the affections of a servant, to bee commanded by God; with the affections of a Son, to bee educated by God; with the affections of a sinner, to be cur'd by God. It considers that it is the *Lord from Heaven, who speaks* in the Ministry of the Word to him who is but dust and ashes; and therefore he puts his hand on his mouth, dares not reply against God, nor wrestle with the evidence of his Holy Spirit, but falleth upon his face, and giveth Glory unto God; beleeves when God promiseth, trembles when God

VERSE 3.

John 6. 12. 13
Heb. 5. 14.

1 Cor. 2. 6.

V E R S E S

God strengtheneth, obeys when God commandeth, learns when God teacheth, bringeth always meekness, and humility of Spirit ready to open unto the Word that it may incorporate.

Lastly, from hence we must learn to look unto God in all his Ordinances, to expect his Arme and Spirit to be therein revealed, to call on, and depend on him for the blessing of it. If a man could when he enters into Gods House but powre out his heart in these two things; A *Promise* and a *Prayer*; Lord I am now entering into thy Presence, to hear thee speak from Heaven unto mee, to receive thy Rain and Spirituall Dew which never returneth in vain, but ripeneth a Harvest either of Corn or Weeds, of Grace or Judgement; My heart is prepared O Lord, my heart is prepared, to learn and to love any of thy Words; Thy law is my Counsellor, I will bee ruled by it; It is my Physician, I will bee patient under it: It is my Schoolemaster, I will bee obedient unto it; But who am I that I should promise any service unto thee? and who is the Minister that hee should doe any good unto mee without thy Grace and Heavenly call? Bee thou therefore pleased to reveale thine own Spirit unto mee, and to work in mee that which thou requir-est of mee; I say, if a man could come with such sweet preparations of heart unto the Word, and could thus open his soul when the Spirituall *Manna* falls down from Heaven, hee should find the truth of that which the Apostle speaketh, *We are not straitned in us*, or in our Ministry, we come unto you with abundance of Grace; but ye are straitned onely in your own bowels, in the hardness, unbelief, incapacity, and negligence of your own hearts, which receiveth that in drops, which falleth down in showres.

Note 3. As it is a Divine, so it is a *secret and undiscerned Birth*. As the wind bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence

it

Deut. 32. 2.

Amos 7. 16.

Esa. 55. 10.

VERSE 3.

it commeth, nor whether it goeth? So, saith our Saviour, *is every one, that is born of God, Ioh. 3. 8.* The voluntary breathings and accesses of the Spirit of God unto the soul, whereby he commeth mightily, and as it were cloatheth a man with power and courage, are of a very secret nature, and notwithstanding the power thereof be so great, yet there is nothing in appearance but a voice; (of all other one of the most empty and vanishing things) As Dew falls in small and insensible drops, and as a Child is born by slow and undiscovered progresses (as the Prophet *David* saith, *c Fearfully and Wonderfully am I made,*) Such is the birth of a Christian unto Christ, by a secret, hidden, and inward call; *Vocatione Altrâ*, as Saint *Austen* calleth it, by a deep and intimate energy of the Spirit of Grace is Christ formed, and the soul organized unto a spirituall being. A man heares a voyce, but it is^d behind him, hee seeth no man; hee feels a blow in that voyce, which others take no notice of, though externally they hear it too. Therefore it is observable that the men which were with *Paul* at his miraculous conversion are in one place said to *hear a voyce. Acts 9. 7,* and in another place, *not to have heard the voyce* of him that spake unto *Paul Acts 22. 9.* They heard *only* a voyce, and so were but astonished; but *Paul* heard it distinctly as the voyce of Christ, and so was converted.

Note 4. As it is a Divine and secret, so it is likewise a *sudden Birth*. In naturall generations the more vast the creature, the more slow the production, an Elephant ten yeers in the womb. In humane actions *magnarum rerum tarda molimina*, great works move like great engines slowly and by leasure to their maturity: but in Spirituall generations, Children are born unto Christ like Dew, which is exhaled, conceived, formed, produced, and all in one night. *Paul* to day a Wolf, to morrow a Sheep; to day a Persecutor, to morrow a Disciple; and not

a Iudg. 14. 6.
Iudg. 6. 34.

b Matth. 10. 20
a Pet. 1. 21.

c Psal. 139. 14.
Iob, 10. 10. 11.

d Eesai. 30. 21.
Acts 9. 8.

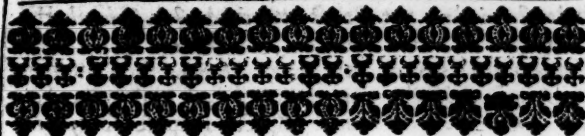
Gloss. Philolog.
Sac. lib. 2. pag.
232.

VERSE 2.

2 Kings 7.1. 2.
Tarnou. Exercit.
Biblic. Edit. 2.
pag. 84.85.

not long after an Apostle of Christ. The noble man of *Samarita* could see no possibility of turning a famine into a plenty within one night: neither can the heart of a man who rightly understands the closeness, and intimate radication of sin and guile in the soul; conceive it possible to remove either in a sudden change; yet such is the birth of men unto Christ, *Before shee travelled shee brought forth: before her pain came, she was delivered of a Man-Child.* The Earth bringeth forth in one day, and a Nation is born at once; It is spoken of Jerusalem the mother of us all, *Isai. 66. 7. 8.*

VERSE 4.



VERSE. 4.

The Lord hath sworne, and will not repent, thou art a Priest for ever after the Order of Melchisedeck.



From the Regall Office of Christ, and the Administration thereof by the Scepter of his Word and Spirit, to the conquering of a willing people unto himself the Prophet now passeth to his Sacerdotal Office; the vigor and merit whereof is by the two former applied unto the Church.

* Therefore we may observe, that though the tribes were interdicted confusion with one another in their marriages, Num. 36. 7. Yet the Regall and Leviticall Tribes might interchange, and mingle bloods; to intimate (as I conceive) that the Messiah, with relation unto whose Lineage that confusion was avoided, was to be both a King and a Priest, Thus we

* Poterant Le-
vita ex Regia
familia ducere,
quippe que eti-
am peculiari
Privilegio hinc
est exēpta Ec-
c. Tarnou Exere,
Biblic. pag. 21.
Edit 2 Com-
municabāt in-
ter se Regia
tribus, ac Sa-
cerdotalis,
propterea quod
Christus Domi-
ni secundum
humanitatem,
Rex futurus

erat, & Sacerdos Theod. in Num Quest. 52. αὶ ὁ νομοθετῶν συνήπνετο μόνον ὡς διήλασε
ἡ βασιλικὴ τῇ ιεροτικῇ, καὶ ἡ ιεροτικὴ τῇ βασιλικῇ, &c. Epiphan. contr. Antidicomarioni-
tai Har. f. 78. νόμος δὲ τοῦ μὴ μιν διαδέσθαι οὐλοῦν ἐξ ἑτέρας φυλῆς. Damasc. de Orthod. fide,
l. 4. c. 15. But notwithstanding these Authorities, upon more deliberate consideration
of this matter, I conceive my selfe to have been herein mistaken; and am rather per-
suaded that Marriages were lawfull between severall Tribes, save onely in the Case
when Daughters did inherit, to avoid confusion of Possessions amongst the Tribes.
Judg. 21. 1. Augustin. Quest. in Judic quest 47, Ioseph. Antiq. lib. 4. cap. 7. Philo Lu-
dæus de Monarchia. lib. 2. Lucas Burgensis in Marth. 1. 16.

finde

VERSE 4.

^a Sacerdos Ecclesia habentis praputium.
Hieron. Tom. 3. lib. quæst. Heb. in Genes. Verisimile est illum esse ex illis Gentibus quæ Palestinam incolabant. Theodor. Quæst. 3. in Genes. Vid. Casaubon. Sueton. August. c. 31. Rex Anius, Rex idem dominum Phœbique Sacerdos. Virgil. Ænead. lib. 3.

finde *Jehoiada*, the Priest married *Jehoshabath* the Daughter of King *Iehoram*, 2 Chron. 22. 11. And *Aaron* of the Tribe of Levi tooke *Elisheba* the Daughter of *Amminadab*, who was of the tribe of *Juda*; *Exod. 6. 23. Numb. 1. 7.* In which respect I suppose *Mary* and *Elizabeth* the Wife of *Zacharie* the Priest, are called Cousins, *Luk. 1. 36.* In the Law indeed these two Offices were distinct. Our Lord, saith the Apostle, sprang out of the Tribe of *Juda*, of which Tribe *Moses* spake nothing concerning Priesthood, *Heb. 7. 14.* And therefore when King *Uzziah* incroached on the Priests Office, hee was smitten with a Leprosie, 2 Chron. 26. 18, 21. But amongst the Gentiles (^a amongst whom *Melchizedek* is thought to have been a Priest,) it ^b was usuall for the same person to have been both King and Priest.

The words containe the doctrine of Christ's Priesthood. The Quality of it, *Eternall*. The Order, not of *Aaron*, but of *Melchizedek*. The foundation of both, Gods immutable decree and counsell; hee cannot repent of it, because he hath confirmed it by an Oath. I shall handle the words in the Order as they lie.

The Lord hath sworne) Here two things are to be enquired: First, how God is said to sweare? Secondly, why he sweares in this particular case of Christ's Priesthood? The former of these the Apostle resolves in one word, *ἐμαρτύρηται ὅρκῳ*, *Heb. 6. 17.* He interposed in or by an oath, namely himselfe, for that is to be supplied out of the thirteenth verse, where it is said that hee sware by himselfe. So elsewhere it is said that he sware by the excellency of *Jacob*, that is, by himselfe, *Amos 8. 7, 6. 8.* By myselfe have I sworne, saith the Lord, that in blessing I will bless thee. *Gen. 22. 16.* The meaning is, that God should denie himselfe, (which hee cannot doe, 2 Tim. 2. 13.) and should cease to bee God, if the word which hee hath sworne should not come to passe. So that usuall forme, *as I live* is to be understood, let me not be esteemed a living God,

God, if my word come not to passe; so elsewhere the Lord interpolet^h his holinesse, *I have sworne by my Holinesse that I will not lie unto David*, Psal. 89. 35. As impossible for him to breake his word as to bee unholy.

For the second question, why God swears in this particular? I answer: First, and principally, to shew ^{τῆς βελῆς} ^{αὐτοῦ ἀμετέστροφον} The immutable and irreversibile certainty of what hee speaks, Heb. 6. 17. *I have sworne by my selfe*, the word is gone out of my mouth, and it shall not returne, &c. Esai. 45. 23. Thus wee finde God confirming the unmoveableness of his covenant by an Oath, Esai. 54. 9, 10. Psal. 89. 34, 35. When the Lord doth onely say a thing (though his word bee as certaine in it selfe as his oath, for it is as impossible for him to lie as to forswear himselfe) yet there is an implicate kinde of reservation for the altering, revoking, or reversing that word by some subsequent declaration. As in the covenant and Priesthood of Aaron, though God made it for a perpetuall ordinance, yet there was after a change of it, for the weaknesse and the unprofitableness thereof. So when the Lord sent *Jonah* to preach Destruction unto *Ninive* within fortie dayes, though the Denunciation came not to passe, yet was it not any false message, because it was made reversibile upon an *implicite condition*, which condition the Lord is pleased sometimes in mercy to conceale, that men may bee the sooner frighted out of their security, upon the apprehension of so approaching a danger. *At what time saith the Lord. I shall speake concerning a Nation, and concerning a Kingdome, to pluck up, and to pull downe, and to destroy: If that Nation against whom I have pronounced turne from their evill, I will repent of the evill that I thought to doe unto them*, Jer. 18. 7-8. But when the Lord swears any absolute Act, or promise of his owne (for the Revocation whereof there can no other ground *de novo* arise, than was extant at the time of making it, and yet was no barre nor hindrance

VERSE 4:

Quod Deus
tantopere com-
mendat, quod
etiam humano
more sub de-
ratione testatur,
summā utique
gravitate tra-
gredi, & custo-
diere debemus,
ut in assevera-
tione divina
gratia perman-
entes, in fructu
quoque eius &
emolumento
proinde perse-
verare possimus
Tertul. de peni-
tent. c. 4.

rance unto it, namely the sin of man) he then by that oath seales and assures the immutability thereof, to those that rely upon it.

Secondly, it is to commend the excellencie and preeminencie of that above other things, which hath this great seale of Heaven, the Oath of God to confirme and establish it. *Inasmuch*, saith the Apostle, *as not without an oath hee was made Priest, by so much was hee made a surety of a better Testament; Heb. 6. 20, 22.* and this is a consequent of the former; for by how much the more abiding, by so much the more glorious is the Ministry of the Gospell. *If that which is done away were glorious, much more that which remaineth is glorious, 2 Cor. 3. 11.* The more solemne and sacred the institution was, the more excellent is the Priesthood. Now this Oath was that Seale of God, by which hee designed and set apart his Son for that great Office, in a more solemne manner of ordination than was to others usuall. *Him hath God the father sealed; Iohn. 6. 27.* It was but *Hee hath said*, unto others, ye are Gods, but it is, *He hath sanctified*, to his Son, *Iohn. 10. 34, 36.*

Thirdly, It is to commend Gods great compassion and good will, for the establishing of the hearts of men in comfort and assurance. He therefore confirmed his promise by an oath, *That by two immutable things wherein it is impossible for God to lie, we might have strong consolation, who have fled for refuge to lay hold on the hope which is set before us. Heb. 6. 17, 18.* an oath even amongst men is the end of all controversie, the determination and composing of all differences; how much more when hee sets his Seale upon his mercy and covenant, should the hearts of men be secure, and lay fast hold thereon without doubt or scruple? Therefore wee finde the Saints in the Scripture make mention of the Oath of God, for establishing their hearts against feares or dangers. *Thou wilt performe the truth to Iacob, and the mercy to Abraham,*
which

VERSE 4.

*Quid est Dei
veri veracisque
fuerit, nisi pro-
missi confirma-
tio, et infideli-
um quodam In-
crepacio? Aug.
de Civis. dei lib.
26. cap. 31.*

which thou hast sworn to our fathers from the dayes of old, *Micah. 7. 10.* Thy bow was made quite naked, according to the oathes of the Tribes, even thy Word, *Hab. 3. 9.* that is, Thou didst make it appeare to thine enemies that thou didst fight for thy People, and remember thy Word or Covenant of mercy which thou didst swear unto *Abraham* the Father of the faithfull, and so oftentimes new ratifie unto his seed, the Tribes which proceeded from him. And this is the ground of all the Churches comfort and stability: for alas, we every day deserve to have God abrogate his Covenant of mercy with us, but he is mindfull of the Oath which he hath sworn, *Dent. 7. 7, 8. 9. 3.* There was wickednesse enough in the world to have drawne down another flood after that of *Noah*: the same reason that caused it, did remaine after it was removed. *Genes. 6. 12, 13. 8. 21.* But Gods Oath bound him to his mercy, *Esa. 54. 9.* The meaning then of this first Clause is this. The Lord to shew the immutability of his Counsell, the unchangeableness of Christs Priesthood, the excellency of it above the Priesthood of *Aaron*, the strong consolation which the Saints may there-hence receive, hath sealed it by an Oath: so that he is a Priest by a decree which cannot be revoked.

It notes unto us the Solemne call of Christ unto the office of Priesthood, as before of *King*, verse 1. He did not usurpe this honour to himselfe as *Nadab* and *Abihu* did, when of their owne heads they offered strange fire unto the Lord, nor inroach upon it as *Uzziah*; but he was ordained and begotten, and called of God thereunto, after the order of *Melchisedeck*, *Heb. 5. 5. 10.* He was sanctified and sent, and had a commandement, and a worke set him to doe, *John 10. 18. 36. 37.* In which respect he was called a *Servant*, or a chosen Officer formed for a speciall employment, *Esa. 42. 1. 49. 5. 53. 11.* *Phil. 2. 7.* Here then is the consent of the whole Trinity unto CHRIST'S Priesthood. First, the Fathers consent in his Act of ordination:

VERSE 4.

* Esai. 53. 8.
10. 11, 12.
Psal. 2. 7, 8.
Phil. 2. 7, 9.
John 17. 2. 4, 5.
Heb. 2. 8, 9.
Heb. 2. 2.

dination: for him hath God the Father sealed, Job 6. 27. Thou art my Sonne, this day have I begotten thee, Heb. 5. 5. 6. Secondly, The Sonnes by voluntary suscepcion and vadamony for mankinde: for he was the Surety of the Covenant, Heb. 8. 22. The Apostle joyneth these two together, Heb. 10. 9. 10. *Loe, I come to doe thy Will O God;* there was Gods Will and Christs submission thereunto, in which regard he is said to *sanctifie himselfe*, Job. 17. 19. There was a Covenant betweene God and Christ, Christ was to undertake an Office of service and obedience for men, to offer himselfe a sacrifice for sinne, to be made of a woman under the Law, &c. * And for this God was to prolong his dayes, to give him a Seed, and a Generation which could not be numbred, a Kingdome which cannot be bounded, a Portion with the great, and a Spoyle with the strong; a Name above every name, to set a Joy and a Glory before him, after he should have finished his worke, &c. Thirdly, here is the *Consent of the Holy Ghost* which did hereunto anoint him, which came along with him, which formed him in the wombe of the Virgin, and descended upon him in his solemne suscepcion of this Office in *Johns Baptisme*, by which Spirit he was consecrated, warranted and enabled unto this great function, Esai. 61. 1. 42. I Matt. 3. 16, 17. Heb. 1. 9.

If then God call Christ unto his Priesthood by a *solemne Oath*, and make him surety of a better Covenant, we ought to take the more speciall notice thereof: for when God swears he must be heard. The more excellent any thing is, the more earnest heed should be given unto it: for how shall we escape, saith the Apostle, if we neglect *τοιοῦτης σωτηρίας*, *so great Salvation*, so sure a Covenant, Heb. 2. 1, 3.

This is the onely rocke on which we may cast anchor in any trouble, doubt, or feare of Spirit. It is not our owne will or strength that holds us up from ruine, but
onely

onely Gods Oath, by which Christ is made a Priest, *Able to save to the uttermost all that come unto God by him.* Saint Paul and his company were in a great tempest, all hope that they should be saved was taken away, *Act. 27. 20.* yet he exhorts them to be of good cheere, because there should not be the losse of any mans life amongst them; and the ground hereof was Gods Promise, which he believed, *verse 24. 25.* The case is the same with us, we are compassed about with infirmities; with enemies too hard, and with sinnes too heavy for us; with feares and doubtings, that we shall lose all againe; how can we in such tempests of Spirit be cheered; but onely by casting anchor upon Gods covenant which is established by an Oath? by learning to hope above hope, *Rom. 4. 18.* to be strong in him when we are weake in our selves? To be faithfull in him when we are fearefull in our selves? To be stedfast in him when we stagger in our selves? In the midst of Satans buffets and our owne corruptions to finde a sufficiency in his Grace, able to answer and to ward off all? *2 Cor. 12. 10.* To catch hold of his Covenant, and to flie to the hope that is set before us, as to the onely refuge and sanctuary of a pursued soule, when we are not able to stand by our selves? *Esai. 56. 6. Heb. 6. 18.* It is a very hard thing when a man hath a distinct view of his filthinesse and guilt, by reason of sinne, not to give over himselfe and his salvation as desperate things. It is nothing but ignorance and insensibility which makes men presume of the pardon of sinne. In this case then we must consider Gods Oath and Covenant with his People. First, not to reject them for their sinnes. *Israel hath not bene forsaken, nor Judah of his God, though their land was filled with sinne against the Holy One of Israel, Jer. 51. 5.* My People are bent unto back-sliding, &c. and yet I will not execute the fiercenesse of mine anger, I will not returne to destroy Ephraim, For I am God, and not Man, &c. *Hos. 11. 7. 9.*

VERSE 4.

Secondly, *not alwayes to suffer them to lie under sinne,* but in due time *to heale their back slidings,* *Hof. 14. 4.* he will not onely remove our transgressions from himselfe, but he will *remove them from us too,* and that so farre, as that it shall be as possible for the East and West to meet together, as for a man and his sin, *Psal. 103. 12.* Though we have made him to serve with our sinnes, and wearied him with our iniquities, yet *He will not remember against us our sinnes past,* *Esaï. 43. 25.* neither will he see against us the sinnes which remaine, *Num. 23. 11.* Those he will *forgive,* and these he will *subdue,* and all this because of his Truth unto Jacob and his mercy unto Abraham, which he swore unto our fathers from the dayes of old, *Micah. 7. 18, 19, 20.* He hath given us ground for both our feete to stand upon, an hold-fast for both our hands to cleave unto: A *Promise,* and an *Oath,* that by two immutable things, we might have strong consolation, *Heb. 6. 18.* So the Apostle saith, that all the promises of God in Christ are *Yea* and *Amen*: *Yea,* to note their Truth; and *Amen,* to note their *Certainty* and *stability,* being confirmed by the *Oath of Christ.* For so that word may be conceived either * as an *Oath,* or at least * as a *very strong and confident affirmation* which is equi-pollent unto an oath, *2 Cor. 1. 20.* except haply we will understand *vai* and *Amw* to be the same thing expressed in severall tongues, as *Abba Pater* in other places, thereby noting not onely the *stability,* but the *universality* of Gods Promises.

Many things there are in this call of Christ unto his Office to confirme this consolation, and upon which the troubled soule may cast Anchor.

First, from the Father he hath receiv'd a *command* and call unto this service, and so as a *Servant* he hath *fidelity*; for God chooseth none but faithfull servants. He was an *Apostle* and *high Priest* sent to preach the Will, and to pacifie the wrath of God, and he was *faithfull to him*

that

* *Quodammodo si dici fas est, juratio ejus est, Amen, Amen, dico vobis, Aug. Tract. 41. in Jo-han.*

* *Confirmationis verbum. Ambrosius in Psal. 40. οἱ σὶ τινὲς λέ-γοι ἁμαρταῖ-α ὅς ἐκων ἔ-χοντες, ἢ ἔ-χοις ὅντες, ἀλλὰ θεοῦ πα-τρὸς τὸς ἀ-κρίτους. Basil Mag. in Psal. 14. v. d. Nicol. Fullerii Miscel- lan, lib. 1. cap. 2.*

that appointed him, as Moses was, Heb. 3. 11. 2. And if he be faithful we may trust him, for he will doe the worke which is given him to do. *Faithful is he that calleth you who also will do it, 1 Thes. 5. 24.*

Secondly, from himselfe there is a *voluntary submission* whereby he gives himselfe for his Church, and layes downe his owne life, Eph. 5. 25. Tit. 2. 14. John 10. 11 for being of himselfe equal with the Father, he could not be by him commanded, ordained, or over-ruled to any service, without a voluntary concurring to the same decree; emptying himselfe, and taking on him the forme of a servant, making himselfe lesse than his Father, and in some sort for a while lower than the Angels, that so he might be commanded. So that besides his fidelity to rest on as a servant, here is his especial mercy as a concurring agent in the decree, whereby he was ordained unto this Office: He is not onely a *Faithful*, but a *merciful high Priest*, to make reconciliation for the sins of men, Heb. 2. 17. But a man may both by his *Fidelity* as a servant, and by his *Mercy*, as having the same tender compassion with him that sent him, be willing to helpe another out of misery, and yet may not be able to effect his owne desires for want of *Power*. And therefore,

Thirdly, by the *Unction* of the holy Spirit, who proceedeth from the Father and himselfe, he is said to be *sanctified by the Father*, Job. 10. 36. and to *sanctify himselfe*, Job. 17. 19. To have received *Power and Authority* from his Father, Mat. 28. 18. John. 5. 27 John 17. 2 and to have *Power* likewise within himselfe, John 10. 18. That spirit, which for the discharge of this Office he brought with him in fulnesse, and unto all purposes of that Service into the world, is a *Spirit of Power*, 2. Tim. 1. 7. Whereby he is enabled perfectly to save all comers, Heb. 7. 25. so that unto his *Fidelity* and *Mercy*, here is added *Ability* likewise.

Fourthly, as he received an Office and a Service, so he

VERSE 4.

John 14. 28
Aug. de. Trinit.
li. 1. cap. 7. 19. 9.

VERSE 4.

received a *Promise* from his Father likewise which did much encourage him in this service. And this promise is twofold. First, the *promise of a great seed*, which by the execution of his Office he should gather unto himselfe, and of a great conquest over all his enemies. God conferred this honour upon him to be the King of a mighty People, whom he should save and sanctifie to himselfe, *They were given unto him, Psal. 2. 8. John. 17. 6.* so that unto his *Fidelity, Mercy, and Power*, here is further added a *Propriety* to the thing which he saves: and who would not use all fidelity in his own businesse, all mercy towards his own seed, all the power he hath to deliver his own House from the fire? and Christ was faithful, as a Sonne over his owne House; whose House are we: *Heb. 3. 6.* Secondly, there was the *promise of a great Glory and Crowne* which the nature he had assumed should in his Person receive after the fulfilling of his Service. After he had beene a little while lower than the Angels, he was to be crowned with *Glory and Honour*, *Heb. 2. 7.* and therefore we may be sure that he hath fulfilled all righteousness, and done for his Church all which he was to doe upon the earth; *Because he is gone, and we see him no more.* For his sufferings were to goe before, and his Glory to follow: *1 Pet. 1. 11.* This is the Apostles argument why we are not in our sinnes, but delivered from them, because CHRIST is risen, *1 Cor. 15. 17.* *Who is he that condemneth? It is Christ that died, yea rather that is risen againe, who is even at the right hand of God, who also maketh intercession for us. Rom. 8. 34.* and it is his argument againe, why we ought to hold fast our profession, and to come boldly to the Throne of Grace for helpe in time of neede, because we have a great high Priest that is passed into the Heavens, *Heb. 4. 14, 15, 16.*

Fifthly, as he had a *Promise* from the Father to encourage him, so he had a *Nature from us* to incline him unto

unto the execution of his Office. He was made of a woman, made like unto us in all things, sin onely excepted, *tempted and afflicted* as we are : and so there are two things which the heart of a believer may rest upon in him, in any discomforts. First, *his Sympathie*, for besides his *Essential mercy* as he is God, there was in him a *mercy which he learned by being like unto us*. In all things it behoved him to be made like unto his brethren, that he might be a merciful and a faithful high Priest, *Heb. 2. 17* Such was his compassion towards the hunger of the multitude, *Mat. 15. 32.* because he himselfe knew what hunger was, *Mat. 4. 2.* and such was his compassion towards the sorrowes of *Mary*, and *Martha*, *John 11. 33, 35.* because he himselfe was acquainted with grief, *Esay 53. 3.* and such was his compassion towards *Peter* in that state of desertion wherein he lay, *Luk. 22. 61* because he himselfe knew what it was to be forsaken, *Mat. 27. 46.* And this is the Apostles assurance that we shall obtaine Mercy and Grace to helpe in time of need; *because he had a feeling of our infirmities*, and was tempted as we are, *Heb. 4. 15, 16.* Secondly, *His consanguinity*, He is not ashamed to call us brethren : He is our Goel, our Kinsman, and therefore our Redeemer : *Heb. 11. Ruth 3. 9 & 4. 4.*

And will not repent] Many things God hath said, which he hath revoked, as the destruction of *Ninive*, the death of *Ezekiah*, and the like; which implying a tacite condition (fit in the particular cases to be conceal'd) upon the varieties of that, God might be said either to preserve, or to repent; *Jer. 18. 7, 8. & 26. 13, 19.* God is ever most unchangeable in all his wayes, counsels and purposes; they stand for ever. Nothing can fall out to make God more wise, more merciful, more provident, more powerful than he was before, and therefore nothing can make him truly to change his Will, or to repent of his former actions or resolutions. There is with

VERSE 4.

^a Humana capaci-
tati aptiora
quam Divina
sublimitati, &c.
Vid. Aug. Tom.
4. ad Simplicia.
li. 2. quest. 2. vid.
de civ. Dei, li. 14
cap. 11 li. 15. ca.
25. Tertul. Con.
Marc. li. 2. ca. 16.
^b ubi legitur
quod peniteat
eum, mutatio re-
rum significa-
tur, immutabili
manente prae-
sentia divina,
Aug. de civ. Dei,
lib. 17. cap. 7 &
lib. 22. cap. 1, 2.
Just. Mar. Qua.
& Resp. ad Or-
thodox. qu. 36.

him no variablenesse nor shadow of changing: Hee is not a Man that he should repent. I the Lord change not, James 1. 17. 1 Sam. 15. 29. Mal. 3. 6. Oaely in mercy unto (a) our weakenesse God condescends unto the manner of humane expressions, retaining still the stedfastnesse of his owne working, which receiveth no variation nor difference from the contingencies of second causes. He speaketh according to our capacity, but he worketh according to his owne Counsel; so that God is then said to repent, when that which he once willed to be, he after by the counsel of the same will, causeth not to be; therein not changing his owne Counsel, but onely willing the change of the things, that the same thing for this period of time shall be, and then shall cease. As when a rope is fixed to either side of a River, by the same without any manner change or alteration in it, I draw the Boat wherein I am; backward or forward: so the same Will and Counsel of God stands constant and unmoved in the severall mutations of those things which are wrought or removed by it.

Now then, when not onely the Counsel of God is immutable in it selfe, but also he hath ordained some Law, Covenant, or Office, which he will have for ever to endure, without either natural expiration, or external abolishment, then is God said not to repent. To apply this to the present businesse; the Apostle speaking of a new Covenant which is established upon this new Priesthood of Christ (for the Priesthoods and the Lawes go both together, the one being changed, there is made of necessity a change of the other; Heb. 7. 12.) maketh the introducing of this new Covenant, which is founded upon the oath of God, to make the preceding covenant old and transitory; In that he saith, a new Covenant, he hath made the first old: Now that which decayeth and waxeth old, is ready to vanish away, Heb. 8. 13. And he saith peremptorily that it was therefore disannul'd, be-
cause

cause of the *weaknesse and unprofitablenesse* thereof : *Heb. 7. 18.* and this he affirmeth even of the moral Law; that Law, the *righteousnesse* whereof was to be fulfilled in us by the Spirit of Christ, (namely in sincerity and in love, which is the bond of perfection, and the fulfilling of the Law) *Rom. 8. 3. 4.* For the full understanding then and applying of the words to the *Priesthood of Christ*, and the *Law of Grace*, and the second covenant thereupon grounded, it will be needful to resolve these two questions. First, whether God hath repented him of the Law, which hath the rule and measure of the Covenant of workes? Secondly, upon what reasons or grounds the immutability of the second Covenant or Law of Grace standeth?

For the first of these, the Psalmist telleth us, that the *Commandments of God are sure, and that they stand fast for ever and ever*, *Psal. 111. 7. 8.* and we may note that the same forme of speech which the Lord useth to shew the stability of the new Covenant; *The mountaines shall depart, and the Hills be removed, but my kindnesse shall not depart from thee, neither shall the Covenant of my peace be removed, saith the Lord that hath mercy on thee*, *Esay 54. 10.* the same kinde of forme doth our Saviour use to expresse the stability of the Law; *It is easier for Heaven and Earth to passe, than for one tittle of the Law to faile*; *Luke 16. 17.* Now the Law hath a two-fold Obligation; the one principal which is to *Obedience*, whereunto is annexed a promise of *righteousnesse* or justification: the other *secondary and conditionall*, which is unto *malediction*; upon supposal of disobedience. For, *curst is every one which continueth not in all things which are written in the Booke of the Law to doe them*, *Gal. 3. 10.* Now if no tittle of the Law must faile, then neither of these two must faile, but be both fulfilled, and then it should seeme that the first Covenant is not removed, notwithstanding the *weaknesse* thereof.

VERSE 4.

*Vid. Grotii de-
fens. fid. Catho.
de satisfactione
Christi, c. 3.*

For resolving hereof we must note, that in point of validity or invalidity, there can but five things be said of the Law: for first, either it must be *obeyed*, and that it is not; for *all have sinned and come short of the Glory of God*, Rom. 3. 32. Or secondly, it must be *executed* upon men, and the curse or penalty thereof inflicted; and that it is not neither, for *there is no condemnation to them that are in Christ*, Rom 8. 1. Or thirdly, it must be *abrogated*, or extinguished; and that it is not neither, for Heaven and Earth may sooner passe away. If there were no Law, there would be no sinne, for sin is the transgression of the Law; and if there were no Law, there would be no judgement; for the world must be judged by the Law. Or fourthly, it must be *moderated* and favourably interpreted by rules of equity, to abate the rigour and severity thereof; and that cannot be neither, for it is inflexible, no jot nor tittle of it must be abated. Or lastly, the Law it selfe remaining, the Obligation thereof notwithstanding, must towards such or such persons be so farre forth *dispensed* withal, as that a *surety* shall be admitted (upon a concurrence of all their wills who are therein interested; God willing to allow, Christ willing to perform, and Man willing to enjoy:) both to do all the duties, and to suffer all the curses of the Law, in the behalfe of that Person, who in rigour should himselfe have done and suffered all. So then, neither the Law, nor any jot or tittle thereof is abrogated, in regard of the *Obligations* therein contained, but they are all reconciled in Christ with the second Covenant. Yet notwithstanding, to the purpose of a *Covenant* or rule of righteousness betwene us and God, so he hath repented of it, and removed that office or relation from it, that righteousness should come to us thereby, by reason of the weaknesse and unprofitablenesse which is in it to that purpose by the sinne of Man: yet thus much the Law hath to doe with justification, that the fulfilling of the whole Law is thereunto ever

ever some way or other presupposed. Onely in the first covenant, we were to do in our *own persons*; in the second, Christ is appointed and allowed to doe it for us. He fulfilled all the Obligations of the Law; the *duties* thereof by *active obedience* in his life, and the *curses* thereof by *passive obedience* in his death. Now then we by faith becoming one with Christ, the grace of God doth number us up in the same masse and summe with him, and so imputeth and accounteth that ours which was done by him. There is no righteousness but doth originally referre and beare proportion to the Law of God; and yet we are not justified by the Law, but by Grace; because it is the favour of God, contrary to the rigour and exaction of the Law, which alloweth the righteousness of the Law *by one fulfilled*, to be unto another *accounted*. A man is denominated righteous, as a wall may be esteemed red or Greene. Now that comes to passe two manner of wayes, either by the colour inhering and belonging unto the wall it selfe, or by the same colour in some diaphanous transparent body; as glasse, which by the beame of the Sunne shining on the wall, doth externally affect the same as if it were its own, and covers that true inherent colour which it hath of it selfe. In like manner by the strict covenant of the Law we ought to be righteous from a righteousness inherent in, and performed by our selves; but in the new Covenant, of grace we are righteous by the righteousness of Christ which shineth upon us, and presenteth us in his colour unto the sight of his Father. Here in both covenants the righteousness from whence the denomination groweth, is the same (namely the satisfying of the demands of the whole Law;) but the manner of our right and propriety thereunto is much varied. In the one we have right unto it *by Law*, because we have done it our selves: In the other we have right unto it onely by *Grace and favour*, because another maas doing of it is bestowed upon us,
and

VERSE 4.

and accounted ours. And this is that gracious Covenant of which the Lord here saith, *I have sworn and will not repent.*

For resolving of the second question, upon what reasons the immutability of the Covenant of Grace standeth, we must note that as things are of several sorts, so accordingly they may be mutable or immutable several wayes. Some things are *absolutely immutable* out of the nature of the thing it selfe; and that is, when the abrogation, or alteration of the thing would unavoidably inferre some prodigious consequences and notorious pravity with it, as certaine dishonour to God, and confusion upon other things. As if we should conceive a man free from worshipping, reverencing, acknowledging, loving or trusting in God; herein the creature would be unsubordinated to the Creator, which would inferre desperate pravity and disorder, and God should be robb'd of his essential honour which he can no more part from, than cease to be God. But now it is repugnant to the nature of an entire *Covenant*, to be in this manner immutable. For in a Covenant there is a mutual stipulation and consent between God and man; and after performance of Mans duty, God maketh promise of bestowing a reward. Now there can be no binding necessity in God to conferre, nor absolute power in Man to challenge any good from God, who doth freely and by no necessity, doe good unto his Creatures. Secondly, some things are meerely *juris positivi*, not of any intrinsecal necessity, resulting out of the condition of their nature; such as are free either to be or not to be of themselves, or when they are free to continue or to cease, not in themselves determined unto any condition of being unvariably belonging unto their nature. And such are *all covenants*. For God might have dealt with Men, as with lapsed Angels, never have entred a-new into covenant with them: he might have reserved unto himselfe a

Power

a power of revocation and calling in his patient, and shutting up his Office of mercy againe. How then comes it that this Covenant is *immutable*, and Christs Priesthood of everlasting and unchangeable vigour to all ages and generations of men? That there shall never be erected in the Church any other forme of Gods worship, or any other instruments of Mans salvation, than those which we now enjoy? The Apostle groundeth it upon *two reasons*, *Heb. 6. 17, 18.* The *Promise* and the *Oath* of God. First, The *Promise* putteth a right in the creature which he had not before, and that Promise determineth the Will of God to the being; and leaveth it not indifferent to the being or not being of the Covenant. For it is the foundation of a just claime which we by faith may make upon the Fidelity, Justice and Power of God, to make it good. *He is faithfull and just to forgive us our finnes, 1 John 1.9.* The *Righteous God shall give unto me a Crowne of Righteousnesse: 2 Tim. 4.8.* Righteousnesse and Justice as well as Mercy is the ground of forgiveness of sinne and salvation, not in relation or respect to *Mercy* in us, but to *Promise* in God. Onely Mercy it was which moved him to Promise, and having promised onely Truth and Fidelity and Righteousnesse bindeth him to performe. As impossible it is for God to breake any promise, and to lie unto *David*, as it is to be an unholy God, or to deny himselfe; *Psal. 89. 35. 2 Tim. 2. 13. 1 Thes. 5. 24.* Secondly, the *Oath* of God, for that pawnes his owne Being, Life, Power, Truth, Holinesse, to make good that which he hath so ratified; and upon these two doth the immutability of the second Covenant, and of Christs Priesthood depend.

Here then we see upon what ground all our comfort and assurance subsisteth; not upon any strength, power, liberty, or inherent grace already received, which we of our selves are every day apt to waste and be cheated of by Satan and the World, but upon Gods unchangeable

V E R S E 4 .

able mercy and covenant. This was all *David's* salvation and desire, all that his heart rested upon, that though his house were not so with God, that is, did faile much of that beauty and purity which therein God required, and therefore did deserve to be cast off, yet God had made with him an everlasting Covenant ordered in all things and sure, 2 Sam. 23.5. When the conscience is afflicted with the sence of sinne, with the feare of its owne slipperinesse and unstedfastnesse in Gods Covenant, this is all it hath to support it; *That God is true*, Galat. 3.19. That *Christ is the same yesterday, and to day, and for ever*, Heb. 13.8. that he is where he ever was, ready to meet those that returne, *Esai. 64.5. Luke. 15.20.* If I should doe to men, as I have done to God, they would despise, and forsake me, and revenge themselves on me, I should never receive grace nor favour againe. But *God is not as man*, *Hos. 11.9.* the whole cause of his compassion is in and from himselfe, and therefore he doth not take the advantage of our failings and exasperations, to alter the course of his dealing towards us, *Psalms. 103.8—14.* Though we faile every day, yet *his compassions faile not*, and therefore from his immutable mercy it is that we are not consumed, *Lam. 3.22. Mal. 3.6.* His blessing of an adopted people is an irreversibile thing, because he is God and not man, and therefore cannot repent, nor call in the promise which he hath made, for which purpose he doth not behold iniquity in *Jacob*, nor perverseness in *Israel*, *Numb. 23.19, 20, 21.* If the Sunne should be alwayes immoveably fixed in one place, as it was a little while in *Joshua's* time at the destruction of the Kings, *Job. 10.12, 13.* though I might shut out the light of the Sunne from me, yet as soone as I remove the curtain, the Sunne is still where it was, ready to be found, and to shine upon me. The case were lamentable with us, if so often as man provokes Gods Justice, he should presently revoke his mercy; If the issue of our salvation should depend

depend upon the frailty and mutability of our owne nature, and our life should be in our owne keeping. If the pure Angels of Heaven fell from their created condition, to be most black and hideous adversaries of the God that made them; if *Adam* stood not firme with all that stocke of strength and integrity of will which he had in Paradise: how can I who have so many lusts within, so many enemies without, such armies of feares and temptations round about me, be able to resist, and stand? Grace inherent is as mutable in me, as it was in *Adam*; Satan as malicious and impetuous against me, as against *Adam*; Propensions to sine and falling away, strong in me, which were none in *Adam*; snares as many; weaknesses more; enemies as many; temptations more: from the grace which is deposited in mine owne keeping, I cannot but depart dayly, if the Lord should leave me in the hand of mine owne Counsell. Even as water, though it could be made as hot as fire, yet being left unto it selfe, will quickly reduce and worke it selfe to its owne originall coldnesse againe. We have grace abiding in our hearts, as we have light in our houses, alwayes by emanation, effusion and supportance from the Sun of righteousness which shines upon us. Therefore this is all the comfort which a man hath remaining, that though I am wanting to my selfe, and doe often turne from God, yet he is not wanting to me, nor returnes from me, *for the gifts and calling of God are without repentance, Rom. 11. 29.* The heart of the best man is like the wheelles in *Ezekiels* vision, *Ezekiel 1. 16.* As mutable, and moveable severall wayes as wheelles, as perplexed, hindered, and distracted in it selfe, as crosse wheelles in one another, grace swaying one way, and flesh another; who can expect stability in such a thing? Surely of it selfe it hath none, but the constancy and uniformity of motion in the wheelles was this, that they were joyned to the living creatures, who in their motion returned not when they went.

VERSE 4.

went, *verse 17. 21.* such is the stability of the faithfull in the Covenant, they have it not from themselves, for they are all like wheelles, but from him unto whom by the same Spirit of Life they are united, who cannot repent, nor returne from the Covenant of mercy which he hath made.

Thou art a Priest for ever after the Order of Melchisedeck.] We now come to speake of the Priesthood of Christ it selfe, which is thus sealed and made immutable by the Oath of God. *Every high Priest,* saith the Apostle, *is ordained for men in things pertaining to God, that he may offer both gifts and sacrifices for sinnes,* Heb. 5. 1. These sacrifices are of two sorts, some *Eucharisticall*, as testifications of homage, subjection, duty and service, as the dedication of the first fruits, the offerings of *Abel*, the meate and drinke offerings, &c. Some *Illassicall* or *expiatory*, for the washing away of sinnes, for making compenlation to the Justice of God, which had beene in sinne violated, and to propitiate him againe. So that in this regard a Priest was to be a *middle Person*, by God appointed to stand, and to Minister betweene him and men in their behalfe, to be impartiall and faithfull towards the Justice and Truth of God, and not to be over-ruled by his love to men to injure him; and to be compassionate and mercifull towards the errors of men, and not to be over-ruled by his zeale to Gods Justice, to give over the care or service of them. And such an High Priest was Christ, zealous of his Fathers Righteousnesse and Glory, for he was *set forth to declare the Righteousnesse of God,* Rom. 3. 25. and he did glorifie him on earth by finishing the things which he had given him to doe, *Joh. 17. 4.* Compassionate towards the errours and miseries of his Church, for he was appointed to expiate, and to remove them out of the way, *Col. 2. 14.*

Touching this Priesthood, we will thus proceed : First, to enquire into the *Necessity* we have of such a Priest,

Priest. Secondly, what kinde of *Qualifications* are requisite in him, who must be unto us such a Priest. Thirdly, wherein the *Acts* or *Offices* of such a Priesthood doe principally consist. Fourthly, what is the *Verine*, fruits, ends, events of such a Priesthood. Fifthly, what are the *Duties* which the execution of that Office doth enforce upon us, or what likes we should make of it. In these five particulars, I conceive, will the substance of most things which pertain unto the Priesthood of Christ be absolved.

For the first of these, we must premise this general rule, There can be no necessity of a Priest (in that sense which is most proper, and here intended) but between a *guilty creature* and a *righteous God*; for if man were innocent in his relations towards God, he would stand in no need of an *Expiation*; and if God were unrighteous in the passages of mans sinne, there would not be due unto him any just debt of *satisfaction*. This being premised, I shall through many stepps and gradations bring you to this necessity of Christs Priesthood which we inquire into.

First, every creature is unavoidably subject to the Creator, for he made all things for himselfe, and all is to returne that Glory to him for which he made them. *Pro. 16. 4. Rom. 9. 21.* And this subjection of the creature to the Creator, doth suppose a debt of service to the Will of the Creator. Impossible it is, and utterly repugnant to the quality of a creature, not to be subject to some Law, and indebted in some obedience or other to him that made it. *Omne esse est propter operari*; it is a certaine rule in creatures, that God giveth every creature a being to this end, that it might put forth that being in some such operations as he hath fitted it for, and prescribed it to observe. The most excellent of all creatures, that excel in strength, are *Ministers to do his pleasure*, and to heare his voice, *Psa. 103. 20, 21.* and all the rest have their fe-

VERSE 4.

veral lawes, and rules of working by his wisdom set them, in the which they wait upon him, and according unto which they move like *Ezekiels* wheeles, by the conduct of an invisible Spirit, and by the command of a voice that is above them, as if they understood the Law of their Creator, and knew the Precepts which they doe obey, *Ezek. 1. 25, 26. Psal. 104. 19.* No creature is for its selfe onely, or its owne end, for that which hath not its being of it selfe, cannot be an end unto it selfe, in as much as the end of every thing which is made, is antecedent to the being of it, in the minde and intention of him that made it. The end of things is, as a marke, fixed and unmoveable in the purpose of the supreme cause, the creatures as the arrow, ordered by a most wise, and efficacious providence, some through natural and necessary, others voluntary and contingent motions unto one and the same general end, the glory and service of the Creator.

Secondly, no creature is in its being, or in any those operations and services, which to God it owes, intrinsically, and of its selfe, immutable. It is Gods owne peculiar honour to be without variablenesse or shadow of changing *Jam. 1. 17. Mal. 3. 6.* There was a time when the Sunne stood still, and moved backward, and was filled with darknesse, as with an internal cloud; when the Lions had forgotten to devour, and the fire to consume, and the Whales to concoct. God can (as he will) alter the courses of nature, let goe the reines, and dispence with the rules which himselfe had secretly imposed upon the creatures to observe; which shewes, that they are not in themselves immutable. That constancy which in their motions they observe, is from the regular government of that most wise providence, which carries them to their end *without any turning*, *Ezek. 1. 17.* but when his Glory requires, and his Will commands it, the mountaines tremble, the sea cleaves asunder, the rivers runne

runne backe, the earth opens, the Lawes of nature stand still for a while without any execution, as if they were suspended or repeal'd by him that made them : and therefore in that place things are said to *move by a voice* which is above them, namely, by the command of the supreme cause, *Ezek. 1. 14. 25.*

Thirdly, man being in his nature, and formal constitution a *reasonable creature*, was appointed by God to serve him after a *reasonable manner*, out of judgement, discretion, and election, to make choice of his way above all others, as being most excellent, and beautiful in it selfe, and most convenient and advantageous unto man; therefore our service is called a *reasonable service*, *Rom. 12. 1.* and *David* is said to have *chosen the way of truth*, and the precepts of the Lord, *Psal. 119. 30.* and *Moses* to have *chosen the afflictions* of Gods people, and the reproaches of Christ, before the pleasures of sinne, or the treasures of *Egypt*, *Heb. 11. 25, 26.* And hence it is that Holinesse in the phrase of Scripture is called *judgement*, he shall *convince the world of judgement*, *John 16. 11.* and *he shall bring forth judgement unto victory*, *Matth. 12. 20.* Noting, that the Spirit of Holinesse ruleth and worketh in the children of obedience by a way of *reason* and *conviction*; therefore he is called a *Spirit of judgement*, *Esay 4. 4.* And for this cause God did not set any over ruling Law, or determinating vertue over the operations of man; as of other creatures, that so he might truly worke out of the conduct of judgement, and election of will.

Fourthly, there is no deviation from a reasonable service, or true active obedience, (properly so called) for the obedience of brutes and inanimate creatures (is rather passive than active) which hath not some intrinsecal pravity in it, and by consequence some fundamental demerit, or obligation unto punishment : for Guilt is the proper passion of sinne, resultant out of it, and therefore inseparable from it. It cannot be that a creature

VERSE 4.

should of it selfe, and out of the corruption of its owne reason and judgement, choose to relinquish the service of him to whom it is naturally and unavoidable subject, and by that meanes become altogether unprofitable, abominable, and unfit for the Masters use, and for those Holy ends, to which it was originally ordered; but it must without incur the displeasure, and thereupon provoke the revenge of that righteous Creator, who out of great reasons had put it under such a service.

Fifthly, By all this which hath hitherto been spoken, it appears, that God is not unjust, but most Holy and Righteous: First, in making a Law for man to observe, when he forbade the eating of the fruit of the tree of knowledge of good and evil; to shew that man had nothing by personal, immediate, and underived right, but all by donation and indulgence. Any Law God might justly make, the obedience whereof he gave the creature an original power to performe, by reason of the natural and necessary subjection of the creature unto him. Secondly, in annexing a curse and penalty to the violation of that Law, which for the declaration of his glorious Justice he might most righteously doe, because of the inevitable demerit, or liableness unto censure from the disobedience of that Law refusing. Thirdly, in making man in such a mutable condition, as in the which he might stand or fall by his own election, because he would be obeyed by judgement and free choice, *not by fatal necessity, or absolute determination.

Sixthly, here then comes in the fall of man, being a wilful or chosen transgression of a Law, under the precepts whereof he was most justly created; and unto the malediction whereof he was as necessarily and righteously subject, if he transgressed; for as by being Gods creature, he was subject to his will, so by being his prisoner, he was as justly subject unto his wrath, and that so much the more, by how much the precept was more just, the obedience

* Basil. Tom. 1.
Homil. Quod
Deus non est Au-
tor mali. Just.
Mart. Apol. 1.
Τὸ αὐτεξέστι-
ον—ἢ τὸ πρᾶξ-
ασθῆναι Θεῷ
οὐλον.
Vid. Tertul. ad-
vers. Marc. l. 2.
c. 6. 7. 9.
Prov. 1. 19
Eccles. 7. 29
Esay 66. 3. 4.

obedience more easie, the transgression more unreasonable, and the punishment more certain.

Now by this fall of man there came great mischief into the World, and intolerable injury was done by the Creature to him that made him. First, his dominion and authority in his Holy command was violated. Secondly, his Justice, Truth, and Power, in his most Righteous threatnings, were despised. Thirdly, his most Pure and Perfect image, wherein man was created in righteousness and true holiness, was utterly defaced. Fourthly, his Glory, which by an active service the creature should have brought unto him, was lost and dispoyled. So that now things will not returne to their primitive order and perfection againe, till these two things be first effected: First, a *Satisfaction* of Gods Justice: And secondly, a *Reparation* of mans nature; which two must needs be effected by such a middle and common person, as hath both zeale towards God, that he may be satisfied, and compassion toward man, that he may be repaired; such a person, as having mans guilt and punishment on him translated, may satisfie the Justice of God; and as having a fulnesse of Gods Spirit and Holiness in him, may sanctifie and repaire the nature of man. And this person is the Priest here spoken of by *David*.

Here the Learned frame a kind of conflict in Gods Holy Attributes, and by a liberty which the Holy Ghost from the language of Holy Scripture alloweth them, they speake of God after the manner of men, as if he were reduced unto some straits and difficulties by the crosse demands of his severall Attributes. Justice called upon him for the condemnation of a sinfull, and therefore worthily accursed creature, which demand was seconded by his Truth, to make good that threatening, *In the day that thou eatest thereof, thou shalt die the death.* Mercy on the other side pleaded for favour and compassion towards man, wofully seduced and overthrowne by Satan; and

VERSE 4.

Peace for reconcilment, and pacification betweene an offended Judge, and an undone Creature. Hereupon the infinite Wisdome and Counsell of the blessed Trinity found out a way, which the Angels of Heaven gaze on with admiration and astonishment, how to reconcile these different pleas of his Attributes together. A Priest then is resolved upon, one of the same blessed Trinity, who by his Fathers ordination, his owne voluntary suscepcion, and the Holy Spirits sanctification, should be fitted for the businesse. He was to be both a *Surety*, and a *Head* over sinfull men, *to suffer* their punishments, and *to sanctifie* their natures, in the relation of a Surety to pay mans debt unto God; and in the relation of an Head, to restore Gods Image unto man: and thus in him *Mercy and Truth have met together, Righteousnesse and Peace have kissed each other, Psal. 85. 10.*

So then the necessity which Man fallen hath of this Priest here spoken of, is grounded upon the sweet Harmony, and mutuall kisses of Gods Mercy, Truth, Righteousnesse and Peace; which will more distinctly appeare by considering three things: First, God did purpose not utterly to destroy his Creature, and that principally for these two reasons: as we may observe out of the Scriptures: First, his owne *free and everlasting Love*, and that infinite delight which he hath in Mercy, which disposeth him abundantly to pardon, and to exercise loving kindnesse in the earth, *Mic. 7. 18. Exod. 14. 6, 7. Psalm. 103. 8. Esai. 55. 7. Jer. 9. 24.* Secondly, his delight to be actively glorified by his creatures voluntary service and subjection: *Herein is my Father glorified, that you beare much fruit, John 15. 8. I have no pleasure in the death of the wicked, but that he turne from his way and live, Ezekiel 33. 11.* He delighteth most in bloody conquests, when by his patience, goodnesse, and forbearance he subdueth the hearts, affections, and consciences of men unto himselfe, so leading them unto repentance, and bringing

bringing downe their thoughts unto the Obedience of Christ: he loveth to see things in their primitive rectitude and beauty, and therefore esteemeth himselfe more glorified in the *services*, than in the *sufferings* of men. He loveth to have a Church and Generation of men, which shall serve him in the midst of all his enemies. *The Lord loveth the gates of Sion, more than all the dwellings of Jacob;* Psalme 87. 2. namely, because hee was there more solemnely worshipped and served. And therefore he resolved not to destroy all men, lest there should be no *Religion* upon the earth. When the Angels fell, they fell not all, many were still left to glorifie him actively in their service of him; but when *Adam* fell, all mankinde fell in him, so that there was no tree of this Paradise left to bring forth any fruit unto God; (and this is most certaine, God had rather have his trees for fruit, than for fuell,) and for this reason he was pleased to restore Mankinde againe. These are the causes why the Lord would not utterly destroy Man, but these alone shew not the necessity of a Priest to come between God and Man.

Secondly, God did purpose not to suffer sinne to passe utterly unrevenge, and that for these reasons: First, because of his great *Hatred* thereof. Hee is of purer eyes than to behold evil, he cannot looke on iniquity, *Hab.* 1. 13. it provoketh a nauseousnesse and abhorrency in him, *Psal.* 5. 6. *Zech.* 8. 17. *Revel.* 3. 16. *Amos* 5. 21, 22. *Eesai.* 1. 13, 14. Secondly, because of his *Truth*, and the Law which he had established against sinne, which he will in no wise abolish, *one jot or tittle shall in no wise passe from the Law till all be fulfilled,* *Matth.* 5. 18. For it is altogether undecent, especially to the Wildome and Righteousnesse of God, that that which provoketh the execution, should procure the abrogation of his Law; that that should supplant and undermine the Law, for the alone preventing whereof, the Law was before esta-

ἵνα μὴ διαφ-
ραῖν τὸ ἀπ᾽
κεντροῦ τοῦ
Εἰλιαν. de Zalem.
Vi. Gros de sa-
tisfactione Chri-
sti, c. 5.

VERSE 4.

blished. Thirdly, because of his *terror* and fearefull Majesty, for God will have men alwayes to tremble before him, and by his terror to be perswaded from sinning, 2 Cor. 5.10.11. God will for this cause have men alwayes to feare before him, because he reserveth to himselfe entire the punishment of sinne; *Feare him who is able to destroy both body and soule in hell*, I say unto you, *feare him*; saith our Saviour, *Matth. 10.28. Luke. 12.4.* for it is a fearefull thing to fall into the hands of the living God; and therefore we ought to serve him *with reverence and godly feare, because he is a consuming fire*, *Heb. 10.30, 12.28.29.*

Thirdly, adde unto all this the everlasting *Impotency* which is in man, either to satisfie God, or to repaire himselfe. Gods Justice is *Infinite* which is wronged, and his Glory infinite, of which man had attempted to spoyle and rob him; and man is both *finite* in himselfe, and very *impotent* by reason of sinne (for to be a sinner, and without strength, are termes equivalent in the Apostle, *Rom. 5.6.8*) Now then betweene *finite* and *infinite* there can be no proportion, and therefore from the one to the other there can be no satisfaction. Man is utterly unable to doe any of Gods Will, because he is altogether carnall, *Rom. 8.7. 1 Cor. 2.14.* and he is utterly unable either to suffer or to breake thorow the wrath of God, because he hath not strength enough to endure it, nor obedience to submit unto it. Now then joyne all these things together, and we shall see the absolute necessity we had of a Priest. God *will not execute the severity of his Law*, for thereby the creature should everlastingly lose the fruition of him, and he should likewise lose the service and voluntary subjection of his creature. And yet *he will not abolish his Law* neither, least thereby his Justice should be the more securely abused, his hatred against sinne the lesse declared, his Truth in all his threatnings questioned, and his dreadfull Majesty by men neglected, as the wooodden King

The Priesthood of Christ.

411

VERSE 4.

King by the Frogs in the Fable, he will not punish those persons whom he loves, because he is pittifull to them : he will not passe over the sinnes which he hates , because he is jealous towards himselfe. Man and sinne are as inseparably joyned together since the fall, as fire and heat ; yet God will have mercy on the man, and he will take vengeance on the sinne. Some course then or other must there be found out to translate this mans sinnes on anothers person, who may be able to beare them ; and to interest this mans person in anothers righteousness, which may be able to cover him. Some way must be found out ; that things may be all one in regard of man , as if the Law had been utterly abrogated, and that they may be all one in regard of God too, as if the creature had beene utterly condemned. And all this is done in our High Priest. On him was executed the curse of the Law, by Him was fulfilled the righteousness of the Law, for Him was remitted the sinne of Man, and through Him were all things made new againe. The World was in Christ as in its surety, making satisfaction to the Justice of God ; and God was in Christ as in his Ambassadour, reconciling the World unto himselfe againe. By all which we see the necessity which man lapsed had of a Priest to restore him.

Hence then we may learne, first, how much we ought to hate sinne, which armes the Law, Justice, and Power of God against us. As hatefull as it is unto God, so hatefull it is in it selfe, for he judgeth uprightly, he seeth things just as they are, without passion, prejudice, or partiality : and as hatefull as it is in it selfe, so hatefull should it be unto us, as the onely ground of our misery, of the creatures vanity, and of Gods dishonour. We see it is so hatefull unto God, that he will most certainly be avenged of it. If he spare me, yet he will not spare my sin, though his owne beloved Sonne must be punished for it: O then why should that be light to me, which was as
heavie

VERSE 4.

heavie as a millstone to the soule of Christ? Why should that be my pleasure, which was his Passion? Why should that be in a Throne with me, which was upon a Crosse with him? Why should I allow that to be really in me, which the Lord so severely punished, when the guilt thereof was but imputed to his Sonne? Many sins there are, which others in their practice, as well as Papists in their doctrine and profession, esteeme for light and veniall sinnes. And veniall indeed they are, *per exoratorum Patri Christum*, as *Tertullian* states the question, by Christ, who is a prevailing Advocate with the Father. But however let not us dare esteeme that a light thing for which Christ died. And woe had it beene for men, if Christ had not in his Body on the Tree, carried as well the guilt of our idle words, our vaine thoughts, our loose and impertinent actions, as of our oaths, execrations, and blasphemies. If great sinnes were as the speare and nailes, certainly small sinnes were the thornes which pierced his head. And therefore we should learne with *David* to hate every evill way, because God hates it, and suffers it not to passe unpunished, to revenge the quarrell of Christ against those lusts of ours, which nailed him to his Crosse, and to crucifie them for him againe; for, for that end was Christ crucified, that our old man might be crucified with him, that the body of sinne might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sinne, *Rom. 6.6.*

Again, we see by this necessity of a Priest, how deeply we stand engaged to our mercifull God, who hath vouchsafed to help us in our greatest necessity. How we ought to love him, who hath first of all loved us. How we ought in our bodies and in our spirits to glorifie him, who hath so dearly bought us. How we should like voluntaries fight for him who overcame for us. How thankfull we should be to him, who was so compassionate unto us. How we should admire and
adore

The Priesthood of Christ.

413

VERSE 4.

adore the unsearchable riches of his wisdom and goodness, who when we were desperately and incurably gone, had found out a way of escape and deliverance for us. God stood not in need of us, or any service of ours, he could have glorified himselfe in our just destruction. Who then can enough expresse either the mercy of God, or the duty of man, when he considers that God should call together all the depths of his owne wisdom and counsell, to save a company of desperate fugitives, who had joyned in combinations with his greatest enemies to resist and dishonour him? It would have posed all the wisdom of the World, (though misery be commonly very witty to shape and fashion it selfe Images of deliverance) to have found out a way to Heaven betweene the wrath of God, and the sinne of man. It would have posed all the Heavenly intelligences, and the united consultations of the blessed Angels, to have reconciled Gods mercy in the salvation of man, and his Justice in the condemnation of sinne, to have powred out Hell upon the sinne, and yet to have bestowed Heaven upon the sinner. If God should have instructed us thus farre, you are miserable creatures, but I am a mercifull God; the demands of my Justice I must not deny, neither will I deny the entreaties of my mercy: finde me out a Sacrifice answerable to my Justice, and it shall be accepted for you all: O where could man have found out a creature of capacity enough to hold, or of strength enough to beare the sinnes of the World, or the wrath of God? Where could he have found out in Heaven or Earth, amongst men or Angels, a Priest that durst accompany such a Sacrifice into the presence of so consuming a fire? Or where could he have found out an Altar whereon to offer, and whereby to sanctifie so great a Sacrifice? No, no, the misery of man was too deep, and inextricable for all the created counsell in the World to invent a deliverance. Now then if God himselfe did Rudy to save me,

VERSE, 4.

me, how great reason is there that I should study *to serve* him? How ought all my wisdom, and counsell, and thoughts, and desires, be directed to this one resolution, to live acceptably and thankfully unto him; who when he might have produced Glory to himselfe out of my confusion, chose rather to humble, and as it were for a while to unglorifie himselfe for my salvation? Certainly that man did never rightly understand the horreur of sinne, the infinite hatred of God against it, the heaviness of his wrath, the malediction of the Law, the myserie and vast dimensions of Gods love in Christ, the pretiousnesse of his Sacrifice, the end, purpose, or merit of his Death, any of those unsearchable riches of God manifested in the flesh; who will not crucifie a vanity, a lust, a pleasure, an earthly member unto him againe; who findes more content and satisfaction in his owne wayes of sinne and death, more wisdom in the temptations and deceits of Satan and his owne fleshly minde, than in those deepe mysteries of grace, and contrivances of mercy, which the Angels desire to prie into.

Therefore in the last place we should labour to feele this necessity we have of such a Priest. This is the onely reason why so few make use of so pretious a Fountaine, because they trust in their owne muddy and broken Cisternes at home, and are never sensibly and thoroughly touched with the fence of their owne wants; for it is not the saying and confessing, *ore tennu*, that I have nothing, nor the knowing in speculation onely that I have nothing, but the feeling and smarting by reason of my want, which will drive me to seeke for reliefe abroad. If a man did seriously consider and lay together such thoughts as these; I am very busie for the affaires and passages of this present life, which will quickly vanish and passe away like a Weavers shuttle, or a tale that is told. I have another and an abiding life, to live after this is over. All that toyle for here, is but for the back, the belly, the bagge, and

and the posterity. And am I not nearer to my selfe, than I am to my money? Am I not nearer to my soule, than I am to my carcase, or to my seed? Must I not have a being in that, when neither I nor my posterity have either backe to be cloathed, or belly to be fed, or name to be supported? O why am I not as sadly imployed, why spend I not some (at least as serious and inquisitive) thoughts about this, as about the other? Doe I not know that I must one day stand before him who is a consuming fire; that I must one day be weighed in the balance, and woe be unto me if I am found too light? Appaere before him I dare not of my selfe alone without a *Priest* to mediate for me, to cover and protect me from his fury, and to reconcile me unto him againe. My *person* wants a *Priest*, it is clogg'd with infinite *Guilt*, which without him cannot be covered. My *nature* wants a *Priest*, it is over spread with a deep and vniversal *corruption*, which without him cannot be cured. My *sinnes* want a *Priest*, they are in number and in quality above measure sinful, which without him cannot be pardoned. My *services* want a *Priest*, they are blemished and poisoned with many failings and corruptions, without him they cannot be accepted: I say, if men did seriously lay together such thoughts as these, it could not be that rational and sad men, men of deepe thoughts in other matters, who love to bould out things to the bray, and to be very sollicitous for evidence and certainty in them, should suffer such a businesse as this, their interest in that *Priest*, who must alone cloath their persons with his righteousness, and cleanse their nature with his Spirit, and wash away their sins with his blood, and sanctifie their prayers and almes, and all religious devotions with his incense and intercession, or else all of them must passe through the trial of such a fire as will consume them all; to be stubber'd over with loose and slender thoughts, and to be rested in, and resolved upon rather

VERSE 4.

rather by the lying presumptions of a deceitful heart, than by the evidences and testimonies of Gods Holy Spirit. Consider what I say, and the Lord give you understanding in all things.

The second thing proposed to be considered in the Priesthood of Christ, was the *qualification* of that person, who was to be a fit High-Priest for us. *Legal sacrifices* would not serve the turne to purge away sinne, because of their basenesse They were not expiations of sin, *Heb. 9. 9, 12.* but were onely remembrances and commemorations of sinne, *Heb. 10. 3.* necessary it was that heavenly things themselves shoud be purified with better Sacrifices, *Heb. 9. 23.* for they of themselves without that *typical relation* which they had unto Christ, *Gal. 3. 23.* and that *Instrumental vertue*, which in that relation they had from him, *Heb. 9. 13.* were utterly *weake and unprofitable*, *Heb. 7. 18.* as the shadow hath neither being in it selfe, nor can give refreshment unto another, but dependently on the body to which it belongeth. And this appeareth, first, by their *reiteration*: where the conscience is once purg'd (and there is remission of sin) there is no more offering, *Heb. 10. 2. 18.* for the repeating of the Sacrifice shews, that the person for whose sake it is repeated, is in *statu quo prius*, in the same condition now as he was in at the time of the former oblation. Secondly, by their *Variety*: there were both *Gifts and Sacrifices* for sins, *Heb. 5. 1. & 8. 3.* buls, and goats, and calves, and lambes, *Heb. 9. 9, 12, 13.* and that shewes that no one thing was fit to typifie the full expiation wrought by Christ, whereas he offered but *One Sacrifice*, and by that perfected for ever them that are sanctified, *Heb. 10. 12. 14.* And if *legal sacrifices* would not serve the turne, then neither would *legal Priests* be fit for so great a worke; for all the good which the Priest doth, is in the vertue of the sacrifice which he brings: and this likewise the Apostle proves by many arguments: First, because of their *sinfulness*, for they themselves wanted an expiation,

expiation, and therefore could not be mediators for the finnes of others, *Heb. 5. 3. & 7. 27.* Secondly, because of the carnalnesse of their institution. They were made after the Law of a carnal commandement, that is, of a temporary, perishable, and meere external ordinance, *Heb. 7. 16.* which prescribed onely the examples and shadows of Heavenly things. Thirdly, because of their mortality, they were not suffered to continue by reason of death; whereas our Priest must live to make intercession. Fourthly, because of their Ministry, and the revolution of their services, which never came to a period or perfection, in which the Priest might give over, and Sit down. They stood daily *Ministring*, and oftentimes offering (their service did daily return unto them again) whereas Christ, after he had offered One Sacrifice for sin for ever, sate down on the right hand of God, *Hib. 10. 11, 12.*

VERSE 4.

To shew you then the qualifications of this Priest. A Priest in general is ordained for men in things pertaining to God, to offer Sacrifice for the obtaining of righteounesse and remission of sins.

First then, Christ being a Priest, must of necessity be a Mediator and a Surety between parties, that he might have one unto whom, and others for whom, and in whose behalfe to offer a Sacrifice. Every Priest must be a Mediator to stand between God and the people, and to intercept and beare the iniquity even of their holy things. And unto this mediation there must concur the consent of the parties between whom it is negotiated; for a Mediator is not a Mediator of one. Now God giveth his consent by laying on him our iniquities, and making his soule an offering for sin, and thereby declaring himselfe to be One with us. And man giveth his consent, when by faith he receiveth Christ, and so becometh not only the friend, but the Son of God, *John 1. 12.*

Exod. 28. 38

Esay 53. 6. 10
Gal. 3. 20

Secondly, but every Mediator is not presently a Priest, for there is a mediation onely by way of intreaty, prayer, and

VERSE 4.

and request, wherein men doe obtaine, but not deserve or purchase remission for others; such mediators were *Joab*, and the Widow of *Takeab*, in the behalfe of *Abalom*, 2 Sam. 14. and there are mediators by way of satisfaction, as *Sureties* are between the Creditor and the Debtor; and such a Mediator was Christ; not onely a Mediator, but also a Surety of a better covenant, Heb. 8. 6. Heb. 7. 22 he was not to procure remission of our sins by way of favour and request, but he was sent forth to declare the Righteousnesse of God, Rom. 3. 25. and such a Mediator between God and us must needs be a Priest too; for the debt which we owed unto God was blood. Without shedding of blood there is no remission, Heb. 9. 22.

Thirdly, being such a Priest, he must have a Sacrifice answerable to the debt which was owed to his Father. The debt we owed was the forfeiture and Subjection of our Soules and Bodies to the wrath of God, and the curse of the Law. God is able to destroy both Soule and Body in Hell, Mat. 10. 28. It is not to be understood onely of his Absolute Power, but of that power which as our Judge he hath over us *per modum Justitie*, as we are his Prisoners, and so obnoxious to the Curses of his Law. Therefore our Priest also was to have a Soule and a Body, to pay a Surety for our Soules and Bodies. Thou shalt make his Soule an offering for sinne, *Esay 53. 10. My soule is exceeding sorrowful, even unto Death, Mat. 26. 38.* And againe, A Body hast thou prepared me; we are sanctified through the Offering of the Body of *Iesus Christ* once for all, Heb. 10. 5, 10. His owne selfe bare our sinnes in his owne Body on the Tree, 1 Pet. 2. 24. So he was to be Man, that he might have a fit and answerable Sacrifice to offer, *σῶμα νάσθηλον ἡμῶν*; Thou hast fitted or prepared a Body for me; that my Sacrifice might be proportionable to that in the place whereof it stood. And thereby as he is fit for Passion, so also for Compassion; he was to be our Kinsman; and of our blood, that he might be a merciful

mercifull and faithfull high Priest, *Hebr. 2.11.14.17. Dent. 18.15.* And fit for derivation of his Righteousnesse, and transfusion of his Spirit upon us; for *he that Sanctifieth and they that are Sanctified are both of one.* And as it must be thus fitted to the sinner that it may be a proper and suitable Sacrifice for his sinne: So must it be perfect likewise. First, *without blemish or sinne.* Such an High Priest became us who is Holy, Harmlesse, undefiled, separate from sinners, *Hebr. 7.26.* That so he might offer himselfe without spot unto God, and have no need of a Sacrifice for himselfe, *Hebr. 9.14. 2 Pet. 1.19.* Secondly, without any manner of Defect, which should stand in need of supplement and contribution from some thing else, that of it selfe alone it might be sufficient, and available to bring perfection and salvation unto men, and to leave no more conscience of sinne behinde it, *Heb. 7.9.10.14.*

Fourthly, as there was to be such a Sacrifice, perfect in it selfe, and fit for the use and occasion for which it was appointed, so there must be an Altar upon which to offer it unto the Father; for it is the Altar which Sanctifieth the offering; that is, which in regard of God giveth it acceptance, and which in regard of Man giveth it vertue, merit and value answerable to his occasions. This Sacrifice was to be sufficient for the satisfaction of God, and for the justification and reparation of Man, and both these by meanes of the Altar on which it was offered, which was the Divine Nature. Through the Eternal Spirit he offered himselfe without spot unto God, and so by his blood purgeth our consciences from dead workes, *Hebr. 9.14.* For Christ as God sanctified himselfe as man, that so we through the vertue and merit of his Sacrifice might be sanctified likewise, *Iohn. 17.19.* He was to be God as well as man, *Medium participationis*, before he could be *Medium reconciliationis*; that so he might be himselfe supported to undergoe and breake through the

VERSE 4.

weight of sinne and the Law, and having so done might have compasse enough in his Sacrifice to satisfie the Justice of God, and to swallow up the signes of the world.

Fifthly, in as much as the *Virtue of the Deity* was to bee attributed truly to the *Sacrifice* (else it could have no value nor vertue in it) and that sacrifice was to be his *Own Life*, Soul and body, who is the Priest to offer it, because hee was not barely a *Priest* but a *Surety*, and so his person stood in stead of ours, to pay our debt, which was a debt of blood, and therefore hee was to offer himself, *Hebr. 9. 26. 1 Pet. 2. 24.* And in as much as his person must needs bee equivalent in dignity and representation to the persons of all those for whom hee mediated, and who were for his sake onely delivered from suffering: for these causes necessary it was that God and Man should make but *one Christ*, in the unity of the same *infinite person*, whose natures they both were, that which suffered, and that which sanctified. The humane nature was not to bee left to subsist in and for it selfe, but was to have dependance, and supportance in the person of the Sonne, and a kind of *Inexistence* in him, as the graft of an Apple may have in the stocke of a plumbe. From whence ariseth, first, the *Communication of properties* betweene the natures; when by reason of the unity of the person, we attribute that to one nature which is common to the other, not by *confusion*, or *transfusion*, but by *Communion* in one end and in one person; as when the Scriptures attribute *Humane properties* to the *Divine Nature*. The Lord of Life was slaine, *Acts 3. 15.* God purchased the Church with his owne blood, *Acts 20. 28.* They crucified the Lord of Glory, *1 Corinth. 2. 8.* Of Divine to the Humane Nature. As the Sonne of Man came downe from Heaven, *John 3. 13.* and the Sonne of Man shall ascend where he was before, *John 6. 62.* Or when both natures worke with their severall concurrence unto the same worke, as to walk on the waters, to rise out of the grave,

The Priesthood of Christ.

421

VERSE 4.

grave, &c. By which *Communication of properties* vertue is derived from the Altar to the Sacrifice in as much as it was the Lord of glory which was crucified. So that his passions were in regard of the person which bare them, *Θυρενωαι*, both *Humane* and *Divine*, because the person *Θεοδωρον*, *God* and *Man*. Secondly, from the unity of the person supporting the Humane Nature with the Divine, ariseth the *Appliablenesse* of one sacrifice unto all men. Because the Person of the Sonne is infinitely more than equivalent to the persons of all men, as one Diamond to many thousand Pebbels; and because the obedience of this sacrifice was the obedience of God, and therefore cannot but have more vertue and well-pleasingnesse in it, then there can bee demerit or malignity in the sinne of man.

Now this Person in whose unity the two Natures are conjoynd, is the second person in the Holy Trinity. Hee was the person against whom the first sinne was principally committed, for it was an affectation of wisdom and to bee like unto God; (as the falling-sinne now is the sinne against the third person) and therefore the mercy is the more glorious that hee did undertake the expiation. By him the world was made, *Coloss. 1. 16, 17. John 1. 3.* and therefore being spoyled hee was pleased to new make it again, and to bring many Sonnes unto glory, *Hebr. 2. 10.* Hee was the expresse Image of his Father, *Hebr. 1. 3. Col. 1. 15.* And therefore by him are wee renewed after Gods Image againe, *Col 3. 10.* Hee was the Sonne of God by Nature, and therefore the mercy was againe the more glorified in his making us sonnes by Adoption, and so joynt heires with himself who was the heire of all things.

So then such an high Priest it became us to have, as should bee first an equall *middle person* between God and Man. In regard of God towards man an officer appointed to declare his Righteousnesse, and in regard of

VERSE 4.

man towards God a surety ready to purchase their pardon and deliverance. Secondly, such an one as should be *one with us*, in the fellowship of *our nature*, passions, infirmities and temptations, that so he might the more readily suffer for us, who in so many things suffered with us; and *one with God the Father* in his *Divine Nature*, that so by the vertue of his sufferings and resurrection he might be able both to satisfie his Justice, to justifie our persons, to sanctifie our nature, to perfume and purifie our services, to raise up our dead bodies, and to present us to his Father a glorious Church without spot or wrinkle. And both these in the *Unity of one Person*, that so by that meanes the Divine Nature might communicate vertue, merit, and acceptablenesse to the sufferings of the humane; and that the dignity of that person might countervail the persons of all other men. And this person that person of the three, by whom the glory of the mercy should be the more wonderfully magnified. In one word *two things* are requisite to our *High Priest*. A *Grace of Union* to make the Person God and Man in one Christ: and a *Grace of Unction*, to fit him with such fulnesse of the Spirit, as may enable him to the performance of so great a work, *Esa. li. 2.*

By all which we should learne: First, to adore this great mystery of God manifested in the flesh, and justified in the Spirit, the unsearchablenesse of that Love, which appointed God to be Man, the Creator of the World to be despised, as a worme, for the salvation of such rebels, as might justly have been left under chaines of darknesse, and reserved to the same inevitable destruction with the Devils which fell before them. Secondly, to have alwayes before our eyes the great hatefulnessse of sinne, which no sacrifice could have expiated but the blood of God himselfe; and the great severity and inexorablenesse of Gods Justice against it, which no satisfaction could pacifie, no obedience compensate, but the

suffe-

suffering and exanation of himselfe. O what a condition shall that man be in, who must stand or rather everlastingly sinke and be crushed unto the weight of that wrath against sinne, which amazed and made heaue unto death the soule of Christ himselfe? Which made him who had the strength of the *Deity* to support him, the fulnesse of the *Spirit* to Sanctifi:, and prepare him, the message of an *Angel* to comfort him, the relation of a *beloued Sonne*, to refresh him, the voyce of his *Father* from heaven testifying unto him that he was heard in what he feared, the assurance of an *ensuing glory* and victory to encourage him (none of which shall be allowed the wicked in hell, who shall not onely be the vessels of his vengeance, but which will be as grievous as that, the everlasting objects of his hatred and detestation), which made I say even the Sonne of God himselfe, notwithstanding all these abatements, to pray with strong Cries, and bloody drops, and woefull conflicts of soule against the Cup of his Fathers wrath, and to shrink and decline that very worke for which onely he came into the World? Thirdly, to praise God for that *great honour* which he hath conferred upon our nature in the flesh of his Sonne, which in him is anointed with more grace and glory, and filled with more vast and unmatchable perfections than all the Angels in heaven are together capable of. For though for a little while he was made lower than the Angels for the purpose of his suffering, yet he is now set downe on the right hand of the Majesty on High, Angels, and Authorities, and Powers being made subject unto him, *Hebr. 2.6.9. 1 Pet. 3.22. Hebr. 1.4.13.* And for the *infinite Mercy* which he hath shewed to our soules, bodies, and persons in the sacrifice of his Sonne; in our reconciliation and fauour with him, in the justification of our persons from the guilt of sinne, in the Sanctification of our nature from the corruption of Sinne, in the inheritance reserved in heaven for us, in the

VERSE 4.

communion and fellowship we have with Christ in his merits, power, priviledges, and heavenly likeness. Now, saith the Apostle, *We are Sonnes, and it doth not yet appeare what we shall be: but we know that when he shall appeare, we shall be like him: for we shall see him, as he is,* 1 John. 2. 2.

From these things which have beene spoken of the Personall Qualifications of our High Priest, it will be easie to finde out the third particular inquired into, touching the *Acts or Offices of Christs Priesthood*; or rather touching the parts of the same Action, for it is all but one. Two *Acts* there are wherein the execution of this Office doth consist. The first, an *Act of Oblation* of himselfe once for all, as an adequate sacrifice, and full compensation for the sinnes of the whole World, *Hebr. 9. 14. 26.* Our Debt unto God was *Two fold*. As we were his *Creatures*; so we owed unto him a *Debt of Active Obedience* in doing the Duties of the whole Law; and as we are his *prisoners*, so we owed unto him a *Debt of passive obedience* in suffering willingly and throughly the Curses of the Law. And under this Law Christ was made, to redeeme us by his fulfilling all that righteousness who were under the precepts and penalties of the Law our selves. Therefore the Apostle saith, he *was sinne for us*; that is, a *Sacrifice for sinne*, to meete and intercept that wrath which was breaking out upon us. 2 Cor. 5. 21. Herein was the great mercy of God seen to us that he would not punish *Sinners*, though he would not spare *sinne*. If he should have resolved to have judged *Sinners*, we must have perished in our owne persons; but being pleased to deale with *sinne* onely in abstracto, and to spare the sinner, he was contented to accept of a *Sacrifice*, which (under the Relation and Title of a Sacrifice) stood in his sight like the *body of sinne alone*, by it selfe: in which respect he is likewise said to be made a *Curse for us*, *Galat. 3. 13.* Now that which together

Aug. Enchirid.
cap. 41 & De
vrai Cōment de
Mendacio, c. p.
15 & epist. 120
Greg. Nazian.
Ora. 2 de filio
Chryst. in 2.
Cor. 5:

ther with these things giveth the compleate and ultimate formality of a Sacrifice unto the death of Christ, was his owne * *willingnesse* thereunto in that he offered himselfe. And therefore he is called the *Lamb of God*, that taketh away the sinnes of the world, because he was dumbe and opened not his mouth, but was obedient unto death, even the death of the Crosse, *Phil.* 2.8. Christs death in regard of God the Father was a necessary death; for he had before determined that it should be done *Acts.* 4.18. Thus it is written, and thus it becom'd Christ to suffer, *Luke.* 24.46. The Sonne of Man must be lifted up, *John.* 3.14. And therefore he is said to be a *Lambe*, slaine from the beginning of the world, in regard of Gods Decree and Preordination. But this gave it not the formality of a Sacrifice; for God the Father was not the Priest, and it is the Action of the Priest which giveth the being of a Sacrifice to that which is offered. Again, Christs death in regard of men was violent. They slew him with wicked hands, and killeth the Prince of life, *Acts.* 2.23.3.15. And in this sense it was no Sacrifice neither, for they were not Priests, but Butchers of Christ. Thirdly, his death in regard of himselfe was * *voluntary*. I lay downe my life, no man taketh it from me; but I lay it downe of my selfe. I have power to lay it downe, and I have power to take it up againe, *John.* 10.17.18. And this oblation, and willing obedience, or rendring himselfe to God is that which gives being to a Sacrifice. He was delivered by God, *Acts.* 2.23. He was delivered by Judas and the Jewes, *Matth.* 27.2. *Acts.* 3.13. and he was yielded and given up by himselfe, *Galat.* 3.20. *Ephes.* 5.25. In regard of God it was *justice and Mercy*, *John.* 3.16 17. *Rom.* 3.25. In regard of man it was *murder and cruelty*, *Acts.* 7.52. In regard of Christ it was *obedience and humility*, *Philip.* 2.8. And that *voluntary* act of his was that which made it a Sacrifice. He gave himselfe for us, an offering and a Sacrifice to God for a sweet smelling savour, *Ephes.* 5.2.

E e 4

VERSE 4.

Hostia si ad a-
clusa
fuisse, invito
Deo offerri pu-
tamus. Mar.
Satan. 1.3. c. 5.
Imò non nisi vo-
lenti & velut
annun. e. ma-
bani. Plut. Sym-
pos. li. 8. cap. 8.
πρὸς θύαντες
οὐκ ἔχουσιν ἵνα
μὴ σφάτῃεν
καὶ ἐκ τούτου
κατασκευά-
σθαι.
* Quia voluit,
quando voluit,
quomodo voluit.
Aug. de trin. l. 4.
c. 13. Possiones
animi & corpo-
ris dispensationis
voluntate sine ulla
necessitate susce-
pit. l. 8. 3. Quæst.
cap. 80. spiritum
cum verbo sp̄s
dimisit pr̄v̄tio
carnifici officio.
1^{er}. Apol. c. 21.
* De c. aditione
Christi facta à
Patre & à Fi-
lio, à Juda &
Judeis, vide (ex
Augustino)
Lombard. 3.
Sens. Dist. 20.
C.D.

* His

VERSE 4.

* Non conditio-
nis necessitate,
sed miserationis
voluntate. Aug.
in Psal. 78. vid.
Parker. de De-
sensu, lib. 3.
Num. 116.

* See Hoker
lib 5 Num. 48.
Field of the
Church lib. 5.
cap. 18.
Between these
diverse desires,
no Repugnan-
cy but a subor-
dination, Fili-
us Dei qui dixit
et facta sunt,
Mandavit et
creata sunt om-
nia: secundum
hoc quod Filius
hominis temperat
sententiam &c.
Hieron Ep 70.
2 lib. 2. ad ver.
Pelagium.

* His death did not grow out of the condition of his nature, neither was it inflicted on him by reason of an *excesse of strength* in those that executed it, (for he was the Lord of glory) but onely out of *mercy* towards men, out of *obedience* towards God, and out of *power* in himselfe. For *omnis Christi infirmitas fuit ex potestate*. By his Power he assumed those infirmities which the oeconomie and dispensation of his Priesthood on the earth required; and by the same power he laid them aside againe, when that service was ended. And this I say was that which made it a Sacrifice. As Martyrdome, when men lay downe their lives for the profession of the truth, and the service of the Church, is called a *Sacrifice*, Phil. 2. 17.

If it be here objected that Christs death was against his owne will, for he exceedingly feared it, Heb. 5 7. and prayed earnestly against it, as a thing contrary to his will, Mat 26. 39. To this I answer, that all this doth not hinder, but commend his willingnesse and obedience. Consider him in *private* as a *Man*, of the same naturall affections, desires, and abhorrencies with other men, and consider the cup as it was *calix amaritudinis*, a very bitter cup; and so he most justly feared and declined it, as knowing that it would be a most wofull and a heaveie combate which he was entring upon: but consider him in his *publike Relation*, as a *Mediator*, a *surety*, a mercifull and faithfull high Priest: and the cup as it was *calix salutis*, a cup of salvation, and so he most willingly and obediently submitted unto it. And this willingnesse *ratione officij* was much the greater, because *ratione nature*, his will could not but shrinke from it. It is easie to be willing in such a service as is suitable to our naturall condition and affections, but when nature shall necessarily shrink, sweat, startle, and stand amazed at a service, then not to repent, nor decline, nor sing off the burden, but with submission of heart to lie downe under it, this is of all other the * greatest obedience. It was the *voice of nature*, and the presentation of
the

the just and implanted desires of the flesh, to say *Transseat* let it passe from me. It was the *retractation* of mercy and duty to say, *Glorifie thy selfe*. What ever my nature desires, what ever my will declines, what ever becomes of me, yet still *glorifie thy self & save thy Church*. If it cannot otherwise be, than by my drinking this bitter cup, *thy will be done*.

The second act in the worke of Christs Priesthood is the act of *Application*, or *virtuall continuance* of this Sacrifice to the end of the world; and that is in the *Intercession* of *Christ*; unto which there is prerequired a power and prevalency over all his enemies, to breake through the guilt of sinne, the Curse of the Law, and the chaines of death, with which it was impossible that it should be held. The vision which *Moses* had of the *burning bush*, was an excellent resemblance of the *Sacrifice* of *Christ*. The bush noted the Sacrifice; the fire, the suffering, the continuance and prevailing of the bush against the fire, the victory of *Christ* and breaking through all those sufferings, which would utterly have devoured any other man. And this power of *Christ* was shewed in his *Resurrection*, wherein he was declared to be the *Sonne of God with power*, *Rom. 1.4.* and in his *ascension* when he led all his *Enemies captive*, *Eph. 4.8.* and in his *sitting at the right hand of God*, farre above all principalities and powers, *Eph. 1.19.20.* All which did make way to the presenting of his Sacrifice before the mercy-seat, which is the consummation thereof; and without which he had not beene a Priest. *We have such an high Priest*, saith the Apostle, *as is set downe on the right hand of the Majesty in the heavens*; for if he were on earth he should not be a Priest, seeing that there are Priests which offer gifts according to the law; *Heb. 8.1.4.* It was the same continued action, whereby the Priest did offer without the Holy place, and did then once every yeare bring the blood into the holiest of all, *Heb. 13.11.* For the reason why it was shed was to present it to the mercy-seat, and

VERSE 4.

to shew it unto the Lord there. So Christs act or office was not ended, nor fit to denominate him a complete Priest, till he did enter with blood, and present his offering in the holiest of all not made with hands, *Hebr. 9. 24.* And therefore he had not been a Priest if he should have continued on the earth, for there was another Priesthood there, which was not to give place but upon the accomplishment, of his; for the whole figure was to passe away when the whole truth was come. Now Christs Oblation was the *ἁγίασμα*, the truth prefigur'd in the Priests sacrificing of the beast, and his entrance into heaven was the truth prefigured in the Priests carrying of the blood into the holiest of all. And therefore both these were to be accomplished, before the Leviticall Priesthood did give place.

Here then it will be needfull for the more full unfolding of the *Priesthood of Christ*, to open the Doctrine of his *Intercession* at the right hand of his Father. The Apostle calleth it the *Appearing of Christ for us*, *Hebr. 9. 24.* which is *verbum forense*, an expression borrowed from the custome of humane Courts; for as in them when the plaintiffe or defendant is called, their *Attornie* appeareth in their name and behalfe; so when we are summoned by the justice of God to defend our selves against those exceptions and complaints, which it preferreth against us, we have an *Advocate with the Father*, even *Iesus Christ the righteous*, who standeth out, and appeareth for us, *1. John. 2. 2.* As the high Priest went into the Sanctuary with the names of the twelve Tribes upon his breast; so Christ entred into the holiest of all with our persons, and in our behalfe: in which respect the Apostle saith that he was *Apprehended of Christ*, *Philip. 3. 12.* and that we doe sit together in heavenly places with him, *Ephes. 2. 6.* *Merit*, and *Efficacy* are the two things which set forth the vertue of Christs Sacrifice by which he hath reconciled us to his Father. The *Merit* of Christ being a *Redundant merit*, and having in it a plentiful redemption,

tion, and a sufficient salvation, hath in it two things : First, there is *ἀντιποιεῖς*, an expiation, or satisfaction by way of price. Secondly, there is *κτενοῦσις*, an Inheritance by way of purchase, and acquisition, *Ephes. 1. 14.* he was made of a Woman, made under the Law, for two ends, *ἵνα ἡμεῖς ἁγιασθῶμεν*, and *ἵνα ἡμεῖς ἀποκτήσωμεν ἡμεῖς κληρονομίαν*; that he might redeem us from the curse under which we lay, and that he might purchase for us the inheritance which we had forfeited before; (for so by adoption in that place I understand in a complexed and generall sense every good thing which belongs unto us in the right of our son-ship with Christ; and that is the Inheritance of glory, *Rom. 8. 17. 23.*) Now all this is effected by the obedience of Christ's death; for in that was the act of impetration or procurement, consisting in the treaty betweene God and Christ. But there is yet further required an execution, a real effectuallnesse, and actuall application of these unto us. As it must be in regard of God a satisfaction and a purchase, so it must be likewise in regard of us an actuall redemption and inheritance. And this is done by the intercession of Christ, which is the commemoration, or rather continuation of his Sacrifice. He offered it but Once, and yet he is a Priest for ever, because the Sacrifice once offered doth for ever remaine before the Mercy-seate. Thus as in many of the Legall oblations there was first *μακρῶς*, and then *ὀψω*: First, the Beast was slaine on the Altar, and then the Blood was together with Incense brought before the Mercy-seat, *Leviti. 16. 11. 15.* So Christ was first slaine, and then by his owne Blood hee entered into the holy place, *Hebr. 9. 12. 10. 12.* That was done on the earth without the gate, this in heaven, *Hebr. 13. 11. 12.* That the Sacrifice or obtaining of redemption, this the Application, or conferring of redemption. The Sacrifice consisted in the Death of Christ alone, the application thereof is grounded upon Christ's death as it's meris, but effected by the Life of Christ as its immediate cause. His death did obtaine, his

VERSE 4.

his life did confesse redemption upon us. And therefore in the Scriptures our justification and salvation are attributed to the *Life of Christ*. He was delivered for our offences, and *Rose againe for our justification*; Rom. 4.25. *If Christ be not raised, your faith is vaine*; you are yet in your sinnes; 1 Cor. 15.17. He shall convince the world of righteousness, because I goe to my Father; John 16. 10. Because I live you shall live also; John. 14.19. If we be dead with Christ, we believe that we shall also *live with him*; Rom. 6.8. Being made perfect, or consecrated for ever, he became the Author of eternall salvation unto all them that obey him; Hebr. 5.8.7.28. He is able perfectly to save, because he ever liveth; Hebr. 7.25. We were reconciled in his death; but had he there rested, we could never have beene acquitted nor entered in; for he was to be our forerunner. And therefore the Apostle addeth a πολλὰ μᾶλλον; a much more to the *Life of Christ*, *Much more being reconciled shall we be saved by his life*; Rom. 5.10. Not in point of merit, but onely of efficacy for us; as in buying Land, the laying downe of the price giveth a man a *meritorious interest*, but the delivering of the deeds, the resigning of the property, the yielding up of the possession giveth a man an *actuell interest* in that which he hath purchased: so the death of Christ *deserveth*, but the intercession and life of Christ *applyeth* salvation unto us. It was not barely Christs dying, but his *Dying victoriously*, so that it was impossible for death to hold him, Acts. 2.24. which was the ground of our salvation. He could not justifie us, till he was declared to be justified himselfe; there the Apostle saith, that he was justified by the Spirit; 1 Tim. 3.16. Namely by that Spirit, which quickned him; Rom. 1.4.8. 11. 1 Pet. 3.18. When Christ offered himselfe a Sacrifice for sinne, he was *numbered amongst transgressors*; Marke 15. 28. He bare our sinnes along with him on the tree, and so dyed under the *wrongs of men*, and under the *wrath of God*, in both

both respects as a *guilty person*; but when he was quickened by the Spirit of holiness, he then threw off the finnes of the world from his shoulder, and made it appeare that he was a righteous person, and that his righteousness was the righteousness of the world. So then our faith and hope was begun in Christs death, but was finished in his life, he was the *Author* of it, by *enduring the crosse*, and he was the *fin*isher of it, by *sitting downe on the right hand of the throne of God*, *Hebr. 12. 2.* The Apostle summes up all together. *It is God that justifieth, who is he that condemneth? It is Christ that died, yea, rather that is risen againe, who is even at the right hand of God, who also maketh intercession for us, Rom. 8. 33-34.*

Now then to shew more distinctly the nature and excellency of Christs *Intercession*: It consisteth in these particulars: First, his *appearance*, or the *presenting of his person in our nature and in his owne*, as a *publike person*, a *mediator*, a *sponsor* and a *pledge* for us, as *Juda* was both a *mediator* to request, and a *surety* to engage himselfe to beare the blame for ever with his Father for his brother *Benjamin*, *Gen. 43. 8. 9.* And *Paul* for *Onesimus* a *Mediator*. I beseech thee for my sonne *Onesimus*, *Phil. v. 9. 10.* and a *sponsor*. If he hath wronged thee, or, oweth thee ought, put that on mine account, I will repay it, *ver. 18. 19.* So Christ is both a *Mediator* and *surety* for us, *Heb. 7. 22. 8. 6.*

Secondly, the *presenting of his merits* as a *publike satisfaction* for the debt of sinne, and as a *publike price*, for the purchase of *Glory*, for the *Justice of God* was not to be intreated or pacified without a *satisfaction*; and therefore where Christ is called an *Advocate*, he is called a *Propitiation* too, *1 John 2. 2.* Because he doth not intercede for us, but in the right and vertue of the price which he paid. For the Lord spared not his Son, but delivered him up for us all, *Rom. 8. 32.* He dealt in the full rigour of his Justice with him.

Thirdly,

VERSE 4.

Thirdly, in the name of his person, and for the vigour and vertue of his merits, there is a presenting of his *Desires*, his *will*, his request, and interpellation for us, and so applying both unto us. *Father, I will that they also whom thou hast given mee, be with me where I am, &c.* Joh. 17. 24.

Fourthly, to all this doth answere the *consent* of the *Father*, in whose bosom hee is, who beareth him *alwayes*, John 11. 42. And in whom he is well pleased. *Matth.* 17. 5. Who called him to this office of being as it were Master of requests in the behalf of his Church, and promised to hear him in his petitions. *Aske of me, and I will give thee &c.* Psal. 2. 8. thus as once when *Archim*, The Tragedian was accused in *Arcopago* for impiety, his brother *Amyntas* stood out as his Advocate, using no other plea but this, hee opened his garments and shewed them *cubitus sine manu*, how hee had lost his hand in the service of the state, and so vindicated his brother: or as *Zalencus*, when he put out one of his owne eyes for his Sonne who had been deprehended in adultery, delivered him from halfe the punishment which himself hath decreed against that sinne: or, to come neerer, as when the hand steales, if the backe bee scourged, the tongue may, in matters that are not capital, intercede for dismissal: so Christ when hee suffered for us (which hee might more justly doe than any one man can for another, because he was by divine preordination and command, and by his owne power, more Lord of his owne life, than any other man is of his, John 10. 18. 1 Corinth 6. 19.) may justly in the vertue of those his sufferings intercede in our behalf for all that, which those his sufferings did deserve, either for the expiation of sinne, or for the purchase of salvation. In which sense the Apostle saith, that the blood of Christ is a *speaking* or interceding *Blood*, *Hebr.* 12. 24.

By all which we may observe the impiety of the Popish

Ellan. var.
Hist. lib. 5. c. 19.
Ellan. l. 13.
c. 24.

ὁσπερ μαρ-
τύρας ὁ ἀν-
θρώπος ὁ ἐ-
μαρτυρία διὰ
χειρὸς, καὶ
ἰνῆ ἡδὴ τις ἔ-
νώτον ἐκ ἀ-
δικῆς ὁ τυπ-
λῆτας αὐτοῦ.
Fust. Mart.
De 3. & Re-
spons. ad Or-
thodox.

pish Doctrine, which distinguisheth betweene Mediators of *Redemption*, and Mediators of *Intercession*, affirming that though the Saints are not redeemers of the world, yet they are (as the Courtiers of Heaven) Mediators of Intercession for us, and so may be sought unto by us. To which I answer, that wee must distinguish of interceding, or praying for another. There is one *private*, and another *publick*, (which some learned men have observed in Christs owne Prayers;) or praying out of *Charity*, and out of *Iustice* or *office*, or thirdly praying out of *Humility*, with feare and trembling, or out of *Authority*, which is not properly Prayer, (for Prayer in its strictest sense is a proposing of requests for things unmerited, which wee expect *ex vi promissi* out of Gods gracious promise, and not *ex vi pretii*, out of any price or purchase; (but the *presenting of the will and good pleasure of Christ to his Father*, that he may thereunto put his seale and consent; the desiring of a thing so, as that he hath withall a right, joyntly of bestowing it, who doth desire it. That the Saints in Heaven, and the blessed Angels doe pray for the State of the Church Militant, as well as rejoyce at their conversion, in as much as Charity remaineth after this life, seemeth to be granted by *Cyprian*, and *Hierom*, neither know I any danger in so affirming, if rightly understood. But if so, they doe it onely *ex charitate ut fratres*, not *ex officio ut mediatores*. Out of a *habit* of charity to the generall condition of the Church (for it reacheth not to particular men) not out of an *office of mediation*, as if they were set up for publike persons, appointed not onely to pray for the Church in generall, but to present the prayers of particular men to God in their behalf. To bee such a *Mediator* belongs onely to Christ, because *true Intercession* (as it is a publick, and authoritative act) is founded upon the satisfactory merites of the person interceding. Hee cannot bee a right Advocate, who is not a propitiation too. And therefore the Papists

Cameron. de Eccles. pag. 122.

Cyprian Epist.
Hieron. lib. ad-
versus Vigilant-
ium.

VERSE 4.

*Oramus San-
ctos ut interce-
dant pro nobis ;
id est, ut meri-
ta eorum nobis
suffragentur.
P. Lumb. l. 4.
distin. 45.*

*See D. Wors
answer to the
Jesuites chal-
lenge, Chap. of
Prayer to
Saints. Pag.
41., and the
quotations out
of Hales and
Bil. there.*

Papists are faine to venture so farre as to affirme that the intercession of the Saints with God for us is grounded upon the vertue of their owne merits. We pray the Saints to intercede for us, that is, that we may enjoy the suffrage of their merits. But this is a very wicked Doctrine. First, because it shareth the Glory of Christ, and communicateth it to others. Secondly, because it communicateth Gods worship to others. Thirdly, because under pretence of modesty and humility; it bringeth in a cursed boldnesse to deny the faith, and driveth children from their Father unto servants, expressly therein gainsaying the Apostle, who biddeth us *make our requests knowne to God*, Phil. 4.6. And assureth us that by Christ we have *boldnesse so to doe*, Hebr. 13.19. and *free accessse* allowed us by the Spirit, Ephes. 2.18. whereas one chief reason of turning to the Saints and Angels, is, because sinfull men must not *dare* to present themselves or their services unto God in their owne persons, but by the help of those Saints that are in more favour with God, and with whom they may be bolder.

Now from this Doctrine of Christs *intercession* many and great are the benefits which come unto the Church of God. As first, our *fellowship* with the Father and his Sonne; I pray for these, that as thou Father art in me and I in thee, *they also may be one in us*, John 17.21. Secondly, the gift of the Holy Ghost, I will pray the Father and he *shall give you another comforter*, that he may abide with you for ever, even the Spirit of Truth, John 14.16, 17. all the comforts, and workings of the Spirit in our heart, which we enjoy, are fruits of the *intercession* of Christ. Thirdly, *protection* against all our spirituall enemies, *who is he that condemneth?* It is Christ that died, yea, rather that is risen againe, who is even at the right hand of God, *who also maketh intercession for us*, Rom. 8.34. I pray that thou *wouldst keepe them from the evil*, John 17.15. But are not the faithfull subject to evils, corrup-

The Priesthood of Christ.

435

VERSE 4

ruptions and temptations still? How then is that part of intercession of Christ made good unto us? For understanding hereof, we must know that the intercession of Christ is available to a faithful man presently; but yet in a manner suteable and convenient to the present estate and condition of the Church, so that there may be left roome for another life, and therefore we must not conceive all presently done. As the Sunne shineth on the Moone by leasurely degrees, till shee come to her full light; or as if the King grant a pardon to be drawne, though the grant be of the whole thing at once, yet it cannot be written and sealed but word after word, and line after line, and action after action: so the grant of our holinesse is made unto Christ at first, but in the execution thereof, there is line upon line, precept upon precept, here a little, and there a little, such an order by Christ observed in the distribution of his Spirit and Grace, as is most suteable to a life of faith, and to the hope we have of a better Kingdome. I have prayed for thee that thy faith faile not, saith Christ unto Peter, yet we see it did shake and totter, *non rogavi ut ne desiceret, sed ut non prorsus deficeret*: the Prayer was not that there might be no failing at all, but that it might not utterly and totally faile.

Fourthly, the assurance of our sitting in heavenly places. His sitting in heavenly places hath raised us up together, and made us sit with him, Eph. 2. 6. First, because he sitteth there in our flesh. Secondly, because he sitteth there in our behalfe. Thirdly, because he sitteth there as our Center, Colos. 3. 1. 2. And so is neare unto us, *natura, officio, & Spiritu*, by the unity of the same nature with us; by the quality of his office or Sponforschip for us; and by the Communion and fellowship of his Spirit.

Fifthly, Strength against our sinnes: for from his Priesthood in heaven, which is his Intercession; the Apostle inferres the *wrighting of the Law in our hearts*, Heb. 8. 4. & 6. 9, 10.

Ff

Sixthly,

VERSE 4

Sixthly, the *sanctification of our services*: of which the Levitical Priests were a type, who were to *beare the iniquitie of the holy things of the Children of Israel*, that they might be accepted, *Exod. 28. 38.* He is the Angel of the Covenant, who hath a golden Censer, to offer up the prayers of the Saints, *Revel. 8. 3.* There is a three-fold evil in man: First, an *Evil of state or conditon*, under the *guilt of sinne*. Secondly, an *Evil of nature*, under the *corruption of sinne*, and under the indisposition and ineptitude of all our faculties unto good. Thirdly, an *Evil* in all our *services*, by the *adherencie of sin*, for that which toucheth an uncleane thing, is made uncleane; and the best Wine mixed with Water, will lose much of its strength and native spirits. Now Christ by his *righteousnesse* and *merits*, *justifieth* our persons from the guilt of sinne; and by his *grace* and *Spirit*, doth in measure *purifie* our *faculties*, and cure them of that corruption of sinne, which cleaves unto them. And lastly, by his *incense* and *intercession* doth cleanse our *services* from the noysomenesse and adherencie of sinne, so that in them the Lord smelleth a sweet savour; and so the Apostle calleth the contributions of the Saints towards his necessities, an *odour of a sweet smell*, a *sacrifice acceptable*, and *well pleasing unto God*, *Phil. 4. 18. Gen. 8. 21.* And this is a benefit which runneth through the whole life of a Christian; all the ordinary workes of our calling (being parts of our service unto God, for in them we worke as servants to the same Master) are unto us sanctified, and to the Father made acceptable by the intercession of his Sonne, who hath made us Priests, to offer all our sacrifices with acceptance upon this Altar, *Revel. 1. 6. 1 Pet. 2. 5. Esay 65. 7.*

Seventhly, the *Inward interpellation* of the soule it selfe for it selfe, which is, as it were, the eccho of Christs intercession in our hearts: The Spirit maketh intercession for us with groanes which cannot be uttered, *Rom. 8. 26.*

The

The same Spirit groaneth in us, and more fully and distinctly by Christ prayeth for us. *These things I speak in the world, saith our Saviour, that they might have my joy fulfilled in themselves, John 17.13.* that is, as I conceive, I have made this prayer in the world, and left a record and paterne of it in the Church, that they feeling the same heavenly desires kindled in their owne hearts, may bee comforted in the workings of that Spirit of prayer in them, which testifyeth to their soules the qualitie of that intercession which I shall make for them in heaven.

Eighthly, *Patience* and unweariednesse in Gods service: *Let us run with patience the race that is set before us, looking unto Jesus the Author and finisher of our faith, who for the joy that was set before him, endured the Crosse, despising the shame, and is set downe at the right hand of the Throne of God, Heb. 12.1,2,3.*

Lastly, *Confidence* in our approaches to the Throne of Grace: *Seeing then that we have a great high Priest that is passed into the heavens, Jesus the Son of God, let us hold fast our profession, and come boldly unto the Throne of Grace, Heb. 4.14,16.* And againe, This man after he had offered one Sacrifice for sins for ever, *sate downe on the right hand of God; from henceforth expecting till his enemies be made his foot-stoole: from whence the Apostle inferreth, Having therefore boldnesse to enter into the Holiest by the blood of Jesus; and having an high Priest over the house of God, Let us draw neare with a true heart, in full assurance of faith, &c. Heb. 10.12,22.*

And all these things are certaine to us in the vertue of this *Intercession* of Christ: First, because the Father beareth him, and answereth him, *Job. 11.42.& 12.28.* and appointed him to this office, *Heb. 5.4,5.* Secondly, because the Father loveth us; *I say not unto you, that I will pray the Father for you, for the Father himselfe loveth you, because you have loved me, &c. Job. 16.26, 27.* Thirdly, because

VERSE 4

as Christ hath a Prayer to intercede for us, so hath he also a Power to confer that upon us, for which he intercedeth. *I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, Joh. 14. 16. If I goe not away, the Comforter will not come unto you; but if I depart, I will send him unto you: Joh. 16. 7.* That which Christ by his Prayer obtained for us, by his Power he conferreth upon us; and therefore in the Psalm he is said to *Receive gifts for men*, noting the fruit of his intercession, *Psal. 68. 18.* and in the Apostle, to *give gifts unto men*; noting the power and fulnesse of his person, *Ephes. 4. 8.* Having received of the Father the promise of the Holy Ghost, he hath shed forth this which you now see and heare, *Acts 2. 33.* Thus great and thus certain are the benefits which come unto the Church from the Intercession of Christ.

The fourth thing inquired into about the Priesthood of Christ, was, what is the *Vertue* and fruits thereof, and they may be all comprized in two general words: there is *Solutio debiti*, the payment of our debt, and *Redundantia meriti*, an overplus, and redundancie of merit. *Satisfaction*, whereby we are redeemed from under the Law; and an *Acquisition*, or purchase of an Inheritance and priviledges for us. The obedience of Christ hath a double relation in it; there is, first, *Ratio legalis iustitiae*, the relation of a legal righteousness; as it beares exact and complete conformity to the Law, will, and decree of his Father. Secondly, there is *Ratio superlegalis meriti*, the relation of a merit over and beyond the Law; for though it were *nostrum debitum*, that which we did necessarily owe, yet it was *sum indebitum*, that which of himselfe he was not bound unto, but by voluntary susception, and covenant with his Father, for it was the blood and obedience of God himselfe.

Here then first is to be considered his payment of that debt which we did owe unto God, in which respect he is said to *Beare our sinnes*. To beare sinne, is to have the burden

burden of the guilt of sinne, and malediction of the Law to lie upon a man: so it is said, he that troubleth you, *shal* *bear* *his* *judgement*, Gal. 3. 10. The sonne shall not *bear* *the* *iniquity* *of* *the* *father*, neither shall the father *bear* *the* *iniquity* *of* *the* *sonne*, the wickednesse of the wicked shall be upon him, Ezek. 18. 20. So wrath is said to *Abide* *on* *a* *man* Job. 3. 36. and sinne is said to be *retained*, or held in its place, Job. 20. 23. So Christ is said to *bear* *our* *sinnes* in his body on the tree, 1 Pet. 2. 24. *Esay* 53. 4. 6. And by so bearing them, he tooke them off from us: cancell'd the obligations of the Law against us; and did all whatsoever was requisite to satisfie an offended Justice; for he fulfilled the Law, which was our debt of service. It becometh us to fulfil all righteousness, Matth. 3. 15. And he endured the Crosse, and curse, the bloody agony, and ignominy of that death, which was the debt of suffering, Heb. 12. 2. and the covenant between him and his Father, was, that all that should be done by him as our Head and Surety, and so he was to take death for every man, Heb. 2. 9. Rom. 5. 8. * So there is a Commutation allowed, that he should be in our stead, as it were, Ἀντὶ τοῦτο, his soul a sacrifice, and his life a price, and his death a conquest of ours; and therefore is called Ἀντίστοιχος, 1 Tim. 2. 6. A price or ransom for all those in whose place he was made sin, and a curse, 2 Cor. 5. 21. Gal. 3. 13. Though he had not any Demerit or proper guilt of sinne upon him, which is a Deserving of punishment (for that ever growes out of sinne, either personally inherent, or at least naturally imputed, by reason that he to whom it is accounted, was seminally and naturally contained in the loynes of him from whom it is on him derived) yet he had the guilt of sin so farre as it notes an obligation and subjection unto punishment, as he was our Surety; and so in sensu forensi, in the sight of Gods Court of Justice, one with us, who had deserved punishment, imputed unto him.

* Notant qui de legū relaxatione scripserunt, eas esse optimas relaxationes, quibus annexa est commutatio sive compensatio, Gros. de satisfact. Christi, cap. 5.

VERSE 4

The fruit which redounds to us hereby, is the expiation or remission of our finnes, by the imputing of his righteousness unto us. *This is my blood, of the new Testament which is shed for many for the remission of finnes, Matth. 26: 28.* In whom we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of finnes, according to the riches of his glory, *Ephes. 1.7. Heb. 8. 12.* And this must needs be a wonderful mercy, to have so many thousand talents forgiven us, such an infinite weight taken off from our consciences, the penalty and curse of so many finnes removed from us. Our natural condition is to be an heire of everlasting vengeance, the object of Gods hatred and fiery indignation, exiles from the presence of his glory, vessels fit and full of misery, written within and without with curses, to be miserable, to be all over miserable, to be without strength in our selves, to be without pity from other, to be without hope from God, to be without end of cursednesse; this is the condition of a sinner, and from all this doth the mercy of God deliver us.

The manner whereby the satisfaction of Christ becomes profitable unto us, unto the remission of sin and righteousness, is by *Imputation*, *Rom. 4.3. & 5.8. & 5.19.* No man is able to stand before Gods Justice, for he is a consuming fire, *Heb. 12.29.* No flesh can be righteous if he enter into judgement. He is of purer eyes than to behold iniquity, *Heb. 1.13.* for his eyes are not eyes of flesh, *Job 10.4.* Now all the world is guilty before God, and cometh short of his glory, *Isa. 60.1.* it lyeth in mischief, *1 John 5. 19.* and therefore must be justified by a forren righteousness, and that equal to the Justice offended, which is the righteousness of God unto us graciously imputed. We are justified freely by his grace, through the redemption that is in Jesus Christ, *Rom. 3. 19.24.*

To open this point of justification by imputed righteousness: We must note, that two things are pre-required

to denominate a man a righteous man. First, there must be extant a *righteousnesse*, which is apt and able to *justifie*. Secondly, there must be a right and propriety to it, whereby it cometh to passe, that it doth *actually justifie*. We must then first inquire what the *righteousness* is whereby a man may be justified. *Righteousnesse* consisteth in a relation of *rectitude and conformity*. God made man upright, but they have sought out many inventions, and turned into many crooked diverticles of their owne, *Eccles. 7. 29. Dent. 32. 5.* A wicked man loveth *crooked wayes*, to wander up and downe in his owne course, *Jer. 31. 22. Hos. 4. 6.* whereas a righteous man loveth *straigh wayes*, *Heb. 12. 13. Psal. 5. 8.* because *righteousnesse* consisteth in rectitude: and this presupposeth some *Rule*, unto which this conformity must referre. The *primitive* and original prototype, or *Rule* of holinesse, is the *righteousnesse* of God himselfe; so farre forth as his Image is communicable to the creature, or at least so farre forth as it was at the first implanted in man: *Be yee perfect, as your Father which is in Heaven is perfect, Matth. 5. 48.* It is not meant of his infinite perfection, (for it was the sinne of *Adam* to aime at being as God, in absolutenesse and independent excellency) but of that perfection of his, which is in the Word set forth unto us for an Image and pattern whereto to conform our selves. Therefore the *secondary Rule* of *righteousnesse*, or rather the same rule unto us revealed, is the *Law of God* written in his Word, in the which Gods holinesse, so farre as it is our example, exhibireth it selfe to the soule, as the Sun doth communicate its light through the beame which conveys it. Now in the *Law* there are two things, one principal, *Obedience*; the other secondary, *Malediction*, upon supposition of disobedience: *Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things which are written in the Booke of the Law to doe them, Gal. 3. 10.* So then upon supposition of the sinne of man, two things are required.

VERSE 4

unto justification; the expiation of sinne, by suffering the curse; and the fulfilling of righteousness *de novo*. Again, Man created might have been justified by obedience only, but man sinned cannot otherwise appeare righteous in Gods sight, but by a double obedience; the one *passive*, for the satisfaction of his vindicative justice; as we are his prisoners; the other *active*, in proportion to his remunerative justice, as we are his creatures.

But besides this, that there must be a righteousness extant, there is required in the person to be justified, or denominated thereby, a propriety therunto, that it may be His righteousness, *Jer. 38. 16*. Now there may be a two-fold propriety to righteousness, according to a two-fold manner of unity. (*Unitas trium praesentis, est fundamentum proprietatis ad officium praestitum.*) First, there is a personal and individual unity; whereby a man is *unus in se*, one in and by himselfe; and so hath propriety to a duty performed; because it is performed in his owne person, and by himselfe alone. Secondly, there is a common unity, whereby a man is *unus cum alio*, one with another, or whereby many are *unum in aliquo primo*, one in and with some other thing, which is the fountain and original of them all. And this is the ground of Righteousness imputed; for in the Law a man is justified by performing intire obedience in his owne person, for the Law requireth righteousness to be performed by a created and implanted strength, and doth not put, suppose, or indulge any common principle thereof out of a mans selfe: Therefore legal righteousness is most properly called *Our owne righteousness*, and is set in opposition to the righteousness of God, or that which is by grace imputed, *Rom. 10. 3. Phil. 3. 8, 9*. We see then that in this matter of imputation either of sinne or righteousness, for the clearing of God from any injustice or partiality in his proceeding, there must ever be some unity or other betweene the parties; he whose fault is imputed,

imputed; and the other to whom it is imputed. It would be prodigious and against reason, to conceive that the fall of Angels should be imputed unto men, because men had no unity in condition either of nature, or covenant with the Angels; as we have in both with Adam.

VERS 4.

This common unity is two-fold, either *natural*, as betweene us and Adam, in whom we were seminally contained, and originally represented; (for otherwise than in and with Adam, there could at the beginning be no covenant made with mankind which should *ex æquo* reach unto all particular persons in all ages and places of the World:) Or *Voluntary*, as between a man and his Surety, who, in *conspectu fori*, are but as one person. And this must be *mutual*, the one party undertaking to doe for the other, and the other yeilding and consenting thereunto, as betweene us and Christ, for Christ voluntarily undertooke for us, and we by the Spirit of Christ are perswaded and made willing to consent, and by faith to cast our sins upon Christ, and to lay hold on him. And besides the *will of the parties*, who are the one by default, the other by compassion and suretiship, engaged in the debt; there is required the *will and consent of the Judge*, to whom the debt is due, and to whom it belongeth in the right of his jurisdiction, to appoint such a forme of proceeding for the recovery of his right, as may stand best with the honour of his Person, and the satisfaction of his Justice, who if he would, might in rigour have refused any surety, and have exacted the whole debt of those very persons, by whose onely default it grew. And thus it comes to passe, that by grace we have fellowship with the second Adam, as by nature with the first, 1 Cor. 15. 45, 48. So then, betweene Christ and us there must be an unity, or else there can be no imputation. And therefore it is, that we are said to be justified by faith, and that faith is imputed for righteousness, Rom. 4. 5. not the *credere*, the act of believing,

VERSE 4.

as if that were in *se*, accounted righteousness, as it is a worke proceeding from us by grace; but because it is *Vinculum* and *Instrumentum unionis*, the bond of Union betweene us and Christ; and by that meanes makes way to the imputation of Christs righteousness unto us. Therefore we are said to be *huried*, and *crucified* in and with Christ, by the vertue of faith incorporating Christ and a Christian together, and communicating the fellowship of his sufferings and resurrection, *Rom. 6. 6. Gal. 6. 14. Ephes. 3. 17. Phil. 3. 10.* If I be lifted up, saith our Saviour, I will draw all men after me; *crucem consequens. & me illuc adduxit*; when Christ hanged on the Crosse, we in a sort were there too. As in *Adam* we were all in Paradise, by a natural and seminal vertue; so in Christ by a spiritual vertue, whereby in due time faith was to be begotten in us, and so we to have an actual being of grace from him, as after our real existence we have an actual being of nature from *Adam*. Thus we see that Christ did for us fulfil all righteousness, by his passive meriting and making satisfaction unto the remission of finnes. By his active, covering our inabilities, and doing that in perfection for us, which we could not doe for our selves. First, he suffered our punishment, he was wounded for our transgression, he was bruised for our iniquities, the chastisement of our peace was upon him, and with his stripes we are healed: *Esay 53. 5.*

If it be here objected, that an innocent person ought not to suffer for a nocent, for guilt is inseparable from sin: The son shall not beare the iniquity of his father, neither shall the father beare the iniquity of the son; the soule that sinneth, the same shall die. For the clearing of this objection, we must note, that there is a two-fold manner of guilt, (as I before touched), either such as growes out of sinne inherent, which is the deserving of punishment; as it is in us; or such as growes out of sinne imputed, and that not by reason of union natural, as the guilt of *Adams* sinne is imputed

imputed unto us (which manner of imputation is likewise *fundamentum demeriti*, and causeth us to deserve punishment) but *voluntary* by way of *vadimony* and *susception*. And so guilt is only a free and willing obnoxiousnesse unto that punishment which another hath deserved. Amongst sinful men it is true, that the sonne shall not beare the punishment of the fathers sinne: First, because he is altogether personally distinct. Secondly, because he is not appointed so to doe, as Christ was, *John 10. 18.* Thirdly, because he is not able to beare them, so as to take them off from his Father, as Christ did ours: He was himself able to stand under our punishment without sinking, and was able by suffering them, to take them off from us, because his Person was answerable in dignity; and therefore (by the grace of God, and the act of his Divine jurisdiction in ordering the way to his owne satisfaction) equivalent in justice unto all ours. Fourthly, because he hath already too many of his owne to beare. But yet, if the will of the sonne goe along with the father in sinning, it is not strange, nor unusual for him to suffer for his fathers and his owne sinne together, as for the *continuacion* of the same offence; because, though he doe not will the punishment, (as Christ did ours) yet imitating and continuing the sinne, there is *Volitum in causa*, for the punishment too.

Now for an answer and resolution of the question, whether an innocent person may suffer for a nocent, we must note first, that God out of his Dominion over all things, may cast paines upon an innocent person, as it is manifest he did upon Christ: And what ground of complaint could any creature have against God, if he should have created it in fire, and made the place of its habitation the instrument of its paine? Doe not we our selves without cruelty, upon many occasions, put creatures that have not offended us, unto paine?

Secondly, it is not univ[er]sally against equity for one

VERSE 4.

Vid. Gro. de satisfactione Christi. ca. 4. 5.

VERSE 4.

Tertul. contra.
Marcion, lib. 2.
cap. 15.

Lumbard. lib. 2.
distin. 33.

Aquin. 2^a. 2^a.
quest. 108. art.
4.

Coquaus in
Aug. Civ. Dei.
lib. 16. cap. 1.
num. 1. Dama-
sus in Aug. En-
chirid. cap. 46.

to suffer the punishment of another's sinne: we see the infants of Sodom, Babylon, Egypt, of *Corah*, *Dathan*, and *Abiram*, were involved in the punishment of those sinnes of which themselves were not guilty. The Lord reserveth to himselfe the punishment of the fathers on the children; he punished the sinnes of three hundred and ninety yeares all together, *Ezek. 4* 2. 5. *Cham* committed the sinne, and yet *Canaan* was cursed for it, *Gen. 9* 22. 25. The sinne was *Gebezies* alone, and yet the leprosie cleaved not to him onely, but to his posterity. *2 King. 5* 27. The sinne of crucifying Christ was the Jewes in that age alone, and yet wrath is come upon them to the uttermost, even unto this day, *Mat. 27* 25. *1 Thes. 2* 16. *Acan* trespassed alone, but he perished not alone; but his sonnes, and his daughters, and all that he had with him, *Ios. 7* 24. *1 King. 21* 21. *Judg. 9* 56. *1 King. 2* 33. *1 Cor. 12* 30.

Thirdly, the equity hereof in the case of Christ, doth herein plainly appeare: when all parties are glorified, and all parties are willing and well pleased, there is no injury done unto any: and in this the case is so: First, All parties are glorified, the Father is glorified in the obedience of his Sonne; I have both glorified thy name, and I will glorify it againe, *John 12* 27, 28. I have glorified thee on earth, I have finished the worke which thou gavest me to doe, *Iob 17* 4. The Sonne is glorified, Thou madest him a little lower than the Angels, and crownedst him with Glory and Honour, *Heb. 2* 7. *John 17* 5. and the sinner is glorified, I will, that where I am they may be also, that they may behold my Glory, &c. *John 17* 24. Secondly, All parties are willing; first, the Father is willing, for by his Ordination he appointed Christ to it, *Mat. 4* 27, 28. by his love and tender Compassion hee bestowed Christ upon us, *John 3* 16. by his Divine Acceptation, hee rested well pleased in it, *Matthew 17* 5. in one word, by his wonderful wisdom he fitted it to the manifestation

nifestation of his glory and mercy, to the reconciliation of him and his creature, and to the exaltation of his Sonne. Secondly, the Sonne is willing, he chearefully submitted unto it, *Heb. 10. 9.* and freely loved us, and gave himselfe unto us; *Gal. 2. 20.* Thirdly, the sinner is willing, and accepteth and relieth upon it, as we have seene at large before in the third verse; so that there can be no injury done to any party, where all are willing, and where all are glorified.

Fourthly, that an innocent person may thus in Justice and equity suffer for a nocent; there is required (besides these acts of ordination in the supream, of submission in the surety, and of consent in the delinquent) first, an intimate and neare conjunction, in him that suffereth, with those that should have suffered. Several unions and conjunctions there are, as *Politick*, betweene the members and subjects in a State; and * thus in a Common-wealth universally sinful, a few righteous men may, as parts of that sinful Society, be justly subject to those temporary evils which the finnes of the society have contracted; and the people may justly suffer for the finnes of the Prince, *2 Sam. 24. 17.* and he for theirs, *1 Sam. 12. 25.* Secondly, *natural*, as between parents and children; so the Lord visited the finnes of *Dathan* upon his little ones, *Numb. 16. 27, 33.* Thirdly, *Mystical*, as betweene man and wife; so the Lord punished the finnes of *Amaziah* the Priest of Bethel, by giving over his wife unto whordome, *Amos 7. 17.* and we see in many cases the husband is lyable to be charged and censured for the exorbitances of his wife. Fourthly, *Stipulatorie*, and by consent, as in the case of *side jassores* or *obsides*, who are punished for the finnes of others whom they represent, and in whose place they stand, as a caution and muniment against injuries which might be feared, as we see in the Parable of the Prisoner committed to the custody of another person, *1 King. 20. 39, 42.* Fifthly, *Possessio-*

* *Navicula in qua erat Juda. turbabatur, unde et Petrus, qui erat firmus meritis suis, turbabatur alienis. Ambrosius in Luc. 5. 28. Σωτήρι Διὸς ἀνδρά- σασις βαρ- λέων. Hesiod. Delirant reges, peccantur A- chiivi.*

VERSE 4.

rie, as between a man and his goods, and so we finde that a man was to offer no beast for a sinne-offering, but that which was *his owne*, *Levit. 5.6, 7.* Now in all these respects, there was in some manner conjunction betweene us and Christ; He conversed amongst men, and was a member of that Tribe and society amongst whom hee lived, and therefore was together with them under that Romane yoke, which was then upon the people, and in that relation paid tribute unto *Cesar*: he had the nature and seed of man, and so was subject unto all humane and natural infirmities without sinne: He was mystically married unto his Church, and therefore was answerable for the debts and misdemeanours of the Church. He entred into covenant, and became surety for man, and therefore was liable to mans engagements. Lastly, he became the possession, in some sort, of his Church; whence it is that we are said to receive him, and to have him, *1 John 5.12.* not by way of *Dominion*, (for so we are his, *1 Cor. 6. 19.*) but by way of *Communion and propriety*; and therefore though we cannot offer him up unto God in sacrifice for our sins, yet we may in our faith and prayers shew him unto his Father, and hold him up as our own armour and fence against the wrath of God. *Rom. 13.14.*

Secondly, there is required in the innocent person suffering, that he have a *free and full dominion* over that from which he parteth, in his suffering for another. As in suretiship, a man hath free dominion over his money, and therefore in that respect he may engage himselfe to pay another mans debt; but he hath not a *free dominion* over himselfe or his owne life, and therefore he may not part with a member of his owne in commutation for an others, (as *Zaleucus* did for his sonne) nor be *Ἀντὶ τοῦ σώματος* to lay down his owne life for the delivering of another from death, except in such cases as the Word of God limiteth or alloweth. But Christ was Lord of his owne life,

life, and had therefore power to lay it downe and to take it up. And this power he had (though he were in all points subject to the Law as we are) not solely by vertue of the hypostatical union, which did not for the time exempt him from any of the obligations of the Law, but by vertue of a particular command, constitution, and designation of that service of laying down his life, *This commandement have I received of my Father, John 10.18.*

Lastly, it is required that this power be ample enough to breake through the sufferings he undertaketh, and to re-assume his life, and former condition againe. *I have power to lay it downe, and I have power to take it up.* So then the summe of all is this, by the most just, wise, and merciful will of God, by his owne most obedient and voluntary suception, Christ Jesus, being one with us in a manifold and most secret union, and having full power to lay downe, and to take up his life againe by special command and allowance of his Father given him, did most justly, without injurie to himselfe, or dishonour to, or injustice in his Father, suffer the punishment of their sinnes, with whom he had so neare an union, and who could not themselves have suffered them with obedience in their owne persons, or with so much glory to Gods justice, mercy, and wisdom.

If it be here againe objected, that sinne in the Scripture is said to be *pardoned*, which seemes contrary to this payment and satisfaction. To answer this, we must note, first, that in the rigour of the Law, *Noxa sequitur caput*, the delinquent himselfe is in person to suffer the penalty denounced: for the Law is, *In the day that Thou eatest thou shalt dye*; and the soule that sinneth is *shall dye*. Every man shall beare his *owne burthen*, Gal. 6.5. So that the Law, as it stands in its owne rigour, doth not admit of any commutation, or substitution of one for another. Secondly, therefore, that another person suffering

VERSE 4.

ring may procure a discharge to the person guilty, and be valid to free him, the will, consent, and mercy of him to whom the infliction of the punishment belongeth must concur, and his over-ruling power must dispence, though not with the substance of the Lawes demands yet with the manner of execution, and with that rigour, which bindes wrath peremptorily upon the head only of him that hath deserved it. So then we see both these things doe sweetly concur; first, a precedent satisfaction by paying the debt; and yet secondly, a true pardon and remission thereof to that party which should have paid it; and out of mercy towards him, a dispensing with the rigour of that Law, which in strictnesse would not admit any other to pay it for him.

Thus we see how Christ hath suffered our punishment. Secondly, he *did all obedience*, and fulfilled all actions of righteousnesse for us; *for such an High-Priest became us who is holy, harmlesse, undefiled, separate from sinners, Heb. 7. 26.* He came not into the world but for us, and therefore he neither suffered, nor did any thing but for us. As the colour of the glasse is by the favour of the Sunne-beame shining through it, made the colour of the wall, not inherent in it, but relucient upon it, by an extrinsecal affection: so the righteousnesse of Christ (by the favour of God) is so *imputed unto us*, as that we are *quoad gratiosum Dei conspectum*, righteous too: In which sense I understand those words, *He hath not beheld iniquity in Jacob, neither hath he seene perversnesse in Israel, Num. 23. 21.* Though it is indeed in him, yet the Lord looketh on him as clothed with the righteousnesse of Christ, and so is said not to see it; as the eye seeth the colour of the glasse in the wall, and therefore cannot behold that other inherent colour of its owne, which yet it knoweth to be in it.

Now of this Doctrine of *Justification by Christs righteousnesse imputed*, we may make a double use: First, it may

may teach us that great duty of *self-denial*; we see no righteousness will justify us but Christ's, and his will not consist but with the denial of our own. And surely whatever the professions of men in word may be, there is not any one duty in all Christian Religion of more difficulty than this, to trust Christ onely with our salvation. To doe holy Duties of hearing, reading, praying, meditating, alms-giving, or any other actions of charity or devotion, and yet still to abhorre our selves and our works, to esteeme our selves after we have done all, unprofitable servants, and worthy of many stripes: to doe good things, and not to rest in them; to owne the shame and dung of our solemne services: when we have done all the good works we can, to say with *Nehemiah*, Remember me, O my God, concerning this, and spare mee according to the greatnesse of thy Mercy, *Nehem. 13. 22.* and with *David*, To thee O Lord, belongeth mercy; for Thou renderest to every man according to his works, *Psal. 62. 12.* It is thy mercy to reward us according to the uprightness of our works, who mightest in Judgement confound us for the imperfection of our workes. To give God the praise of our working, and to take to our selves the shame of polluting his workes in us. There is no doctrine so diametrally contrary to the merits of Christ, and the redemption of the world thereby, as justification by workes. No Papist in the world is or can be more contentious for good workes than we, both in our Doctrine, and in our Prayers, and in our Exhortations to the people. We say, no faith justifies us before God but a working faith; no man is righteous in the sight of men, nor to be so esteemed, but by workes of holinesse; without holinesse no man shall see God: he that is Christ is zealous of good workes, purifieth himselfe even as he is pure, and walketh as he did in this world. Here onely is the difference; we doe them, because they are our Duty, and rectifications of our love and thankfulness to Christ, and

VERSE 4.

of the workings of his Spirit in our hearts; but we dare not trust in them, as that by which we hope to stand or fall before the tribunal of Gods Justice, because they are at best mingled with our corruptions, and therefore doe themselves stand in need of a high Priest to take off their iniquity: We know enough in Christ to depend on, we never can finde enough in our selves. And this confidence we have, if God would ever have had us justified by workes, he would have given us grace enough to fulfill the whole Law, and not have left a Prayer upon publick record for us every day to repeat, and to regulate all our owne Prayers by, *Forgive us our trespasses.* For how dares that man say, I shall be justified by my workes, who must every day say, *Lord forgive me my sinnes, and be merciful unto me a sinner.* Nay, though we could fulfil the whole Law perfectly, yet from the guilt of sinnes formerly contracted we could no other way be justified, than by laying hold by faith on the satisfaction and sufferings of Christ.

Secondly, it may teach us confidence against all sins, corruptions, and temptations. *Who shall lay any thing to the charge of God elect? It is God that justifieth, who is he that condemneth? It is Christ that died,* &c. Satan is the blackest enemy, and sinne is the worst thing he can alledge against me, or my soule is or can be subject unto; for *Hell is not so evil as sinne*; In as much as Hell is of Gods making, but sinne onely of mine. Hell is made against me, but sinne is committed against God. Now I know Christ came to destroy the workes, and to answer the arguments and reasonings of the Devil. Thou canst not stand before God, saith Satan, for thou art a grievous sinner, and he is a devouring fire. But faith can answer, Christ is able both to cover and to cure my sin, to make it vanish as a mist, and to put it as farre out of mine owne sight as the East is from the West. But thou hast nothing to doe with Christ, thy sinnes are so many and
so

so foule; surely the blood of Christ is more acceptable to my soule, and much more honourable and pretious in it selfe, when it covereth a multitude of sinnes. *Paul* was a perlecuter, a blasphemers, and injurious, the greatest of all sinners, and yet he obtained mercy, that he might be for a pattern of all long-suffering to those that should after believe in Christ. If I had as much sinne upon my soule as thou hast, yet faith could unlade them all upon Christ, and Christ could swallow them all up in his mercy. But thou hast still nothing to doe with him, because thou continuest in thy sinne. But doth he not call me, invite me, beseech me, command me to come unto him? If then I have a heart to answer his call, he hath an hand to draw me to himselfe, though all the gates of Hell, and powers of darknesse, or sinnes of the World stood betweene. But thou obeyest not this call. True indeed, and pitiful it is, that I am dull of hearing, and slow of following the voice of Christ, I want much faith: but yet Lord, thou doest not use to quench the smoaking flax, or to brlake the bruised reed; I believe, and thou art able to helpe mine unbelief. I am resolved to venture my soule upon thy mercy, to throw away all mine owne loading, and to cleave onely to this planck of salvation. But faith purifieth the heart, whereas thou art uncleane still. True indeed, and miserable man I am therefore, that the motions of sin do worke in my members. But yet Lord, I hate every false heart; I delight in thy Law with mine inner man, I doe that which I would not, but I consent to thy Law that it is good; I desire to know thy Wil, to feare thy Name, and to follow thee whithersoever thou leadeest me. But these are but empty velleities, the wishings and wouldings of an evil heart. Lord, to me belongeth the shame of my failings, but to thee belongeth the glory of thy mercy and forgivenesse. Too true it is that I doe not all I should: but doe I allow my selfe in anyt, ng that I should not? doe I make use of mine infir-

VERSE 4.

might to iustifie my selfe by them, or shelter my selfe under them, or dispense with my selfe in them? though I doe not the things I should, yet I love them, and delight in them, my heart, and Spirit, and all the desires of my soule are towards them: I hate, abhorre, and fight with my selfe for not doing them. I am ashamed of mine infirmities, as the blemishes of my profession, I am weary of them, and groane under them as the burdens of my soule: I have no lust, but I am willing to know it, and when I know, to crucifie it. I heare of no further measure of grace, but I admire it, and hunger after it, and presse on to it. I can take Christ and affliction, Christ and persecution together. I can take Christ without the World, I can take Christ without my selfe. I have no unjust gaine, but I am ready to restore it. No time have I lost by earthly businesse from Gods Service, but I am ready to redeeme it. I have followed no sinful pleasure, but I am ready to abandon it; no evil company, but I mightily abhorre it. I never swear an oath, but I can remember it with a bleeding conscience; I never neglected a duty, but I can recount it with revenge and indignation. I doe not in any man see the Image of Christ, but I love him the more dearly for it, and abhorre my selfe for being so much unlike it. I know, Satan, I shall speed never the worse with God, because I have thee for mine enemy. I know I shall speed much the better, because I have my selfe for mine enemy. Certainly he that can take Christ offer'd, that can in all points admie him, as well to purifie as to iustifie, as well to rule as save, as well his Grace as his Mercy, neede not feare all the powers of darknesse, nor all the armies of the foulest sinnes which Satan can charge his conscience withal.

The second great vertue and fruit of the Priesthood of Christ was *ex redundantia meriti*, from the redundancie and over-flowing of his merit. First, he doth *merit to have a Church*; for the very being of the Church is the effect

effect of that great price which he payed ; therefore the Church is called a purchased people , 1 Pet. 2. 9. *Aske of me , and I will give thee the heathen for thine inheritance , Psal. 2. 8.* When he made his soule an offering for sinne , he did by that meanes see his seed , and divide a portion with the great , *Esay 53. 10, 11, 12.* The delivering and selecting of the Saints out of this present evil world was the end of Christs Sacrifice , *Gal. 1. 4.* Secondly, he did merit all such good things for the Church , as the great love of himselfe and his Father towards the Church did resolve to conferre upon it. They may, I conceive, be reduced to two heads : First, *Immunity from evill*, whatsoever is left to be removed after the payment of our debt, or taking off from us the guilt and obligation unto punishment. Such are the *Dominion of sinne*. *Sinne shall not have dominion over you*, Rom. 6. 14. *The Law of the Spirit of Life in Christ Jesus, hath made me free from the Law of Sinne and of Death*, Rom. 8. 2. *He that committeth sinne, is the servant of sinne ; but if the Sonne shall make you free, you shall be free indeed*, John 8. 34, 36. *He that is borne of God doth not commit sinne*, 1 John 2. 9. That is, he is not an artificer of sin, one that maketh it his trade and profession, and therefore bringeth it to any perfection. He hath received a *Spirit of Judgement*, that chaineth up his lusts ; and a *Spirit of burning*, which worketh out his dross, *Esay 4. 4. Mal. 3. 2, 3. Mat. 3. 2.* Such is the *Vainie of our minde*, whereby we are naturally unable to thinke, or to cherish a good thought, 2 Cor 3. 5. *Ephes. 4. 27.* The *Ignorance and hardness of our hearts*, unable to perceive, or delight in any spiritual thing, *Ephes. 4. 18. John 1. 5. Luke 24. 25, 45.* The *Spirit of disobedience* and habitual strangeness and avernesse from God, *Ephes. 4. 18. John 20. 14.* Such are also all those *slavish, affrightful, and contumacious effects in the Law* in terrifying the conscience, irritating concupiscence, and compelling the froward heart to an unwilling and

V E R S E 4

unwelcome conformity. The Law is now made our Counsellor, a delight to the inner man; that which was a Lion before, hath now foode and sweetnesse in it.

Secondly, *Many priviledges* and dignities in the vertue of that Principal and General one, which is our *Unity unto Christ*: from whence by the fellowship of his Holy and quickning Spirit, we have an *Union* which teacheth us his wayes, and his voice, which *sanctifieth our nature*, by the participation of the Divine nature, that is, by the renewing of Gods most holy and righteous Image in us. 1. Which *sanctifieth our Persons*, that they may be spiritual Kings and Priests; *Kings*, to order our own thoughts, affections, desires, studies towards him, to fight with principalities, powers, corruptions, and spiritual enemies. *Priests*, to offer up our bodies, soules, prayers, thanksgivings, almes, spiritual services upon that Altar which is before his Mercy seate, and to slay and mortifie our lusts and earthly members: which *sanctifieth all our actions*, that they may be services to him and his Church, acceptable to him, and profitable to others. Secondly, from this unity with him growes *our adoption*, which is another fruit of his Sacrifice. He was made of a woman, made under the Law, that we might receive *The Adoption of Sonnes*, Gal. 4. 5. By which we have free access to call upon God in the vertue of his Sacrifice; sure supplies in all our wants, because our Heavenly Father knoweth all our needs: A most certaine inheritance, and salvation in hope; for we are already *saved by hope*, Rom. 8. 24. and Christ is to us the *Hope of Glory*, Col. 1. 27. Lastly, there is from hence *our exaltation*, in our final victory and resurrection, by the fellowship and vertue of his victory over death, as the first fruits of ours, 1 Cor. 15. 20, 49. Phil. 3. 21. And in our complete salvation, being carried in our soules and bodies to be presented to himselfe without spot and blamelesse, Ephes. 5. 26, 27. and to be brought unto God, 1 Pet. 3. 18. Now

to

to take all in one view, what a summe of mercy is here together ! Remission of all sinners, discharge of all debts, deliverance from all curses ; joy, peace, triumph, security, exaltation above all evils, enemies, or fears ; a peculiar, purchased, royal seed, (the gift of God the Father to his Sonne) deliverance from the dominion and service of all sinne, vanity, ignorance, hardnesse, disobediente, bondage, coaction, terror ; sanctification of our persons, natures, lives, actions ; adoption, hope, victory, resurrection, salvation, glory. O what a price was that which procured it ? O what manner of persons ought we to be for whom it was procured ?

The fifth thing to be spoken of about the Priesthood of Christ I shall dispatch in one word, which is the *Duty* we owe upon all this. First, then we should not receive so great a grace in vaine, but by faith lay hold upon it, and make use of it. *Let us feare*, saith the Apostle, *lest a promise being left us, of entering into his rest, any of you should seeme to come short of it ; for unto us was the Gospel preached as well as unto them : but the Word preached did not profit them, not being mixed with faith in them that heard it, Heb. 4. 1, 2.* God in Christ is but reconcilable unto us, *One with us in his good will*, and in his proclamation of peace. When two parties are at variance, there is no actual peace without the mutual consent of both againe ; till we by faith give our consent, and actually turne unto God, and seeke his favour, and lay hold on the mercy which is set before us ; though God be one, in that he sendeth a mediator, and maketh tender of reconciliation with us, yet this Grace of his is to us in vaine, because we continue his enemies still. The Sun is set in the Heavens for a publick light, yet it benefiteeth none but those who open their eyes, to admit and make use of its light. A Court of Justice or equity is a publick sanctuary, yet it actually relieveth none but those that seeke unto it. Christ is a publick and universal Salvation, set up for all

VERSE 4.

comers, and applicable to all particulars, *John* 3. 26. He is not willing that any should perish, but *that all should come to repentance*, *2 Pet.* 3. 9. He tasted death for every man, *Heb.* 2. 9. But all this is not beneficial unto life, but onely to those that receive him. Onely those that receive him are by these mercies of his made the Sons of God, *John* 1. 12. without faith they abide his enemies still. God in Christ publisheth himselfe a God of Peace and Unity towards us, *Gal.* 3. 20. And setteth forth Christ as an All-sufficient treasure of mercy to all that in the sense of their own misery will fly unto him, *Rev.* 22. 17. But till men believe, and are thus willing to yeild their own consents, and to meete his reconciliation towards them, with theirs toward him; his wrath abideth upon them still; for by believing onely he will have his Sons death *Actually effectual*, though it were *sufficient* before. O therefore let us not venture to beare the wrath of God, the curse of sin, the weight of the Law upon our owne shoulders, when we have so present a remedy, and so willing a friend at hand to ease us!

Secondly we should labour to feele the vertue of the Priesthood and Sacrifice of Christ working in us, purging our consciences from dead workes, renewing our nature, cleansing us from the power and pollution of sinne; for when by the hand of faith, and the sweet operation of the Spirit we are therewithal sprinkled, we shall then make it all our study to hate, and to forbear sinne, which squeezed out so pretious blood, and wrung such bitter cries from so mercifull a high Priest; to live no longer to our selves, that is, *secundum hominem*, as men, *1 Cor.* 3. 3. *Hos.* 6. 7. After our owne lusts and wayes: but (as men that are not their owne, but his that bought them) to live in his service, and to his Glory, *1 Cor.* 6. 19, 20. *2 Cor.* 5. 14. *1 Pet.* 4. 2. All that we can doe is too little to answer so great Love. Love to empty himselfe, to humble himselfe, to be God in the flesh, to be God

on

on a Crosse, to take off from us the hatred, fury and vengeance of his Father, to restore us our primitive purity and condition againe. Why should it be esteem'd a needlesse thing to be most rigorously conscionable, and exactly circumspect, in such a service as unto which we are engaged with so infinite, and unsearchable bounty? He payed our debt to the uttermost farthing, drunke every drop of our bitter Cup, and saved us, *us waylades thoroughly*: why should not we labour to performe his Service, and to fulfil every one of his most sweet Commands to the uttermost too?

Thirdly, we should learne to walke before him with all reverence and feare, as men that have received a Kingdome which cannot be moved, *Heb. 12. 28.* And with frequent consideration of the high Priest of our profession, that we may not in presumption of his mercy, harden our hearts, or depart from God, *Heb. 3. 1. 8.* But in due remembrance of the end of his Sacrifice, which was to purchase to him selfe a peculiar people, be zealous of all good works, *Tit. 2. 14.*

Fourthly, we should learne confidence and boldnesse towards him, who is a Great, a Faithful, and a Merciful high Priest; this use the Apostle makes of it. *Seeing we have a great high Priest, let us hold fast our profession, and come with boldnesse unto the Throne of Grace, Heb. 4. 14, 15, 16.* And againe, *Having therefore boldnesse to enter into the Holiest by the blood of Jesus, and having an high Priest over the House of God, let us draw nere with a true heart, in full assurance of faith, &c. Heb. 10. 19, 22.*

Fifthly, we should learn perseverance and stedfastness in our profession, because he is able to carry us through and save us to the uttermost. This is that which indeed makes us partakers of Christ. *We are made partakers of him, if we hold the beginning of our confidence stedfast to the end, Heb. 3. 14.* The considering of him, of his perseverance in finishing his own worke, and our faith, and his power and

VERSE 4.

and ability to save us to the uttermost, will keep us from fainting in our service, and the profession we have taken, *Heb. 12. 2, 3. & 10. 23.*

Sixthly, we have hereby access to present our prayers, and all our Spiritual Sacrifices upon this Altar, sprinkled with the blood of that great Sacrifice, and liberty to come unto God by him who liveth to make intercession for us, *Heb. 7. 25. In him we have access with confidence by faith, Eph. 3. 12.* Therefore the Lord is said to have his eyes open to our prayers, to hearken unto them, *1 King. 8. 52.* Because he first looketh upon our persons in Christ, before he receiveth or admitteth any of our services.

Lastly, we ought frequently to celebrate the memorie, and to commemorate the Benefits of this Sacrifice wherein God hath been so much glorified, and we so wonderfully saved. Therefore the Lord hath of purpose instituted a sacred ordinance in his Church, in the room of the Paschal Lambe, that as that was a prefiguration of Christs death expected, so this should to all ages of the Church be a resemblance and commemoration of the same exhibited. So often as ye eat this Bread, and drinke this Cup, ye shew forth the Lords Death till he come, *1 Cor. 11. 26.* For in the ordinances he is Crucified before our eyes, *Gal. 3. 1.* Therefore the Apostle more than once inferres from the consideration of this Sacrifice and Office of Christ, our duty of not forsaking the assemblies of the Saints, and of exhorting and provoking one another, *Heb. 3. 13, & 10. 24, 25.*

Now I proceed to the last thing mentioned in the words concerning the Priesthood of Christ, and that is about the Order of it. *Thou art a Priest [for ever, after the Order of Melchisedeck,] Secundum verbum, or secundum morem & rationem:* the Apostle readeth it *ἡ ἰερωσύνη*, according to the Order of Melchisedecks Priesthood. Of this Melchisedeck we finde mention made but in two places onely of the whole Old Testament, and in both very

very briefly; the first in the History of *Abraham* returning from the slaughter of the Kings, when *Melchisedeck* being the Priest of the most high God, brought forth Bread and Wine, and blessed him, *Gen. 14. 18, 19, 20.* and the other in this place. And for this cause the things concerning him and his Order are *diversimodis a, hard to be understood, Heb. 5. 11.* It was so then, and it would be still, if *S. Paul* had not cleared the difficulties, and shewed wherein the Type and the Antitype did fully answer; which he hath largely done in *Heb. 7.*

For understanding and clearing the particulars which are herein considerable, here are some questions which offer themselves: First who *Melchisedeck* was? Secondly, what is meant by *τῆς*, his Order? Thirdly, why Christ was to be a Priest after his Order, and not after *Aarons*? Fourthly, why he brought forth Bread and Wine? Fifthly, what kinde of blessings it was with which he blessed *Abraham*? Sixthly, in what manner he received Tithes? Lastly, in what sense he was without Father, and without Mother, without beginning of daies, or end of life.

First, for *Melchisedeck*, who he was: much hath been said by many men, and with much confidence. (a) Some Heretickes of old affirmed, that he was the *Holy Ghost*. (b) Others, that he was an *Angel*. (c) Others that he was *Sem* the Sonne of *Noah*. (d) Others that he was a *Canaanite*, extraordinarily raised up by God to be a Priest of the Gentiles. (e) Others that he was *Christ* himselfe, manifest by a special dispensation and priviledge unto *Abraham* in the flesh, who is said to have seene his day, and rejoyced, *Joh. 8. 56.* Difference also there is about *Salem*, the place of which he was King. Some take it for *Jerusalem*, as * *Iosephus*, and most of the Ancients. Others for a City in the halfe tribe of *Manasse*, within the River *Jordan*, where *Hierom* reports that some ruines of the Palace of *Melchisedeck* were in his dayes conceived to remaine. Tedious I might be in insisting on this point, who

Vid. Cameron.
Quæst. in Heb.

^a Apud Hieron.
Epist. Tom. 3.

Epist. 136. 6.

Epiphan. lib. 2

Hares. 55.

^b Origen. apud
Hieronym.

^c Hebrai apud
Epiphan. 6.

Hieron.

^d Tertul. contr.

Judeos. Justin.

Epiphan. Pare-

us in Gen.

^e Quidā apud

Epiphan. 6. nup-

per Petrus.

Cunaus. de. Re-

pub. Hebraeor.

cap. 3. vid.

Cogna. in Aug.

de Civ. Dei. l. 16

cap. 22.

* Antiq. Jud.

lib. 1. cap. 11.

VERSE 4.

who *Melchisedeck* was. But when I find the holy Ghost purposely concealing his Name, Genealogie, beginning ending, and descent, and that to special purpose; I cannot but wonder that men should toile themselves in the darke to finde out that of which they have not the least ground of solid conjecture, and the inevidence whereof is expressly recorded, to make *Melchisedeck* thereby the fitter Type of Christs everlasting Priesthood.

Secondly, what is meant by *τὸ αἰὼν*. It is as much as the state, condition or prescribed Rule of *Melchisedeck*; and that was *ἡ διαίτης ζωῆς αἰσώτου*. After the power of an endless life, *Heb. 7. 16*. Not by a corporal unction, legal ceremony, or the intervening act of an humane ordination: but by a heavenly institution, and immediate unction of the Spirit of life, by that extraordinary manner whereby he was to be both King and Priest unto God, as *Melchisedeck* was. In one word, herein standeth the dignity of the Order of Christs Priesthood; That it was a Heavenly, a Powerful, an Endlesse, a Royall, a Righteous, and a Peaceable Priesthood.

Thirdly, Why was he not a Priest after the order of *Aaron*? the Apostle giveth us an answer, *Because the Law made nothing perfect*, but was *weake and unprofitable*, and therefore was to be abolished, and to give place to another Priesthood. Men were not to rest in it, but by it to be led to him who was to abolish it, *Heb. 7. 11, 12*. as the Morning-starre leadeth to the Sunne, and at the rising thereof vanisheth. The Ministry and promises of Christ were better then those of the Law; and therefore his Priesthood, which was the office of dispensing them, was to be more excellent likewise, *Heb. 8. 6*. For when the Law and Covenant were to be abolished, the Priesthood in which they were established, was to die likewise.

Fourthly, Why *Melchisedeck* brought forth Bread and Wine? The Papists, that they may have something to build the idolatry of their masse upon, make *Melchisedeck*

to *Sacrifice bread and wine*, as a Type of the Eucharist. I will not fall into so tedious a controversie, as no way tending to edification, and infinite litigations there have been between the parts already about it. In one word; We grant that the Ancients doe frequently make it a *Type of the Eucharist*, but onely by way of *allusion*, not of *literal predication*, or *strict prefiguration*; as that, out of Egypt have I called my Sonne, and in *Rama* was there a voice heard, which were literally and historically true in another sense, are yet by way of allusion applied by the Evangelist unto the History of Christ, *Mat. 2. 15, 18*. But we may note; first, it is not *Sacrificavit*, but *Pro-misit*, he brought it forth, he did not offer it up. Secondly, he brought it forth to *Abraham as a Prince*, to entertaine him after his Conquest, as *Josephus*, and from him *Cajetan* understand it, not as a Priest to God. Thirdly, he, if He did offer, he offered Bread and Wine truly, these men, onely the lying shapes thereof, and not Bread and Wine it selfe, which they say are transubstantated into another thing. Fourthly, the Priesthood of *Melchisedeck* as Type, and of Christ as the substance, was *diuina et eterna*, a Priesthood which could not passe unto any other either as Successor or Vicar, to one or the other, and it was only by Divine and immediate unction; but the Papiſts make themselves Priests by humane and ecclesiastical ordination, to offer that which they say *Melchisedeck* offered; and by that meanes most insolently make themselves either Successors, or Vicars, or Shareers and copartners and workers together with him and his Antitype, Christ Jesus, in the offices of such a Priesthood as was totally uncommunicable, and intransient, *Heb. 7. 24*. and so most sacrilegiously rob him of that honour which he hath as-ſumed to himselfe as his peculiar Office.

Fifthly, what kinde of blessing it was wherewith *Melchisedeck* blessed *Abraham*? To this I answer, that there is a twofold *Benediction*. The one *Charitativa*, out of

Glass. Philoog.
Sacta. pag. 423.

Loqo suprà cita-
to.

VERSE 4. of love, and so any man may blesse another by way of euprecation or well wishing : *The blessing of the Lord be upon you, we blesse you in the name of the Lord, Psal. 129. 8.* the other *Authoritativa*, as a King, a Priest, an extraordinary superior and publick person, by way of office, and to the purpose of effecting, and real conveying the blessing it selfe desired : *without all contradiction*, saith the Apostle, *the lesse is blessed of the greater, Heb. 7. 7.* and such was this of *Melchisedeck*. *Benedictio ob signans*, a seal, assurance, and effectual confirmation of the promise before made, *Gen 12. 2, 3.*

Quod debebat
Abraham Deo,
solvit in manum
Melchisedec.

Decimarum ergo
solutione, se
minorem professus
est, Calv. in
Heb. 7. 5. 8. 9.

Διὰ τὸ μὴ
μνημονεύειν αὐτοῦ
τὸν θεόν.
Chrysost.

Sixthly, in what manner he received Tithes? I answer with *Calvin*, that he had *7us decimarum*, and received them as testifications of homage, duty and obedience from *Abraham*; for the Apostle useth it as an argument to prove his greatnesse above *Abraham*, which could be no argument in the case of pure gift; Since gifts, *quatenus* gifts, though they prove not a general inferioritie in him that receives them, yet they prove that in that case there is something which may be imputed, and which deserves acknowledgement. But in this particular all the acknowledgements are from *Abraham* to *Melchisedeck*. Besides, nothing was here by *Abraham* or *Melchisedeck* done after an arbitrary manner, but *Extraordinario spiritus afflatu, & ex officio*, on both sides, as learned *Cameron* hath observed.

Lastly, in what sense he was ἀπαλῶς and ἀμύλῶς, &c. without Father, Mother, or Genealogie? I answer with *Chrysostome*, that it is not meant literally and strictly; but onely the Scripture takes notice of him as an extraordinary man, without signifying his line, beginning, end, or race, (as *Tiberius* said of *Rufus*, that he was *Homosex natus*) that so he might be the fitter to typifie Christs Person and excellencie in whom those things were really true, which are onely *quoad nos*, spoken of the Type, of whose beginning, end, or Parentage, wee neither

neither have, nor can have any knowledge. These things thus premised, it will be easie for you to preoccupate those observations which grow betweene the Type and the Antitype, which therefore I will but cursorily propose.

Note, first, that Christs Priesthood is such as did induce a Kingdome with it, for *Melchisedeck* was King of *Salem*, and Priest of the most high God.] This Saint Hierom, and from him *Ambrose* reports to have beene meant by the order of *Melchisedeck*, namely, *Regula Sacerdotium*, that Christ was to be a *Royal Priest*. By way of merit purchasing a Kingdome of his Father, and by way of conquest recovering it to himselfe out of the hands of his enemies. This mystery was obscurely intimated in the marriages allowed between the Regal and Sacerdotal Tribes of *Juda* and *Levi*, which confusion was in the other Tribes interdicted, as I have before observed.

See pag. 383.

Note, secondly, that Christ by offering up himselfe a Sacrifice unto God, is become unto his people a *King of Righteousnesse*, or the Lord our righteousnesse : in which sense he is called *The Prince of life*, *Act. 3. 15.* that is, he hath all Power given him as a Prince, to quicken, and to Justifie whom he will, *John 5. 20, 21.* And this comes from his Sacrifice and perfect obedience to us imputed, and by us with faith applied and apprehended. For having fulfilled the righteousnesse of the Law, and Justified himselfe by rising from the Dead, he became (being thus made perfect) the Author of righteousnesse and salvation to us, *Heb. 5. 9.* We had in us a whole kingdome of sin, and therefore requisite there was in him that should Justifie us a kingdome of Grace, and righteousnesse: That as sinne reigned unto death, even so might grace through righteousnesse reigne unto eternal life by *Jesus Christ our Lord*, *Rom. 5. 21.* and therefore we are said to be Justified by the righteousnesse of God, *Rom. 3. 21, 22.* that is, such a righteousnesse as is ours by gift and grace, not by nature,

VERSE 4.

nature, Rom. 10. 3. and such a righteousness as God himselfe did performe, though in the humane nature, in our behalfe, *Act. 20. 28. Phil. 2. 6, 7, 8.*

And this is the ground of all our comfort, the best direction in all our miseries and extremities whither to flie. A King is the greatest officer amongst men, and his honour and state is for the supply, defence, and honour of his people. He is *Custos tabularum*, the Father and the Keeper of the Lawes. If I want any of that Justice and Equity, of which his sacred Bosome is the publick treasury, I may freely beg it of him, because he is an Officer to dispence righteousness unto his Subjects; so also is Christ unto his Church. I finde my selfe in a miserable condition, condemned by the conscience of sinne, by the testimony of the Word, by the accusations of Satan, full of discomforts; God is a God of Justice, and all fire, my selfe a creature of sinne, and all stubble; Satan the accuser of the brethren, who labours to blow up the wrath of God against me. In this case what shall I doe? Surely, *God hath set his King on Sion*; and he is a King that hath life and righteousness to give to me; that hath grace enoughto quench all sin, and the envenomed darts of Satan; in whom there is erected a court of Peace and Mercy, whereunto to appeale from the severity of God, from the importunity of the Devil, and from the accusations and testimonies of our owne hearts. And indeed, he had need be a King of righteousness that shall Justifie men, for our Justification is in the remission of our sins; and to pardon sinnes, and dispense with Lawes, is a regal dignity; and God taketh it as his owne high and peculiar prerogative, *I, even I am he who blotte out thine iniquity for mine owne sake, and will not remember thy sinnes, Esay 43. 25.* No man, or Angel, or created power; no merit, no obedience, no rivers of oyle, nor mountaines of cattel, no prayers, teares, or torments can wipe out the staines, or remove the guilt of any sinne,

sinne, *I only, even I* and none can else doe it: None but a Divine and Royall Power can subdue sinne, *Mis. 7. 18.*

And this is a ground of a second comfort, that being a King of Righteousnesse he is rich in it, and hath treasures to bestow; that we have a Kingdome, a treasure, and abundance of sinne; so we have a King that hath alwayes a residue of spirit and grace, that hath a most redundant righteousness *from faith to faith, Rom. 1. 17.* A mans faith can never over grow the righteousness of our King. If we had all the faith that ever was in the world put into one man, all that could not overclap the righteousness of Christ, or be too bigge for it. As if a man had a thousand eyes, and they should one after another looke on the Sunne, yet still the light would be revealed from eye to eye; or as if a man should goe up by ten thousand steps to the top of the highest mountaine; yet he could never over-look all the earth, or fix his eye beyond all visible objects, but should still have more earth and heaven discovered unto him from step to step: so there is an immensity in the righteousness and mercy of God, which cannot be exhausted by any sinnes, or over-looked, and comprehended by any faith of men. As God doth more and more reveale himselfe, and the righteousness of Christ unto the soule; so man maketh further progresses *from faith to faith.* And therefore we should learne everlasting thankfulness unto this our King, that is pleased to be unto us, *Melchisedeck, a Priest to satisfie his Fathers justice, and a Prince to bestow his owne.*

Note thirdly, *Melchisedeck* was *King of Salem*, that is, of Peace. Here are two things to be noted; the *Place*, a City of the Canaanites, and the *signification* thereof, which is *Peace*: First then, we must observe, that *Christ* is a *King of Canaanites*, of Gentiles, of those that lived in abominable lusts: *Such were some of you, but you are*

VERSE 4.

was shed, but you are sanctified, but you are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, 1 Corin. 6.11. Be a man never to sinfull or uncleane, he hath not enough to pose or non-plus the mercy and righteousnesse of Christ; he can bring reconciliation and peace amongst Jebusites themselves. Though our Father were an Ambrite, our mother an Hittite, though we were Gentiles, estranged from God in our thoughts, lives, hopes, ends: though we had justified Sodome and Samaria by our abominations, yet he can make us nigh by his blood, he can make our crimson finnes as white as snow, he can for all that establish an everlasting covenant unto us, Ephes. 2. 11—14. Esai. 1. 18. Ezek. 16. 60—63. I was a blasphemmer, a persecutor, very injurious to the Spirit of Grace in his Saints, I wasted, I worried, I haled into prison, I breathed out threatnings, I was mad, and made havocke of the Church, I was within one step of the unpardonable sinne, nothing but ignorance betweene that and my soule; Howbeit for that cause I obtained mercy, that in me first JESUS CHRIST might shew forth all long-suffering, for a patterne to them who should hereafter believe on him to life everlasting, saith Saint Paul, 1 Tim. 1. 13—16.

Let us make Saint Pauls use of it: First, To love and to believe in Christ, to accept as a most faithfull and worthy saying, that Christ came to save sinners; indefinitely, without restriction, without limitation; and me, though the chiefest of all others. Though I had more finnes than earth or hell can lay upon me, yet if I seele them as heaveie weights, and if I am willing to forsake them all, let me not dishonour the power and unsearchable riches of Christs blood, even for such a sinner there is mercy. Secondly, To breake forth into Saint Pauls acknowledgement, Now unto the King eternall, immortall, invisible, and onely wise God, to him that is a King of righteousnesse, and therefore hath abundance for me; that is eternall, and yet was borne in time for me; immortall, yet died

The Priesthood of Christ.

469

VERSE 4.

died for me; invisible, yet was manifested in the flesh for me, the onely wise God, and who made use of that wisdom, to reconcile himselfe to me, and by the foolishnesse of preaching doth save the world; *Be honour and glory for ever and ever, Amen.*

Secondly, from the signification of the word, we may note, *Where Christ is a King of righteousness, he is a King of Peace too.* So the Prophet calleth him; *The Prince of Peace, Esai. 6.9.* a Creator and dispencer of Peace. It is his *owne* by propriety and purchase, and he leaves it unto us: *Peace I leave with you, my peace I give unto you, not as the world giveth, give I unto you, John 14.27.* The world is either *fallax* or *inop*, either it deceives, or it is deficient; but peace is *mine*, and I can give it. Therefore as the Prophet *Jeremie* calleth him by the name of *Righteousnesse, Jerem. 33.16.* So the Prophet *Micah* calleth him by the name of *Peace, This man shall be the peace, when the Assyrians shall come into our Land, Micah. 5.5.* To which Saint *Paul* alluding, calleth him *εἰρήνη ἡμῶν, our peace, Ephes. 2.14.* By him we have peace with God, being reconciled, and *recti in curia* againe, being justified by faith, *we have peace with God, through our Lord Jesus Christ, Roman. 5.1.* so that the heart can challenge all the world to lay any thing to its charge. By him we have *peace with our owne consciences*, for being sprinkled with his blood, they are cleansed from dead workes, and so we have the *witnesse in our selves*, as the Apostle speaketh, *Hebr. 9.14* & *John 5.10. Rom. 8.16.* By him we have *peace with men.* No more malice, envie, or hatred of one another, after once the kindnesse and love of God our Saviour towards man appeared, *Titus 3.3,4.* All partition walls are broken downe, and they which were two before, are both made *one in him, Ephes. 2.14,* and then there is towards the brethren a love of communion, towards the weake a love of pittie, towards the poore a love of bounty, either *φιλαδελφία* or *ἀγάπη, 2 Pet. 1.7.* either

VERSE 4.

Esa. 32. 17.

Rom. 4. 5. 9.

brotherly love, or generall love, towards those without, mercy, charity, compassion, forgiveness, towards all good workes. By him we have *peace with the creatures*, we use them with comfort, with liberty, with delight, with piety, with charity, with mercy, as glasses in the which we see, and as steps by the which we draw neerer to God. No rust in our gold or silver, no moth, nor pride in our garment, no lewdnesse in our liberty, no hand against the wall, no flying Roll against the stone or beame of the house, no gravell in our bread, no gall in our drink, no snare on our table, no feares in our bed, no destruction in our prosperity; in all estates we can rejoyce, we can doe and suffer all through Christ that strengtheneth us. We are *under the custody of peace*; it keepes our hearts and mindes from feares of enemies, and maketh us serve the Lord with confidence, boldnesse and security, *Pbit. 4. 7. The workes of righteinesse are in peace, and the effect of righteinesse is quietnesse and assurance for ever.*

Note fourthly, from both these, that is, from a peace grounded in righteousness, needes must *Blessednesse* result, for it is the blessednesse of a creature to be reunited, and one with his Maker, to have all controversie ended, all distances swallowed up, all partitions taken downe, and therefore the Apostle useth *Righteousnesse and Blessednesse* as termes promiscuous. All men seeke for blessednesse, it is the summe and collection of all desires, a man loveth nothing but in order and subordination unto that. And by nature we are all children of wrath, and held under by the curse; so many sinnes have we committed, so many deaths and curses have we heaped upon our soules, so many walls of separation have we set up betweene us and God, who is the fountaine of blessednesse. Till all they be covered, removed, forgiven and forgotten, the creature cannot be blessed: *Blessed are they whose iniquities are forgiven, and whose sinnes are covered, Rom. 4. 7.* All the benedictions which we have from the most High God come

come unto us from the intercession and mediation of Christ. His Sacrifice and Prayers give us interest in the All-sufficiency of him that is above all, and so are a security unto us against all adverse power or feare, for what or whom need that man feare, that is one with the most high God? *If God be for us, who can be against us? Rom. 8.31.* When God blesseth, his blessing is ever with effect and successe, it cannot be reversed, it cannot be disappointed: *Hath he said, and shall he not doe it? Or hath he spoken, and shall he not make it good? Behold, saith Balaam, I have received commandement to blasse, and he hath blessed, and cannot reverse it, Numb. 23. 19, 20.*

Note fifthly, from *Melchisedechs* meeting *Abraham* returning from the slaughter of the Kings, we may observe the great forwardnesse that is in Christ to meet and to blesse his people, when they have been in his service. *Thou meetest him th & rejoicest and worketh righteousness, Esay 64. 5. I said I will confesse my sinnes, and thou forgavest the iniquity of my sinne, Psalm. 32. 5.* No sooner did *David* resolve in his heart to returne to God, but presently the Lord prevented him with his mercy, and anticipated his servants confession with pardon and forgiveness; *Thou preventest him with the blessing of goodness, Psal. 21. 3.* As the father of the Prodigall, when he was yet a great way off, farre from that perfection which might in strictnesse be required, yet because he had set his face homeward, and was now resolved to sue for pardon and readmittance; when he saw him, he had compassion, and ranne (the fathers mercy was swifter than the sonnes repentance) and fell on his neck and kissed him, *Luke 15. 20.* We doe not finde the Lord so hasty in his punishments; He is slow to anger, and doth not stirre up all his wrath together. He is patient and long suffering, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance; he comes, and he comes againe, and the third year he forbears, before he cuts

VERSE 4.

downe a barren tree : But when he comes with a blessing, he doth not delay, but prevents his people with goodnesse and mercy. O how forward ought we to be to serve him, who is so ready to meeete us in his way, and to blesse us?

Note fixtly, from the refection and preparations which *Melchisedeck* made for *Abraham* and for his men, we may observe, That *Christ as King and Priest is a comforter and refresher of his people in all their spirituall wearinesse*, and after all their services. This was the end of his *Unction*, to heale, and to comfort his people. The Spirit of the Lord is upon me; because he hath anointed me to preach the Gospel to the poore, he hath sent me to heale the broken-hearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and a recovering of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised, and to preach the acceptable yeaue of the Lord, *Luke. 4. 18, 19.* To provide a feast of fatted things, of Wines on the lees, of fat things full of marrow, of Wines on the lees well refined, *Eesai. 25. 6.* To milke out unto his people consolation and abundance of Glory, *Eesai. 66. 11.* To speake words in season to those that are weary, and to make broken and dry bones to rejoyce and to flourish like an herb, *Eesai. 50. 4. Psalm. 51. 8. Eesai 66. 14.*

And this is a strong argument to hold up the patience, faith, and hope of men in his service, and in all spirituall assaults; we have a *Melchisedeck* which after our combate is ended, and our victory obtained, will give us refreshments at the last, and will meeete us with his mercies: If we faint not, but waite a while, we shall see the salvation of the Lord, that in the end he is very pittifull and ostender mercy, *Exod. 14. 13. 7am. 5. 11.* He is neere at hand, his comming draweth nigh: He is neere that justifieth me, who will contend with me? Let us stand together. Who is mine adversary? Let him come neere to me. The readinesse of the Lord to helpe is a ground of challenge

The Priesthood of Christ.

473

VERSE 4.

challenge and defiance to enemies, *Phil.* 4. 5. *James.* 5. 8. *Esay.* 50. 8, 9. *Job* went forth mourning, and had a great warre to fight; but the Lord blessed his later end more than his beginning, and after his battell was ended, met him like *Melchisedeck* with redoubled mercies. *David*, *Hazekiah*, *Heman* the *Ezrahite*, and many of the Saints after their example, have had sore and dismall conflicts, but at length their comforts have beene proportionable to their wrestlings, they never wanted a *Melchisedeck* after their combats to refresh them. *Rejoyce not against me, O mine enemy, when I fall I shall rise; when I sit in darknesse, the Lord shall be a light unto me: I will beare the indignation of the Lord, because I have sinned against him, untill he plead my cause and execute judgement for me; he will bring me forth to the light, and I shall behold his righteousness.* *Micah.* 7. 8, 9. He hath strength, courage, refection, spirit to put into those that fight his battelle; though they be but as *Abraham*, a family of three hundred men, against four Kings, yet he can cut *Rahab*, and wound the Dragon, and make a way in the Sea for the ransomed to passe over, and cause his Redeemed to returne with singing, and with joy and gladnesse upon their heads. *I, even I am he that comforteth you, who art thou that shouldest be afraid of a man that shall die, and of the sonne of man that shall be as grasse? Esay* 51. 12.

Note seventhly, from *Melchisedeck* receiving of Tithes from *Abraham* (which the Apostle taketh severall notice of four or five times together in one Chapter, *Hebr.* 7. 2, 4, 6, 8, 9. We may observe, That *Christ* is a receiver of homage and tribute from his people; There was never any type of *Christ*, as a Priest, but he received tithes; and that not in the right of any thing in himselfe, but merly in the vertue of his typicall office, so that originally they did manifestly pertaine to that principall Priest, whom these represented, whose personall * Priesthood is stand-

Hh 4

ding

* Dicit Aposto-
lus, Ad tempus
decimas Levi-
thae solutus fuisse,
quia non semper
viverent; Mel-
chis, vero quia
immortalis sit,
vivere usque in
finem quod a
Deo semel illi
datus est. Calv.
in Heb. 7. 8.

VERSE 4.

ding, unalterable, and eternall, and therefore the *rights* thereunto belonging are such too.

If it be objected, why then did not Christ in his life receive Tithes? I answer, first, because though he were the substance, yet the standing typical Priesthood was not abolished till after his ministry on earth was finished; for his Priesthood was not consummate till his sitting at the right hand of God: Secondly, because he tooke upon him a voluntary poverty for especiall reasons belonging to the state of his humiliation, and to the dispensation of mans Redemption, *2 Corinth. 8.9.* You will say, now Christs Priesthood is consummate, and he himselfe is in Heaven, whither no Tithes can be sent; therefore none are due, because he hath no typical Priests in earth to represent him. I answer, though he be in Heaven in his Body, yet he is on earth in his Ministry, and in the dispensation of the vertue of his Sacrifice; and the Ministers of the Gospell are *in his stead*, *2 Cor. 5.20* and ought to be received *as Christ himselfe*, *Gal. 4.14.* so then men are not by this excused from rendring Gods dues unto him; first, because there is in respect of him, whose Sacrifice we commemorate and shew forth to the people, due a *Festification of homage unto him*. Secondly, because in respect of us there is due a *Reward of our labour*, for the labourer is worthy of his hire. To lay all together in one view, in as much as all the Types of Christ, as Priests, have received *Tithes* as due, and in as much as that right was not grounded upon any thing in or from themselves, but upon their *Typicall Office*; and so did originally pertaine to the *Principall Priest*; whom they typified; and in as much as his Person and Office is *Eternall*, and therefore such are all the *annexa*, and dues thereof; and in as much as he hath no where dispensed with, or denied, or refused, or revoked this right which from him as the Principall all his types ever enjoyed: and lastly, in as much as he hath left to the Ministers of his

his Word, the dispensation of his Sacrifice, and made them his *Ambassadors*, and in his *stead*, to the Church, to set forth him crucified in his Ordinances: for my part I doe not see why unto them in the name and right of their Master, those rights should not be due, which were manifestly in his Types, and of which himselfe hath no where in his Word declared any revocation.

But not to enter upon any disputes or unwelcome controversies, thus much by the way I cannot but observe, that *these who labour in the Word and Doctrine, and therein are Ambassadors for Christ*, and stand in his stead to reveale the mysteries, and dispense the treasures of his blood in the Church, ought to have by way of homage to Christ, and by way of recompence and retribution to themselves a liberal maintenance, befitting the honour and dignity of that Person whom they represent, and of that service wherein they minister. The Apostle saith that they are worthy of *double honour*, both honour of reverence, and honour of maintenance: and doubtlesse the very Heathen shall rise up in judgment against many who profess the Truth, in both these respects: for the heathen themselves did shew so much honour to their devillish priests, that I remember one of the Roman Consuls seeing a Priest and some vestall virgins going on foot, and beriding on his Chariot, descended, and would not goe with it againe, till those diabollicall Votaries were first placed: Nay, their very Kings and Emperors in Greece, Egypt, Rome, &c. thought it one of their greatest honours to bee withall the Priests for the people. Amongst the Christians when the Synode of Nice was assembled by *Constantines* command, and some accusations, or (as the Historians calleth them) calumniationes were presented to the Emperour against some Bishops and Ministers, hee looked not on the particulars, but sealed them up with his owne signet, and having first reconciled the parties, commanded the libels to bee burnt, adding

V E R S E S.

1 Tim. 5. 17,
18. Lam. 4. 16.
Phil. 2. 29.
2 Cor. 1. 14.
Hos. 4. 4: Liv.
Alex. ab Alex.
lib. 2. cap. 8.

Clem. Alex. stro.
1. 7. Diador. &
cul. lib. 2.

Theodor. Hist.
1. 1. c. 11. Sozom.
lib. 1. cap. 8.

V. 3. R. 3. A.

*Vita Episcoporum
sibi, fama
aliis necessaria.
Aug.*

adding withall, that if he should himselfe see a Bishop in adultery, he would cover his nakednesse, with his owne royall robe; because, saith he, the sinnes of such men ought not to be divulged, least their examples doe as much hurt to the soules of others, as their fact to their owne: for as a good life is necessary for themselves, so is their good fame necessary for others. The meaning of that noble Prince was, not that such mens sinnes should goe unexamined or exempted from punishment, but to shew both in how high honour they who are worthy in that function ought to be had for their workes sake, 1 *Thess.* 5. 12. 13. and how wary men should be in giving liberty to their tongues of distemper'd passions to censure, misreport, or scandalize the persons and parts of such men, against whom *Timothy* was not to receive an accusation without two or three witnesses, 1 *Tim.* 5. 19. And to give notice of those ill consequences which would ensue upon the public observation of the sinnes of those men, who in their doctrine preach the Truth, and build up the Church. For doubtlesse of other men who preach lies in hypocrisie, there cannot too much of their secret villanies, and personall uncleannesse be detected, that so the lewdnesse of their lives may stop the progresse and growth of their evil doctrine.

But to returne to the point that I am upon, *liberall maintenance is due* to those that labour in the Word and Doctrine, out of Justice, and not out of mercy, for their workes sake. I will not presse the examples of heathen themselves in this duty, for the shame of Christians. We finde that the Priests of Egypt had portions out of the kings owne treasures, and that their lands were still reserved unto them, *Gen.* 47. 22. And we finde besides these lands, that they had the third part of all yearely tributes and levies, as *Diodorus Siculus* tels us. But we will first looke upon the example of Gods owne Priests and Levites under the Law. Secondly, upon the precepts

Plin. l. 1. c. 14.
Alex. ab *Alex.*
l. 3. c. 22.

Diod. Sicul. l. 2.

cepts and commands of the Gospel: God is not lesse mindefull of Ministers under the Gospel, than of those under the Law. Now then, if you will believe that a liberrall maintenance is now by God allotted unto us, looke what he did allot to them. First, looke upon the proportion of their persons; and then upon the proportion of their maintenance. For their persons, it would not be hard to prove that the Tribe of *Levi*, though the thirteenth part of the people in regard of their civill division, were not yet the fortieth part of the people. Look into the numbring of them, and compare, *Numb. 1.46* with *Numb. 3.39*. The other Tribes were numbred from twenty yeares old and upward, all that were able to beare armes, which was to the age of fifty yeares, as *Iosephus* reports; for at that age they were supposed to be unserviceable for warre; and yet thus their number amounted to six hundred and three thousand five hundred and fifty men able to goe to warre. The Levites on the other side were numbred from one moneth old and upward, and yet the whole summe amounted but to twenty two thousand. Now conjecture the number of those in the other Tribes who were under twenty yeares of age, and who were too old for warlike service to be but halfe as many as the rest, yet the whole number of the Tribes reckoned from their infancy upward will amount at the least to nine hundred two thousand men. Of which number, the number of the Levites is just the one and fortieth part. After we finde that they increased to a mighty number more, *1 Chron. 33.3*. but the whole people increased accordingly, for the Tribe of *Judah* which was before but seventy foure thousand was then five hundred thousand, and in *Iehoshaphats* time eleven hundred thousand at least, *2 Samuel. 24. 2 Chron. 7.* well then, the Levites were but the fortieth part of the people (not so much) so that that Tribe was but almost a quarter as numerous as the rest. Now looke

*Vid. Seldens
Review of his
History, sup. 2.*

V. 11. 4.

looke in the next place to the *Proportion of their maintenance*. One would thinke that the fortieth part of the people could require but the fortieth part of the maintenance in proportion. But first, they had the *Tenth of all the increase* of seed, and fruit, and great and small cattell, *Levit. 27. 30*. Secondly, they had *forty eight Cities* with suburbs for gardens and for cattell, *Numb. 35. 2*. Which Cities were next to the best, and in many Tribes the best of all; in *Juda, Hebron*, in *Benjamin, Gibeon*, both royal Cities. So that those Cities with about a mile suburbe to every one of them can come to little lesse than the wealth of one Tribe alone, in that little Countrey, which from *Dan* to *Beerseba* was but about a hundred and sixty miles long. Thirdly, they had all the *first fruits* of cleane and uncleane beasts, *Numb. 18. 13*. Of the fruits of the earth, and the fleece of the sheepe, *Deut. 18. 4. Nehem. 10. 35*. of men to be redeemed, *Numb. 18. 15*. Fourthly, the meate Offerings, the sinne offerings, the trespass offerings, the heave offerings, and the wave offerings, were all theirs. *Numb. 18. 9. 10. 11*. Fifthly, they had all *womes, and voluntary oblations*, and consecrations, and every hallowed thing, *Numbers 18. 8. 9*. Sixthly, excepting the *Holocaust* they had either the shoulder, or the breast, or the skinne, or *something of every sacrifice* which was offered, *Numb. 18. 18. Levit. 7. Deut. 18. 3*. Seventhly, the males were to appeare three times a yeare before the Lord, and they were not to come empty handed, *Exod. 23. 15. 17*. Lastly, unto them did belong many *recompences of injury*, which was the restitution of the principall, and a fifth part, *Numb. 5. 7. 8*. Now put the Tithes, the Cities and these other constant revenues together, and the Priests and Levites, who were but about a quarter as many as one Tribe, and yet about three times the Revenues of one Tribe.

But to leave this argument. Let us consider what the Apostle saith; *Let him that is taught in the word commu-*

nicate

nicate to him that teacheth, ἐν πᾶσι ἀγαθοῖς, in all his goods; as Beza well expounds it, Galat. 6.6. The Elders that labour in the Word and Doctrine are worthy of double honour, for the Scripture saith, Thou shalt not muzzle the Oxe that treadeth out the Corne, and the Labourer is worthy of his reward, 1 Tim. 5.17,18. Who goeth a warfare at any time of his owne charges? Who planteth a Vineyard and eateth not of the fruit thereof, Or who feedeth a flocke, and eateth not of the milke of the flocke? Say I these things as a man (that is, am I partiall? doe I speake meereely out of affection, and humane favour to mine owne cause, or calling? or saith not the Law the same also? For it is written in the Law of Moses, Thou shalt not muzzle the mouth of the Oxe that treadeth out the Corne. Doth God take care for Oxen? or saith he is altogether for our sakes? That is, doth God provide Lawes for rewarding and encouraging the labour of brute beasts, and doth he leave the maintenance and honour of his owne immediate Officers to the arbitrary and pinching allowances of covetous and cruell men? For our sakes (no doubt) this is written, That he that ploweth should plow in hope, and that he that thresheth in hope should be partaker of his hope. That is, that the encouragement of the Ministers in their service might depend upon such a hope as is grounded on Gods Law and provision, and that they might not be left to the wills and allowances of those men against whose sinnes they were sent. And this the Apostle proveth by an argument drawne from a most unanswerable equity. If we have sowed unto you spiritual things, is it a great thing if we shall reape your carnall things? If you doe rightly judge of those heavenly treasures which we bring in abundance unto you, impossible it is that you should judge our paines and service towards your immortal and pretious soules sufficiently rewarded with a narrow and hungry proportion of earthly and perishable things. Doe yee not know that they which minister about holy things,

VERSE 4.

things, live of the things of the Temple? And they which waite at the Altar are partakers with the Altar (to note that they receive their maintenance from the hand of God himselfe, whose onely the things of the Altar are, and not from men:) Even so hath the Lord ordained, that they which preach the Gospell should live by the Gospell, 1 Cor. 9.7.13. And what is it To live? First, They must live as men, they must have for necessity and for delight. Secondly, they must live as believers. He that provideth not for his owne is worse than an Infidell, 1 Tim. 5.8. They must therefore have by the Gospell sufficient to lay up for those, whom the Law of common humanity, much more of faith, commands them to provide for. Thirdly, they must live as Ministers. They must have wherewith to maintaine the Duties of their calling, a good example of Piety, and Charity, and Hospitality, that they may confirme by practice, what in Doctrine they teach, 1 Timot. 3.2. And the instruments of their calling, which in a profession of so vast and unlimited a compasse of learning, (for there is no part of learning in the whole circle thereof which is not helpfull and may not contribute to the understanding of Holy Scriptures, and to some part or other of a Divines employment;) cannot but be very chargeable. And alas, how many men preach the Gospell, and yet can scarce finde the first and meanest of all these supplies? This is the great ingratitude of the world, and withall the Malice and policy of Satan, by the poverty and contempt of the Ministers, to bring the Gospell it selfe into contempt, and to deterre able men from adventuring on so unrewarded a calling, as Calvin justly complaines. All that can with colour or countenance be pretended by those who are guilty of this neglect is Poverty and disability to maintaine the Gospell. And it were well if there were not places to be found wherein Dogs and Horses, Hawkes and Hounds grow fat with Gods portion, and the mercenary Preacher,

cher, when he growes leane with want, is accused of too much study. But suppose that poverty be truly alleaged: Doe we thinke poverty a just pretext for the neglect of a morall duty? may a man spend the Lords day on his shop-board, because he is poore and wants meanes? And if I may not rob God of his time upon pretence of poverty, neither then is the same any argument to rob him of his portion. Be not deceived, *God is not mocked, namely, with pretence of poverty and necessity*, as Calvin expounds that place, *Gal. 6.7.* Saint Paul beares witnesse unto some men, that they did good *beyond their power*, that they were richly liberall though they were deeply poore, *2 Cor. 8.2,3.* And yet those were but contributions out of mercy, whereas double honour is due to the Ministers of the Gospell by a Law of Justice. It is a wrong and foolish Apologie to pretend the punishment for the continuance of the fault. The poverty of many men is doubtlesse a just recompence for their neglect of the honour of the Gospell. (For God hath ever severely punished the contempt and dishonour done to his messengers, *2 Chron. 16.10,12.* *2 Chron. 24.21—25.* *2 Chron. 2.19,20.* *2 Chron. 36.16,17.*) Whereas on the other side, doe thou deale faithfully with God, fulfill to thy power his appointment and decree, that they which preach the Gospell may live by the Gospell, and then hearken unto God, *Honour the Lord with thy substance and the first fruits of all thine increase; so shall thy barnes be filled with plenty, and thy presses burst out with new Wine,* *Prov. 3.9,10.* Consider now from this day and upward, from the day that the foundation of the Lords Temple was laid consider it. Is the seed yet in the barne? *From this day I will blesse you,* *Hag. 2.18,19.* *Ye are cursed with a curse, for ye have robbed me, even this whole nation. Bring yee all the Tishes into the storehouse, that there may be meat in mine house, and prove me herewith saith the Lord of Hosts,* (if you will not doe it out of duty; yet doe it out of experi-

VERSE 4.

*Hic est astus Sa-
lara alimētis
fraudare pios
Ministros ut
Ecclesia salibus
destituatur &c.
Calvin in Gal.
6. 6. Sathan hac
orte sensit Do-
ctrinā privare
Ecclesiam, dum
inopia & famis
metu plurimos
absteres ne id
oneris susci-
piant. Idem in
1 Tim. 5. 17. vi.
Muscul in Gal.
6. 6. & in 1 Tim.
3. 2. Bish Few-
ells Sermons on
Hag. 1, 2, 3. 4.
pag. 181. 182.
on Psal. 69. 9.
pag. 191. 194.
Perkins in his
Sermon of be-
Davies and
Dignities of the
Ministry. Hoo-
ker Ecc. policy
lib. 5. Num. 79.
Hilderham on
Iob 4. pag 300.
201. 319. 323.
Bolton in his
epistle dedica-
tory to his dis-
course of true
happiness.
Greg. Iobolof.
de Repub.
lib 13. 6. 17.*

VERSE 4.

experiment) *If I will not open you the windowes of Heaven, and powre you out a blessing, that there shall not be roome enough to receive it, Mal. 3.9.12.* There was never any man lost by paying God his dues, there was never any man thrived by grudging, or pitting the Almighty. I will conclude this point with the Apostle. It is his *Docrine*; faithfull Ministers are worthy of double honour. And it is his *Exhortation*; Render to all their Dues, Tribute to whom Tribute, Custome to whom Custome, Feare to whom Feare, Honour to whom Honour, *Rom. 13.3.*

Note lastly, *The Priesthood of Christ is an everlasting Priesthood.* He also was without Father, and without mother, without beginning of dayes, or end of life. As man without a Father, as God without a Mother, *The same yesterday and to day, and for ever.* His name was *Everlasting Father*, His Gospell an *Everlasting Gospell*. He was a Lambe slaine from the beginning of the world. The vertue of his blood goes *backward* as high as *Adam*, He was fore-ordain'd before the foundation of the world, *2 Timot. 1.9.* The redemption of those that transgressed under the first Testament, the remission of sinnes that were past, were procured by this Sacrifice, *Hebr. 9. 15. Rom. 3. 25.* It goeth *downward* to the end of the world, he must raigne till all be put under his feet, and he must raise up all by the power and vertue of his victory over death, *John 5. 26. 29.* And lastly, it goeth *onward*, to all immortality; for though the *Acts* and administration of his Priesthood shall cease when he shall have delivered the Kingdome to his Father, and have brought the whole Church into Gods presence; yet the *vertue* and fruits of those Acts shall be absolutely eternall; for so long as the Saints shall be in heaven, so long they shall enjoy the benefit of that Sacrifice, which did purchase not a lease, or expiring term, but ζωὴν ἀκατάλυτον an *endless life*, an everlasting glory, an inheritance incorruptible, and that fadeth not away, reserved in the heaven for them.

Greg. Naz.
Orat. 36. de
Filio.

Heb. 13. 8.
Esa. 9. 6.
Revel. 14. 6.
1 Pet. 1. 19.

VERSE

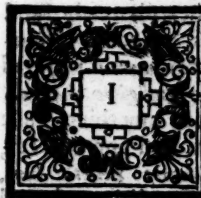


VERSE 5.

*The Lord at thy right hand, shall strike through Kings
in the day of his wrath.*

VERSE 6.

*He shall judge amongst the Heathen, He shall fill
the places with dead Bodies : He shall wound the
heads over many Countries.*



IN the former part of the Psalm we have had the description of Christs offices of *King* and *Priest*, together with the effect thereof in gathering a *willing* people unto himselfe. Now here the Prophet sheweth another effect of the powerfull administration of these Offices, containing his *victories* over all his *Enemies*, allegorically expressed in an *Hypotyposis*, or lively allusion unto the manner of humane victories ; wherein first I shall in a few words labour to cleare the sense, and then the observations which are naturall, will the more evidently arise.

[*The Lord at thy right hand.*] To lay aside their exposition who understand these words of God the Father :

VER. 56.

the words are an *Apostrophe* of the Prophet to those at whose right hand the Lord JESUS is. Some make it an *Apostrophe* to God the Father, a triumphall and thankfull prediction of that Power and Judgement, which he hath given to this his *Benjamin*, the Sonne at his right hand. Because that thereby the phrase retaineth the same signification and sense which it had in the first verse. As if *David* had said, O God, the Father of all Power and Majestie, worthy art thou of all praise, thanksgiving, and honour, who hath given such Power to thy Sonne, in the behalfe of thy Church, as to smite through Kings, and judge Heathen, and pull downe the chiefe of his enemies, and to subdue all things to himselfe; and these reade it thus, O Lord, he that is at thy right hand shall strike through Kings, &c. Others make it to be an *Apostrophe* to the Church, and so to be a phrase not expressing Christs exaltation, as verse 1. But his care and protection over his Church, his readinesse to assist and defend his owne People against all the injuries and assaults of adverse power. *Solomon* saith, *A wise mans heart is at his right hand, but a fooles heart is at his left, Eccles. 10. 2.* That is, his heart is ready, and prepared to execute any wise counsels, or godly resolutions; as the Prophet *David* saith, *My heart is prepared O God, my heart is prepared, I will sing and give thanks.* But a fooles heart when he should doe any thing is like his left hand, so seeketh skill, unactive and unprepared; when he walketh by the way his heart faileth him, verse 3. And this readinesse and present helpe of God to defend and guide his Church, is expressed frequently by his being at the right hand thereof. *Because the Lord is at my right hand, I shall not be moved, Psalm. 16. 8.* *He shall stand at the right hand of the poore to save him, Psalm 109. 3. 1.* *If the Lord thy God will, hold thy right hand, saying unto thee, I succour thee, I will helpe thee, Esai. 31. 13.* As if *David* had said, Be not dismayed nor cast downe

downe. O yee Subjects of this King, as if being exalted to Gods right hand, he had given over the care and protection of his people: For he is at the right hand of his Father in Glory and Majesty; so is he at your right hand too; standing to execute judgement on your enemies, and to reveale the power of his Arme towards you in your protection.

Now the reasons of this phrase and expression, as I conceive, are these two: First, to note that Christs power, providence, and protection, doe not exclude, but onely strengthen, assist, and prosper the ordinary and just endeavours of the Church for themselves. The Lord is not at our left hand to succour us in our idlenesse and negligence, but at our working hand, to give successe to our honest endeavours. The sword of the Lord doth not fight without the sword of Gedeon, *Judg.* 7. 18. In the miracles of Christ, when he fed and feasted men, he never created Wine or Bread of nothing, but blessed, and so changed or multiplyed that which was by humane industry prepared before. Our Saviour had Fish and Bread of his owne, and yet he would have his Disciples put in their net and catch, and bring of their owne, to note unto us, that Gods power and providence, must not exclude, but encourage mans industry, *Iohn.* 21. 9, 10. He protecteth us in *visu nostris*, *non in precipitiis*, in our wayes, not in our precipices or presumptions, *Psal.* 92. 11. So long then as the Church is valiant and constant in withstanding the enemies of her peace and prosperity, God is undoubtedly with her to blesse that courage, and to strengthen that right hand; so long as *Moses* held up his hand, God fought for Israel. There was *Jashna's* sword, or *Moses* his hand or prayer; and upon those Gods blessings, *Exod.* 17. 12, 13. And they were all to concur. If the Sword should cease, the Prayer would doe no good; for God will not be tempted: If the Prayer faint, the sword is in vaine, for God will not be

VER. 5, 6.

neglected. As in a curious Clocke, stop any wheele, and you hinder the whole motion. If God promise to be present, *Iosua* must promise to be courageous, *Iosb.* 1. 5. 6. 9.

Secondly, to note unto us the care and militarie wisdom of Christ our Captaine, to meeete with, and prevent our enemies, and to intercept their blowes against us; for we may observe in the Scripture, that *Satan plyeth the right hand of the Church*, laboureth to weaken and assault us, where there is most danger towards him. Let *Satan stand at his right hand*, *Psal.* 109. 6. That is, give him over to the rage of Satan, that he may be hurried to execute his will. Thus *Satan stood at the right hand of Iosuah the high Priest to resist him*, *Zech.* 3. 1. Noting the assiduous and indefatigable endeavours of Satan to resist, disappoint, and overthrow the workes of the worthies in Gods Church. (*I would have come unto you, even I Paul, once and againe, but Satan hindered us*, *1 Thes.* 2. 18.) And to divert the strength of men upon his service. And therefore to rebuke him, and to shew to the Church that our strength is from him, and due unto him; he also stands there to outvie the temptations and impulsions of Satan.

These are the two expositions which are given of these words, *The Lord at thy right hand*. Now though of all places of Scripture there is indeed but one littall sense; yet when two are given, which both tend unto the same generall scope, and are suitable not onely to the analogy of faith, but to the meaning mainly aimed at by the Holy Ghost in the place, and when there is no apparent evidence in the face of the Text, for preferring one before the other: I thinke it is not unfit to embrace both; and so something I shall touch upon both senses.

Shall strike through, or wound, or make gore bloody, Kings in the day of his wrath.] The word is, *Hash stricken through Kings*. It is a Prophecie of things future, spoken

The Victory of Christ.

487

VERS. 56.

is of things to be done. *To strike thorow*, notes a complete victory and full confusion of the enemy, an incurable wound, that they may stagger, and fall, and rise up no more, and that affliction may not arise a second time, *Nahum* 1.9.1 *Sam.* 26.8. The only difficulty is, what is meant by *Kings*; for which we must note that the Kingdom of Christ is spiritual, and his warr spiritual, and therefore his enemies for the most part spiritual. Therefore I take it, we are hereby to understand the most potent enemies of Christ; whether *spiritual*, we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities and powers, and spiritual wickedness in high places *Ephes.* 6.12. 2 *Cor.* 10.4. Or *Carnal*, as beathen and wicked men, *Psal.* 2.8,9. The fat and the strong enemies of the Church, *Ezek.* 34.16. Our spiritual enemies in Scripture are called *Kings*. Satan, the *Prince of this world*, the God of this world, the *Prince of the power of the aire*. The *King of the locusts*, &c. Sin and original concupiscence is a *King*. Let not *sin* reigne in your mortal bodies. And the *Earthly enemies* of Christ are called *Kings*. The *ten Horns*, that is, *ten Kings* make warr with the Lamb. The *Kings of the earth stood up*, and the rulers were gathered together against the Lord and his Christ; and *Death*, which is the last enemy, is a *King*. The *King of Terrors*, that reigneth over men. And over all these *Kings* do the victories of Christ reach. Some by *Kings*, understand the Roman Emperors (who are called *Kings*, 1 *Pet.* 2.13.17.) And their overthrow for persecuting the Church. But since all sorts of Christs enemies are called *Kings* in Scripture, and all of them do push at his Kingdom in the Church, I see no ground why we may not by *Kings*, understand them all, with their subjects, armies, and associates. As in great victories the Lords and principal men are said to be overcome, when the servants and souldiers are routed and slain.

In the day of his wrath.] That is, when time hath ripened

Ioh. 16.11.
2 *Cor.* 4.4.
Eph. 2.2.
Rev. 9.11.
Rev. 17.12,14.
Psal. 2.9.
Act. 16.27.
1 *Cor.* 2.8.

VERS. 5, 6.

pened the insolency and malice of the enemy, when his fury is fully stirred up and provoked, when the just and full time of his glory is come; That it may appear that they are overcome, not by time, or chance, or humane power, or secular concurrence, but onely by the power of his wrath he will do it. Christ is never destitute of power, but in wisdom he hath ordered the times of his Church, when to have his Church suffer and bear witness to him, and when to triumph in his deliverances. So the meaning of this clause is this, when the day of recompence is come, when the sins and provocations of his enemies are ripe, when the utmost period of his patience is expired, *ἐν ἀποδοσει*, in the fixed and unmoveable day which he hath set, be the probabilities never so poor, and preparations never so small, the expectations never so low, the means in humane view never so impossible, yet then by his wrath he will utterly and incurably wound his enemies, both spiritual and temporal, that they shall not rise a second time.

He shall judge amongst the Heathen.] The word Judgment noteth both Government and Punishment. *The Lord shall judge his people, and repent himself for his servants, when he seeth that their power is gone; Deut. 32. 36.* There to judge, noteth Government. *The Lord standeth up to plead and so judge his people, Esai. 3. 13.* That Nation whom they serve, will I judge. *Gen. 15. 14.* There to judge, noteth punishment. Here it is taken for executing condemnation upon the contumacious adversaries of the Gospel of Christ amongst the Gentiles, as in the great victory of Gog and Magog, *Ezek. 39.* Some by Gentiles, understand all Enemies, both spiritual, and earthly.

He shall fill the places with dead bodies.] That notes both the swiftness of the victory, and the greatness of the victory. That it shall be so general and so speedy, that the enemy shall have either none left, or they that are

Glossum in Isai.
63 6.

The Victory of Christ.

489

VERS. 5, 6.

are left shall not be able, nor have leasure to bury their dead bodies, *Ezek. 39. 11.*

He shall wound the head over divers Countries.] That is, either the principal of his enemies every where; or Satan who is the God of the World, that ruleth as Head over the children of disobedience in all places. Or Antichrist the Head of nations, the chief of Gods enemies, *Rev. 13. 7, 8. 14. 8. 17. 15-18.*

The Lord at thy right hand:] According to the twofold Apoptrophe before mentioned, here are two observations which I will but touch. First, That God the Father is worthy to have all the power, Majesty, and judgement which he hath given to his Son our Mediator, for our protection, salvation and defence, most thankfully and triumphantly acknowledged to him. We find our Saviour himself praising God in this behalf, that he had delivered all things into his hand, even power to make Babes beleve on him, *Matth. 11. 25. 27.* And this *S. Paul* is frequent in, namely in praising and glorifying God for Christ. O wretched man that I am, who shall deliver me, &c. *I thank God through Jesus Christ our Lord, Rom. 7. 25. 1 Tim. 1. 16, 17.* All the promises of God are in him yea, and in him Amen, *to the Glory of God by us, 2 Cor. 1. 19, 20.* He gave himself for our sins, that he might deliver us from this present evil world according to the will of God and our Father, *to whom be glory for ever and ever, Amen: Gal. 1. 4, 5.* Every tongue must confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, *to the glory of God the Father, Phil. 2. 11.*

And reason there is that it should thus be acknowledged to the Father, because he hath all his Kingdom and power in the Church from the Father. *All power is given unto me. He hath given him a name above every name;* and this the Son hath revealed to us, that so he might manifest the name, that is, get glory to his Father thereby, *Joh. 17. 6, 7.* For in Christ it was God that recon-

*Hab. 3. 13.
Psal. 68. 21.*

VERS. 5, 6.

ciled the world to himself. Secondly, he hath it all given unto him in our nature, in our behalf, and as our Head, so that we in the gifts of God to him were onely respected, and therefore we have reason to praise God for them. It was not indeed given to him strictly (for it was not to him *Beneficium*, but *Onus*, an office, but not a benefit) but to him for us, or to us, in and by him. In all the victories, deliverances, refreshments, experiences of Gods power and goodness, we must ever remember to praise God in and through his Son, to acknowledge the power of his right hand, which is not now against his Church, but against the enemies of his Church. For therefore the deliverance of his Church is ascribed to Gods *Right hand*, because he hath there one to plead, to intreat, to move his right hand in our behalf. Therefore in all our distresses, in all conflicts and temptations, we must by faith look up *unto Gods right hand*, put him in remembrance of that faithfulness, righteousness, atonement, and intercession which is there made in our behalf. There we shal have matter enough to fill our mouths and hearts with praises, and triumph, and rejoicing in him. *It is Christ who is at the right hand of God; who shall separate us from the love of Christ? Rom; 8. 34, 35.* Here are two arguments of the Churches safety and triumph. The *Love* of Christ, and the *Honour* of Christ. He loveth all his to the end. But what good can love doe without power? Therefore he that loveth us is exalted by God, and hath all power given him for this purpose, that his love may do us good. In the conflicts of my corruptions (which are an adversary too wise, too subtle, too numberless for me to vanquish) I may yet when I am driven to *Pauls* extremity, rest in his thanksgiving, and looking up to Jesus who will be the finisher of every good work which he begins, and seeing him at Gods right hand, may triumph in the power and office which God hath given to his Son there, which

is, to subdue our iniquities, and to sanctifie us by his Truth, and by that residue of Spirit which he keepeth for the Church, *Joh. 17. 17, 19.* for that Prayer is a Model, as it were, and counterpane of Christs Intercession: for, saith he, *I come to thee, and speak these things in the world, that they may have my joy fulfilled in them, ver. 13.* that is, that they having a specimen and form of that Intercession which with thee I shall make for them, left upon publike record for them to look on, and there finding that their sanctification is the businesse of my sitting at thy right hand, may in the midst of the discomforts and conflicts of their corruption have a full joy and triumph in the honour which thou hast given me. I am beset with the temptations of mine enemies, and persecutions for the name of Christ; In this case I may give God praise for the power which he hath given to his Son, I may from mine enemies appeale unto Gods right hand, I may like *Stephen*, when the stones and buffets are about my soule, look up by faith, and see there my Captain standing up in my defence, *Act. 7. 55.* I may acknowledge unto God the power given unto his Son, that though nothing of all this fall upon me without his provision and permission, yet sure I am that he hath power and mercy in his right hand, that though mine enemies were as strong as a combination and army of Kings, yet the Lord at his right hand hath from him in my behalf received power enough, to strike through Kings when the day of his wrath is come.

Note, secondly, Christ is at the right hand of his people, present with them, and prepared to defend them from all their enemies, *present by his Spirit* to strengthen, comfort, and uphold them, enabling them to glory and rejoice in all their sufferings, as knowing that they are but for a moment, and that which is needfull to *purge their faith*, and to make them bear their shame, *1 Pet. 1. 6, 7, Jam. 1. 2, 3. Isai, 27, 8, 9.* and to glorifie the
confe-

VERS. 5, 6.

consequent power of Christ, which shall be revealed to their joy, 1 Pet. 4. 13. when he will recompence double to us in mercy, and to our enemies in severity, *Eesai. 54. 7, 8. 61. 7. present by his mighty power, and by his Angels to rescue, deliver, and protect them, to be as a wall of fire, as a shield, a buckler, a rock, a Captain to his people, Zech. 2. 5.*

And this is the ground of all the Churches comfort, that more is with them than against them: the enemies have combinations and confederacies of men, but the Church hath *Immanuel*, God with them, *Eesai. 8. 9, 10.* none can pull Christ from the right hand of God, or from the right hand of his people: that is, none can take away either his power or his love from his people. The Church and truth can never be crushed and overthrown, no more than a Rock with the raging of the waves: they are *Heavenly things*, and therefore nothing of earth or hel can reach to corrupt them. It was but a vain attempt of the Gyants to build a tower to heaven: The world was made that there might be therein a Church to worship and contemplate that God which made it; therefore in the creation God never rested till he came to a Church, to note that that was the end thereof; and therefore it is easier to pull down the world, and to shake in pieces the frame of nature, than to ruine the Church: The Church hath Christ for her husband, he to whom all knees must bend, he whom every tongue must confess, he who will subdue all things to himself; so she hath Love, Power, and jealousy, all three very strong things on her side. And therefore the only way to be safe, is to keep Christ at our right hand, to hold fast his truth, worship, and obedience; for so long as we have *Immanuel*, all adverse power is but flesh, and all flesh is but grass, withered in a moment when God wil blow upon it.

Note thirdly, *Christ in his appointed time will utterly over.*

overthrow the greatest enemies of his Kingdome, and deliver his Church from under the sorest oppressions. There is not any one argument in the Holy Scriptures more frequently repeated, than this of Christs victories: prefigured they were in the deliverances of Israel out of Egypt, 1 Cor. 10. 2. 4. In the deliverance of the Ark out of the waters, 1 Pet. 3. 21, 22. in the deliverance of the Jews from Babylon, Revel. 14. 8: Esai. 11. 10. 12: 15. To note that in the sorest extremities, and greatest improbabilities, God will shew himself jealous for his people. This victory is expressed by treading of a wine-press, Esai. 63. 1. 6. when there are none to help, when the Church is brought to sorest extremities, though multitudes meet against her, as many as the grapes in a vintage, they shall all be but as clusters of grapes, he shall squeeze out their blood like Wine, and make his Church to thresh them, Lament. 1. 15: Revel. 14. 20. Joel 3. 12. Mic. 4. 13. By the dissipation of smoke out of a chimney, they shall be as the smoke out of the chimney Hos. 13. 3. As Athanasius used to say to Julian the Apostate, that he was but *Nubecula que cito transiret*, a little cloud, which would quickly bee blown away. Smoke when it breaks out of a chimney with a horrible blackness, threatneth to blot out the Sunne, and to invade and choake up all the aire, but a little blast of wind scattereth it, and anon nothing thereof appears. By fire consuming Thornes and Briers, Esai. 10. 17. While they be folded together as Thornes, and while they are drunken as drunkards, that is, while they have polluted their counsels, and confederacies so curiously, that no man dares so much as touch them; and while they are drunken with the pride and confidence of their own strength, they shall then be devoured as stubble that is fully dry, Nahum 1. 10. Esai. 27. 4. 21. 9.

Therefore the scripture calleth Christ a *Man of War*. Exod. 15. 3. Because he is furnished with all Arts of victory,

VERS. 5, 6.

story, *Power invincible*, as a Lyon amongst she pheardes, so is he amongst his enemies. *Eesai. 31. 4. wisdom unsarchable*, which must stand, *verse 1, 2.* If he purpose, none can disappoint him, *Eesai. 14. 27. Authority* by the least intimation to gather together all the forces of the world against the enemies of his Church. If he but hiss unto them, they presently come in troops, *Eesai 5. 26. 7 18.* He can command help from his people, *Psal. 44. 4. Psal. 71. 3. Jer. 47. 7.* and if that should fail, he can create help for his people, as he did for *Israel*, when he wrought miracles to deliver them, *Psal. 106. 22.*

We may more profitably consider the truth and comfort of this point, by discovering it in the several enemies of Christ and his people. First, the great enemy of the seed of the Woman, is the *Serpent*, that great red Dragon, whose names are all names of enmity. The *Accuser*, the *Tempter*, the *Destroyer*, the *Devourer*, the *Envious man*, furnished with *much strength*, and mighty succour, Legions of principalities and powers attending on him; and with *much wisdom*, which the Scripture calleth *voluntarie*, the wiles, and traines, and craftinesse of Satan. And his Arts of destroying men are two. To tempt and to *accuse*. His Temptations are two-fold: either unto *Sin*, or unto *Discomfort*: either to make us offend God, or to make us disquiet our selves: either to wound us, or to vex us. And in all these his Arts, Christ our Captain will tread him under our feet, and will give his Church the victory at the last, either by *Arming us with sufficiency of grace and faith in his victories*, putting us by his spirit, in mind of his temptations, which taught him compassion towards us, who are so much weaker, and encouraging our hearts to cry out unto him who is our merciful and compassionate High-Priest, like a ravished woman, in our extremities, as *Paul* did, *2 Cor. 12. 8, 9.* stirring up our faith to lay hold on him when we are in darkness; and the Spirit of Adoption to cry unto

unto him when we are in danger; and the Spirit of wisdom to solve the objections, to discern the devices of Satan, and to prepare and arme our hearts accordingly to wrestle with him. Or else by rebuking of him, pulling in his chaine, and chafing him away, and as our second, undertaking the combate in person for us, when he is ready to prevaile, *Zech. 3. 1. 2.* Thus he overcommeth him as a *Tempter*, and ever giveth some, either comfortable or profitable issue out of them.

He likewise overcommeth him as an *Accuser*. Satan accuseth the Saints, either by way of complaint and narration of the things which they have done. *Revel. 12. 10.* which the Apostle calleth *ἐγκλησις*, his laying of crimes to the charge of men, *Rom. 8. 33.* and thus Christ overcommeth him by his *Intercession*, and in the hearts of his Saints; by making them judge and accuse themselves, that they may be able to cleare themselves too, *1 Cor. 11. 31. 2 Cor. 7. 11.* Or he accuseth by way of *suspition or preconcertare*, as he did *Job*, *Job 1. 9. 10. 11.* and herein likewise Christ overcommeth him in his Servants, by permitting him to tempt and vex them, that they may come the purer out of the fire, and by putting a holy suspicion and jealousy into them over their owne hearts, which may still be a meanes to prevent them against evils that are likely to assault them, to teach them in every condition, as well possible as present, how to walke acceptably before God, *Phil 4. 11. 13.*

Another great enemy of the Kingdome of Christ is, the lust of our owne evill nature. *The carnall minde is enmitie against God, for it is not subject to the Law of God, neither indeed can be.*, *Rom. 8. 7. Phil. 3. 8.* Enmitie in grieving, vexing, and quenching the Holy Spirit in us, and lusting enviously against his Grace, *1 Jam. 4. 4, 5.* And here also Christ overcommeth, by the prevailing power of his Spirit; giving us more Grace, demolishing the kingdome of sinne, and judging the Prince of this world, which

VER. 56.

which before did rule in the children of disobedience. And this he doth by the Judgement Seat, and Scepter of his Spirit in the heart; for the judgement of the Spirit is too hard for the principality of Satan, *John. 16.11.* The Spirit of Christ is a *victorious Spirit*. He bringeth forth his *Judgement unto victory*, *Matth. 12.20. Esai. 4.4.* He worketh out by degrees the drosse and impurity of our nature, and services. First, by faith fixing upon better promises and hopes than lust can make, *1 Job. 5.4. Heb. 11.24-26.* Secondly, by watchfulnesse, eying corruptions, and so stirring up those arguments and principles which are strongest against them, *Job. 31.1. Psal. 39.1.* Thirdly, by leading us to more acquaintance with God in knowledge, love, and communion, *Iob 22.31. 1 Job. 1.3.* and so fetching more wisdom and strength from him: for this is the way that we get all our strength, even by learning of him, *Phil. 4.12.* Fourthly, by inclining the heart to hate, and to complaine of corruptions, to bemoane it selfe, as *Paul* and *Ephraim* did, *Rom. 7.23. Marke. 9.24. Jer. 31.18.19.* Fifthly, by bringing the heart into the light, there to approve and judge its actions, *Job. 3.20* by setting it alwayes in Gods eye, that it may not sinne against him, *Psalme 16.8.* Sixthly, by convincing the heart of the beautie and excellencie of Grace, of the unlikenesse of sinne to God, and so making the soule more full of desires for the one, and against the other, *Esai. 26.8. Ezek. 36.31.* and thus kindling lust against lust, *Gal. 5.17.* Seventhly, by being alwayes a present Monitour and Watchman in the soule, to supply it with spirituall weapons, and reasonings against the temptations of lust, *Esai. 30.31. Job. 14.26.* Lastly, in one word, by daily supplies from the residue of Spirit which is in our head, whereby according to the proportion and exigence of the members, he sheweth into them, *Mal. 2.15. Phil. 1.19.* This is that seed, that leaven, that vitall infection, which is ever in the heart, setting it selfe against the

The Victory of Christ.

497

VI. 3, 6.

the workings and life of lust, and by little and little waisting it away as fire doth water.

The grand instrument of Satan and lust (who are the two leaders in this warre against Christ) is the *wicked world*. The power, malice, wisdom, learning, or any other, either naturall or acquired abilities of evill men: for even in an earthly respect by the word *Kings*, we are not onely to understand those Monarchs, and Princes of the earth, who set themselves against Christ; but all such as excell in any such worldly abilities as may further that opposition. It notes the strength, policy, pride, and greatness of minde, or scorne of subjection, in which is the heart against Christ. So that *King* here stands in opposition to *Subject*; they who reject Christs yoke, and breake his bonds asunder, and will not have him to raigne over them; those are the *Kings* in the Text. And these also will be smite through, and confound by the Power of his Word, and the strength of his Arme. The Lord gave the Word, great was the company of those that published it. *Kings of Armies did flye apace, and she that carried at home divided the spoyle, Psal. 68. 11. 12. Tophet is ordained of old, for the king it is prepared, Esai. 30. 33. Come, and gather your selves together unto the Supper of the great God. That ye may eate the flesh of Kings, and the flesh of Captaines, and the flesh of mighty men, and the flesh of horses, and of them that sit on them, and the flesh of all men, both free and bond, both small and great, &c. Revel. 19. 17. 18. As for those mine enemies which would not that I should raigne over them, bring them hither and slay them before me, Luke. 19. 27. Be wise now, ye Kings; be instructed ye Judges of the earth. Serve the Lord with feare, and joyce with trembling; kisse the Sonne lest he be angry, and ye perish from the way, when his wrath is kindled but a little. Thus the Lord overthroweth his Churches enemies, and protecteth it against all their greatest preparations, and most formidable power.*

Pf 2. 10, 11, 12

And

VER. 5, 6.

Greg. Naz. O.
ras. 4. in Juli-
an. 2.

Theodoret Hist.
l. 3. c. 20. Naz.
Orat. 4. Casar
Comm. lib. 1.

And this he doth severall wayes ; sometimes by diverting their forces from his Church into some other necessary channell , or ambitious designe of their owne. Thus *Rabshakeh* and his Hoast were called from *Judah*, 2 King. 19. 7. 8. So the Lord promised his people that when they went up to appeare before him thrice a yeare, he would divert the desires of their enemies from their Land, *Exod.* 34. 24 Thus *Julian* the Apostate, having but two maine plots to honour (as he supposed) his government and his Idols withall, the subduing of the Persian, and the rooting out of the Galileans, as he called them ; was prevented from this by being first overthrowne in the other ; for the prosperous successe of which expedition he vowed unto his Idoll-gods a sacrifice of all the Christians in the Empire , as *Gregory Nazianzen* relateth. Sometimes by insatuating , and implanting a spirit of giddinesse and distraction in the enemies of his Church, making them destitute both of counsell and courage. When God would punish Babylon (which was a type of the enemies of Christs Kingdome) he made their hearts melt , that they should be amazed at one another, and their faces should be like flames, *Esay* 13. 7, 8. That is, not onely pale like a flame, but rather, as I conceive , full of variety of fearefull impressions , and distracted passions : nothing so tremulous, so various, so easily bended every way with the smallest blast as a flame : so their feare should make their bloud and spirits in their faces to tremble, quiver, and vary, to come and goe like a thinne flame in them ; so God threatneth to mingle a perverse spirit, to make the spirit of Egypt faile in them and their wisdom to perish, *Isai.* 19. 1, 2, 3. 14. 17. and thus likewise the Lord dealt with *Julian* in that Persian expedition, he put a spirit of folly in him to burne his Ships, and so to put a necessity of courage in his people, as the old Galls did against *Cesar*, and then to leave them all destitute of necessary reliefe. Sometimes

times by ordering casualties and particular emergencies for the deliverance of his Church; a thing wonderfully scene in the Histories of *Ioseph* and *Esther*. Thus as a man by a chaine made up of severall linkes, some of gold, others of silver, other of brasse, iron, or tinne, may be drawne out of a pit: so the Lord by the concurrence of severall un subordinate things; which have no manner of dependance, or naturall coincidence amongst themselves hath oftentimes wrought the deliverance of his Church, that it might appeare to be the worke of his own hand. Sometimes by ordering and arming naturall causes to defend his Church, and to amaze the enemy. Thus the Starres in their courses are said to fight against *Sisera*, *Judges* 5. 20. A mighty winde from Heaven beating on their faces discomfited them, as *Iosephus* reports. So the Christian armies under *Theodosius* against *Eugenius* the Tyrant were defended by windes from Heaven, which snatched away their weapons out of their hands. To make good that Promise, *No weapon that is formed against thee shall prosper.* So the Lord slew the enemies of *Ioshua* with haile, *Ioshua* 11. 11. And thus the Moabites were overthrowne by occasion of the Sun shining upon the water, *2 Kings* 3. 22, 23. Sometimes by implanting phantasies and frightfull apprehensions into the mindes of the enemy, as into the Midianites, *Judges* 7. 13, 14. The Assyrians, *2 Kings* 7. 6. thus the Lord caused a voyce to be heard in the Temple before the destruction of Jerusalem, warning the faithfull to goe out of the City. Sometimes by stirring up and prospering weak and contemptible meanes to shew his Glory thereby. The Medes and Persians were an effeminate and luxurious people, *Cyrus* a meane Prince, for he was not at this time the Emperour of the Medes and Persians, but onely some in law to *Darius* or *Cyaxares*, and yet these are made instruments to overthrow that most valiant people, the Babylonians, *Esaie* 45. 1. 13. 3. 17. As *Ieremie* was

VER. 5, 6.

Ioseph. Antig.
Jud lib. 5. c. 6.

Aug. de Civ.
Dei. l. 5. c. 26.

Euseb. l. 3. c. 8.

Brison. de Reg.
Perf. l. 2.

VER. 5, 6.

Jer. 38. 11.

Herodot. lib. 1.
Zenoph. de ex-
pedit. City 1. 7.

Euseb. de vita
Constantin. 1.
cap. 50.
Theodoret 1. 3.
c. 10. vid. Ter-
tul constr. Sea-
pulam, ca 3. &
Lactant. de la
Barr.
Euseb hist. 1. 8.
cap. 26. & Zo-
naras.

drawne out of the Dungeon by old rotten ragges, which were throwne aside as good for nothing; So the Lord can deliver his Church by such instruments as the enemies thereof before would have looked upon with scorn, as upon cast and despicable creatures; for God, as he useth to infatuate those whom he will destroy, so he doth guide with a Spirit of wonderfull wisdom those whom he raised to defend his Kingdome. The Babylonians were feasting, and counted their City impregnable, being fortified with walls and the great river, and God gave wisdom beyond the very conjectures of men, to attempt a businesse which might seeme unfeasible in nature, to drie up Euphrates, and divide it into severall small branches, and so he made a way to bring his army into the City while they were feasting, the gates thereof being in great confidence and security left open, *Esa.* 44. 27, 28. 45. 1. *Ier.* 51. 36. Sometimes by turning the hearts of others to compassionate the Church, to hate the enemies, and not to help them, but to rejoyce when he is sinking, *Esa.* 14. 6. 10. 6. *Nahum* 3. 7. Sometimes by the immediate stroke of God upon their bodies or consciences. Thus God gave the Church rest by smiting *Herod*, *Acts* 12. 23, 24. Thus *Maximinus* being smitten with an horrible and sinking disease in his bowels, confessed that it was Christ which overcame him; and *Julian* being smitten with an unknowne blow from Heaven, as is supposed, confessed that Christ was too hard for him; and another *Julian*, Uncle to the Apostate, for pissing on the Lords Table, had his bowels rotted, and his excrements issued out, *Non per siccissimum, sed per vulnera*, as the same Historian reports. Sometimes by tiring them quite out, and making them for very vexation, and successelesse give over their vaine attempts, or else disheartning them that they may not begin them. So *Dionysius* retired to a private life, because he could not root out the Christians. And

Julian

The Victory of Christ.

501

Julian was afraid to persecute the Christians, as his predecessors had done, lest they should thereby increase; he forbore it out of envie, and not out of mercy, as *Nazianzen* observes. Sometimes by turning their own devices upon their heads, ruining them with their owne counsels, and it may be dispatching them with their own hands. Thus the Lord set every mans sword against his fellow in the huge hoaste of the Midianites, *Judges* 7. 22. So *Pilate* and *Nero*, the one the murderer of Christ, the other the dedicatour of all the consequent great persecutions, both died by their own hands, as being most wicked and most cruell, and therefore fittest to revenge the cause of Christ upon themselves. Thus God did not onely curse the counsell, but revenge the treason of *Achisophis* by an act of the most desperate folly and inhumanity which could be committed. Sometimes by hardning them unto a desperate prosecution of their own ruine, as in the case of *Pharaoh*, suffering them to list at the stone so long, till it loosen, and fall upon them, *Zechar.* 12. 3. *Matthew* 21. 44. Sometimes by ingratiating the Church with them to their own destruction, as he did Israel with the Egyptians, *Exodus* 12. 35, 36. By these and a world the like meanes doth the Lord overthrow the enemies of his Kingdom.

Now all this is *In the day of his wrath*, or in his own due time: where we may note by the way, that Christ hath wrath in him as well as mercy. Though he be by wicked and secure men misconceived, as if he were only compassionate: yet *læsa patientia fit furor*, he will more sorely judge them hereafter, whom he doth not perswade nor allure here. So mercifull he is, that he is called a *Lambe* for meeknesse; and yet so terrible, that he is called a *Lyon* for fury. It is true, *fury is not in him*, namely, to those that apprehend his strength and make their peace with him, *Esaï* 27. 4, 6. But yet to those that will not kisse, that is, not love, worship, nor obey him, he

VER. 5, 6.

Nazian Orat.
3. in *Julian*. 1.

Tertul. Apolog.
cap. 5.
Euseb. l. 2. c. 7.

VER. 5, 6.

can with a little wrath shew himselfe very terrible, *Psalm* 2. 12. He commeth first with peace, *Luke* 10. 5. but it is *Pax concessa*, not *pax emendicata*, a Peace mercifully offered, not a peace growing out of any necessity or exigencies on his part, and so wrought by way of composition for his owne advantages. The peace of a Conquerour, *Zech.* 9. 10. A peace which putteth conditions to those to whom it is granted, that they shall be tributaries and servants unto him, *Deut.* 20. 10, 11, 12. Therefore the Apostle saith, that he came to preach or to proclaim peace, *Ephes.* 2. 17. but if we reject it, he then follows the directions of *Jehona*, *These mine enemies which would not have me to raigne over them, bring them hither and slay them before me*, *Luke* 19. 27.

But the maine thing here to be noted is, that Christ hath a Day, a *πρόδοσις*, a prefixed, and constituted time wherein he will be avenged on the greatest of his enemies. When he forbears, and suffers them to prevaile, yet still he holdeth the line in his owne hand, the hooke of his Decree is in their nostrils, and he can take them short when he will. It is never want of power, wisdom, or love to his Church; that their quarrell is not presently revenged; but all these are fitted to his greater Glory. The Lord seemeth to neglect, to breake up the hedge, to sleepe while his Church is sinking (as CHRIST to his Disciples seemed carelesse, *Marke* 4. 38, 39.) so frequently in Scripture the Saints expostulate with God in an humble and mourning debate, *why sleepest thou, O Lord? Arise, cast us not off for ever*, *Psalm* 44. 23. *Jerem.* 14. 8, 9. But God hath his quare against us too for this infirmity and haste of ours: *why sayest thou, O Jacob, and speakest, O Israel, my way is hid from the Lord, and my judgement is passed over from my God? That is, he hath not taken notice of my calamity. Hast thou not known, hast thou not heard, that the everlasting God, the Lord, the Creatour of the ends of the earth fainteth not,*
neither

neither is weary? There is no searching of his understanding, *Esay* 40.27.28. He is wonderfull in counsell and excellent in working; and therefore he doth not slumber nor sleepe: but onely in wisdom ordereth times and seasons, that there may in the end be the greater glory unto him, and in the things done, the more beauty. Every thing, saith *Solomon*, is beautifull in its time; if you gather it before, it loseth both its beauty and vertue. It would be a madnesse for a man to mow downe his corne when it is in the greene blade. He waiteth, saith the Apostle, for the precious fruit of the earth, and hath long patience, *1am.* 5.7. Now the Prophet assureth us, that *Light*, that is, comfort, refreshment, peace, deliverance, is sowne for the righteous, *Psal.* 97.11. It was sowne for the people of God when they were in captivity, though to themselves they seemed as dead men in their graves, yet indeed they were dead but as seed in the furrowes, which revived againe, *Psal.* 126.5,6. and therefore the Lord likewise (like Saint *James* his husband-man) is said to wait, that he may be gracious to his people, *Esay.* 30.18. Though a man suffer never so much injury, and be most violently kept out of his owne right, yet he must wait till time and mature proceedings have brought on his matters to a triall; therefore the Lord calleth it *The yeare of recompence for the controversies of Sion*, *Esay.* 34.8. It is not for private men to order the periods, or flints, or revolutions of times wherein busineses are to be tried; but publike authority constitutes that, and every man must wait for the appointed time: so the Church must not set God the times when it would be heard or eased; but must trust his wisdom and power, *Jer.* 49.19. for there is a set time wherein he will have mercy upon Sion, *Psal.* 102.13.

Now this Time is ruled and bounded by these considerations: First, when the sinne of the enemy is growne ripe, and his heart proud and insolent against God and

VER. 5, 6.

his people; when he trampleth upon the poore, when he sacrificeth to his own net, when he adoreth his owne counsels, when he desieth his own condition, and thinke that none can pull him downe, then is it a time for God to shew himselfe, and to stir up his glory. *It is time (saith David) for thee, O Lord, to worke, for they have made void thy Law, Psalm 119. 126.* So outrageous they are, that their fury runneth over from thy servants to thine ordinances, to blot out the very records of heaven, the name and feare of God out of the earth. And this reason and period of time we finde frequently in the Scriptures given: *In the fourth generation they shall come hither againe, for the iniquity of the Amorites is not yet full, Gen. 15. 16.* It is not growne to that ripenesse and compasse, as I in my wise, secret, and patient providence will permit. *O thou that dwellest upon many waters, abundant in treasures (saith the Lord to Babylon) thine end is come, and the measure of thy covetousnesse, Jer. 51. 13.* when men have filled up the measure of their sinne, then is their end come; be their wealth, or safety, or their naturall, or acquired munition never so great. *Put you in the sickle, saith the Prophet, for the harvest is ripe, come get you down, for the presse is full, the Fats over-flow, for the wickednesse is great, Joel 3. 13.* When wickednesse is so great, that it filleth all the vessels, then is the Lord ready to put in his sickle, and to cut it downe.

It is further demanded *when sinne is full?* To this I answer, that there are three things principally which set forth the fulnesse of sinne, *Universality, Impudence and Obstinacy*: First, when a whole Land is filled with it, that there are none to intercede or to stand in the gappe, when from Streets to Palaces, from Houses to Courts, from Schooles to Churches, from every corner sinne breaketh forth, so that blood toucheth blood. *The Land is full of adulterers, saith the Prophet, because of swearers the Land mourneth, for both Priest and Prophet are prophane,* yea

yea in my house have I found their wickednesse, saith the Lord, *Ier.* 23.10,11. when in every place, and at every view there are new, and more abominations, *Ezek.* 8.17. *Ier.* 5.1.6. Secondly, when sinne is impudent, whorish and outrageous; when there is no feare, modesty, or restraint, but it breaketh all bounds, and like a raging Sea overrunneth the bankes. They declare their sinne as Sodom, saith the Prophet, and hide it not: woe unto their soules, *Esay* 3.9. It is so full that it breaks out into their countenance, hypocrisie it selfe is too narrow to cover it. This is that which the Apostle calleth *An excesse of riot*, and the Prophet, a *rusling, like an horse into the battell*. Now when God thus gives a man over, sinne will not be long a filling up; when lusts breake forth, and throng together, when from concupiscence sinne goes on to conception and delight, to formation and contrivance, to birth and execution, to education, and custome, to maintenances and defence, to glory and boasting, to insensibility, hardnesse, and a reprobate sense, then there is such a fulnesse in sinne as is acere unto cursing, the very next step is hell. Lastly, when sinne holds out in stubbornnesse, and is incorrigible, when the remedy is refused, the pardon rejected, the peace not accepted; Then is sinne come to its fulnesse. The sinne of the Amorites was never quite full, but when they rejected that peace, mercy, and subjection to Gods people, which was offered them first. But when men sinne against those meanes of grace which are sent unto them, and leave no remedy to themselves; no marvell if the Lord give them over, and let in the enemie upon them, *2 Chron.* 36.16. Therefore we must take heed of finishing sinne, for it is not sinne; but the consummation and finishing of sinne which condemnes a man.

Now when thus the sinne of the enemie is growne so ripe, that it breaketh forth into pride and insultation against Gods people, then is the Lords time to shew him-

VER. 5,6.

Esal. 48.4.
Ier. 3.3.

*Delicti durior
front est, ab ipso
et in ipso deli-
cto, impudenti-
am docti. Ter-
tul de vel.
viv. c. l.
Rom. I. 14. 26.
Esal. 69. 27.*

*Dum servitur
libidini, facta
est consuetudo;
dum consuetudi-
ni, necessitas.
Aug. Confess.
lib 8. c. 5. vid.
Bernard. de
Gradibus super-
biae.*

VER. 5, 6.

selfe: *I will restore health unto thee, saith the Lord to his Church, and I will heale thee of thy wounds, because they called thee an out-cast, saying, This is Sion whom no man seeketh after, Jer. 30. 17. see Jer. 50. 11. Ezek. 25. 3. 28. 6—9. Obad. vers. 3. 4.* When the high wayes were waste, and the way-faring man ceased, and the enemy regarded no man—*Now, saith the Lord, will I rise, now will I be exalted, &c. Esay. 33. 8. 11.* when the enemies helpe forward the affliction of Gods people, and by their pride and insultation doe double the misery which is upon them, then will the Lord returne to them in mercies, and be sore displeased with his enemies, *Zech. 1. 15, 16. Esay. 40. 2. 47. 5, 6.*

Secondly, when Gods people are thoroughly humbled and purged, for God useth wicked men but as his staffe or weapon, as his fire or fan to correct and purge them, *Esay. 10. 12.* He intendeth not in his punishments such severity against them, as against their enemies: if the rod be for the childe, the fire is for the rod, *Esay. 27. 7, 8, 9.* When men are so smitten, that they can returne to him that smiteth them, and not revolt more and more; for God will not throw any more darts at those who are sunke and dead already, when they are stirred in their hearts joyntly to seeke the Lord, and to meete him in the way of his judgements, and to compassionate and favour the dust of Sion, then is the day of his wrath; for when Gods time to deliver a people is come, he will more abundantly stirre up the hearts of his people to pray for it, *Psal. 102. 16, 17. Dan. 9. 2, 3.* whereas, when he will destroy a people, he will not suffer his Saints to pray, *Jer. 14. 11.*

Thirdly, when all humane hopes and expectations are gone, when a people is so pilled and broken, that they have no courage, meanes, succours or probabilities left, then is Gods time to deliver his Church, and to punish his enemies: *The Lord shall judge his people, and repent himselfe*

himselfe for his Servants, when he seeth that their power is gone, Deut. 32.36. Psal. 68.20 109.31. In one word, when the preparations and premisses as it were unto Gods glory are best ordered, and put together, then is the day of his wrath come.

The Church then need not to be cast downe with the insultation of her enemies, since Christ is the same yesterday, and to day, and for ever; such as he was ever to his Church, such he is still. If he have delivered his Church from the pride of her enemies heretofore, his power, truth, watchfulnesse, compassion is the same still; and by faith in them we may rebuke Satan, we may chide away the weaknesse and feare of our owne hearts, we may rejoyce against those that insult over us, when they rage most we may hope their time is short, and that it is but the biting of a wounded beast. Therefore we finde the Saints in Scripture arme themselves against present dangers, with the consideration of what God hath done for his Church in times past, Psam. 68.7,8. 74.13—18. Esay. 51.9,10,11. Hab. 3. And in the confidence of the same truth and power breake forth into a holy scorae of their enemies, Mich. 7.8,9,10. Esay. 50.8,9. In the forest extremities we may fix our faith on God, and he delighteth to be depended upon alone, when all outward helpes and probabilities faile, see Esay. 41.17,18. Hab. 3.17,18. A million of men came against Asa, one of the hugest hoasts of men that were ever read of, yet by relying on God they were all delivered into his hand; and the reason is added, because God hath eyes, and strength, or as he is described, Revel. 5.6. Seven hornes and seven eyes, much wisdom, and much power to shew himselfe valiant in the behalfe of those that walke uprightly, 2 Chron. 16.8,9.

We should learne likewise to rejoyce and triumph with all thankfulnessse of heart when Christ subdueth the enemies of his Kingdome, and giveth deliverance and refresh-

VER. 5, 9.

Deut. 20.3,4.
Ezra. 5.1,12,13.
Deut. 31.6,7,8

Jer. 31.8.

VER. 5, 6.

refreshment to his people. When he maketh his hand knowne to his servants, and his fury to his enemies, then should all they that love Hierusalem rejoyce, *Eesai. 66. 10.* Thus the Church after they were delivered from the malice of *Haman*, instituted dayes of joy and feasting, *Esther. 9. 22.* It is a signe of an evil heart against the peace and prosperity of the Church of Christ, to envie, or slight, or thinke basely of the instruments and wayes whereby Christ delivereth it; as we see in *Tobiah* and *Sanballat*, *Nehem. 4. 2, 3.*

Lastly, we should learne wisdom to lay hold on the times and seasons of Gods peace, because he hath a day of wrath too; to apprehend the offers and opportunities of grace. Christ had been at the Churches doore, and had knocked for admittance; but neglecting that season, he was gone, and much she suffered before she could finde him againe, *Cant. 5. 2, 7.* When the Lord speaketh unto us in his ordinances, and by the secret motions and perswasions of his holy Spirit, we should not deferre, nor put him off, as *Felix* did *Paul* to some other time, but pursue the occasion, and set our selves to doe every duty *in Gods time.* There is a time for every work, and it is beautifull only in its time; and therefore fit it is, that we should observe wisely the signes and nature of the times, *Mat. 16. 2.* And accordingly proportion our devotions for the Church and our selves. It is the worst losse of time, to let slip the seasons of grace, and spirituall wisdom, till it may be, Gods time of mercy is passed over. If thou hadst knowne in this *thy day* the things that concerne thy Peace. But now thy day is over, and my day of wrath is come, they are now hidden from thine eyes.

He shall judge amongst the Heathen.] By heathen we are to understand the same with *Enemies*, *vers. 1.* and *People*, *Eesai. 63. 6.* Meaning all the armies and swarmes of Christs enemies either spirituall or secular. The word

Gentiles

Gentiles was a word of great contempt and detestation amongst Gods people, as the word *Jew* is now amongst us; a proverbiall word to cast reproach and shame upon men. Therefore the Apostle saith of the Ephesians, that in time passed *they had bene Gentiles in the flesh.* Eph: 2. 11. As if by being Christians they had ceased to be Gentiles; or rather that word had ceased to be a terme of reproach, So that *Gentile* was a word of scorne, as *Samaritan*, Job. 8. 48. or *Canaanite*, Ezek. 16. 3. or *Publican*, Matth. 18. 17. Luk. 18. 11. And therefore we finde those two still joyned together *Publicans and sinners*; and so the Apostle joyneth these two words *Gentiles and sinners*, Gal. 2. 15. So then the word *Heathen* is added by *David* to the enemies of Christ, to render them the more odious, and to expresse the more abject and hatefull condition; and therefore when God would cast notable reproach upon his people, he calleth them *Sodomites, and Gentiles*, Esai. 1. 10. Ezek. 2. 3. So then the meaning is, his most abject and hatefull enemies, that are unto him as *Jews* and *Samaritans*, he shall judge, that is, he shall condemne and punish them.

Whence we may note, That *Christs victory over his enemies shall be by way of pleading and disceptation*. His military, is likewise a judiciary proceeding grounded upon righteous and established Lawes. Therefore the day of Gods wrath is called a time of vengeance, and recompence for the *Controversies of Sion*, Esai. 34. 8. To shew that the Lord doth not take vengeance but by way of debate. And therefore when he punisheth, he is said to plead with men. The Priest said not where is the Lord, and they that handle the Law knew me not, &c. *Wherefore I will yet plead with you, saith the Lord, and with your Childrens Children will I plead,* Jer. 2. 8, 9. So to plead and to take vengeance goe together, Jer. 51. 36. And the LORD is said to *reprove with equity*; and to smite the earth with the rod of his mouth, that

is,

VER. 5, 6.

Cameron de Es
clefia, pag. 33.

34. Wems

Christian Sy-

ng pag. 137.

VER. 5. 6.

is, to convince, and argue before he doth punish, *Esay.* 11. 4. As we see in the case of *Sodom*, *Gen.* 18. 21. 33. Herein the Lord sheweth that all our misery begins at our selves. That if we perish, it is because we would not take his counsell, nor be guided by his will; That he did not sell us to any of his creditors, but that for our iniquities we sold our selves, *Esay.* 50. 1. In humane warres, though never so regularly and righteously ordered, yet many particular men may perish without any personall guilt of their owne. *Dolirant Reges, pleruntur Achivi.* But in these warres of Christ, there shall not a man perish, till he be first convinc'd by a judiciary proceeding, of his owne demerit. Every mouth must be stopp'd, and all the world by the evidence and acknowledgement of their owne conscience become guilty before God, before his wrath shall seize upon them. The Lord sent *Noah* to preach, before he sent a flood to destroy the old world. He argued with *Adam* before he thrust him out of Paradise. The voyce goeth ever before the rod, *Mic.* 6. 9. This course our Saviour observed towards him who had not the wedding garment. First, convinc'd him till he was speechlesse, and then cast him into utter darkenesse, *Matth.* 22. 12. 13. And this course the Lord tooke with his people, when he punished them, *Esay.* 5. 3. 4. *Amos* 2. 11. 3. 7. For he will have the consciences of men to subscribe, and acknowledge the justnesse of his proceedings, and to condemne themselves by their own witnesse; when he entreth into judgement he doth it by line and plummet, *Esay* 28. 17. In proportion to the meanes of grace neglected, to the patience and forbearance abused, to the times of grace overstepped, to the purity of the Law violated and profaned. We must take heed therefore of continuing Gentiles, of being aliens from that common wealth of Israel, and strangers from the covenant of promise, of living without God in the world. No man can with hope or comfort say, *Enter not*

The Victory of Christ.

511

VER. 5, 6.

in o judgement, but he who is the *Lords servant*, and of his household; we must be all ingrafted into the naturall Olive, and become the seed of *Abraham*, and *Jewes by Covenant*, before Christ will be our Peace or reconcile us unto his Father, *Rom. 1.29. 11.17, 24. Gal. 6.16. Ephes. 2.11, 14.*

He shall fill the places with dead Bodies.] This notes the greatnesse of the victory, that none should be left to bury the dead. There shall be an universall destruction of wicked men together in the day of Gods wrath, they shall be bound up in bundles, and heaped for damnation, *Mat. 13. 30. Psal. 37.38. Esa. 1.28 66.17.* And it notes the shame and dishonour of the enemy, they shall lie like dung upon the face of the earth, and shall be beholden to their victors for a base and dishonourable buriall, as we see in the great battell with *Gog and Magog*, *Ezek. 39.11—16.*

He shall wound the Head over many Countreys.] Either literally, Antichrist, *Revel. 17.2. 18.* Who taken upon him to be ecumenicall Bishop, and Monarch, and to dispose of Crownes, and dispenſe Kingdomes at his pleasure. Or spiri- tually, *Satan*, who is the Prince of this world, whose head Christ was to crush, and tread under our feet, *Gen. 3.15. Rom. 16.20.* Or figuratively, the Head, that is, the counsell and power of many Nations, which at last shall appear to have been but a vain thing, *Pf. 2.2. 1 Cor. 1.19.* What sense soever we follow, the maine thing to be observed is that which we handled before; that Christ will in due time utterly destroy the greatest, the highest, the wisest of his enemies. And therefore this may suffice upon this verse.

VERSE 7

VERSE 7.



VERSE 7.

*He shall drinke of the Brooke in
the way : therefore shall he lift up the
Head.*



Some understand these words in the sense of the two former, for a figurative expression of the victories of Christ; and they in a two-fold manner. Some by *Brooke* understand the blood of the Adversary with which the way should be filled as with a stream: and by drinking hereof, the satiating, refreshing, and delighting himselfe in the confusion of his enemies; for the Lord is eased when his enemies are subdued, *Esa. 1. 24.* Others, that he should pursue his victory with such heat and importunity, that he should not allow himselfe any times of usuall repast, but should content himselfe with such obvious refreshment as should it self in the way: and should immediately lift up his head again, to pursue the enemy at the heele; and in this sense, there is no more new matter here intimated then that which hath been before handled.

Others understand the meanes whereby Christ should thus lift up his head and exalt himselfe above all the enemies

mies of his Kingdome, namely by his *Passion* and *sufferings*; by death destroying death, and him that had the power of death, which is the Devill. I will not undertake to define which sense is most agreeable to the place: it being so difficult. But upon occasion of this latter (which I think is more generally embraced) I shall speak something of the meanes and ground of Christs victories over his enemies, and of his government in his Church, namely his sufferings and resurrection.

He shall drinke of the Brooke in the way.] By Brooke then or Torrent we may understand the wrath of God, and the rage of men, The afflictions and sufferings which befell Christ. And this is a very frequent Metaphor in Holy Scriptures to understand afflictions by water, *Psalms*. 18.4, 5. 42.7. 69.1. 124.4, 5. So the wrath of the Lord is called a streame, and a lake, *Esaie*. 30.33. *Revel.* 19.20. In regard of the rage and irresistableness thereof, *Sternis agros, sternis fusa lata, bonique labores*, and in regard of the turbidnesse and foulness thereof, for Gods wrath is full of dregs, *Esaie*. 51.17. *Psalms*. 75.8. It is said in the History of Christs Passion, when he was going to wrestle with that wofull agonie in the garden, that he passed over the Brook Cedron, *John* 18.1. And we may observe in the History of the Kings, that when the good Kings *Hezekiah* and *Asa*, and *Josiah*, purged the City and the Temple of idolatry, they burnt the cursed things at the brooke Kidron, and cast them therinto, *2 Chron.* 15.16. *2 Chron.* 29.16. 30.14. *2 Kings* 23.6. To note unto us that the brooke was the sinke, as it were, of the Temple, that into which all the *purgamenta*, and uncleanneses of Gods House, all the *cursed things* were to be cast; with relation whereunto it is not improbable that the Prophet *David* by a Prophetical spirit might notifie the sufferings of Christ, by drinking of that cursed brooke over which he was to passe, to signifie that on him all the faithfull might lay and powre out their finnes, who

VERSE 7.

who is therefore said to be *made sin, and a curse for us*, 2 Cor. 5.21. Gal 3.13. As the people when they laid their hands on the head of the sacrifice, did thereby, as it were, unload all their sins upon it.

Now as waters signifie afflictions; so there are two words with relation thereunto, which signifie suffering of afflictions, and they are both applyed unto Christ, *Matthew 20.22*. Are yee able to *drinke* of the cup that I shall drinke of, or be *baptized* with that Baptisme that I am baptized with? He that drinketh hath the water in him; he that is dipped or plunged, hath the water about him: So it notes the universality of the wrath which Christ suffered, *it was within him; My soule is heauie unto death*; and it was all *about him*, betrayed by *Judas*, accused by *Jewes*, forsaken by *Disciples*, mocked by *Herod*, condemned by *Pilate*, buffeted by the servants, nailed by the souldiers, reviled by the thieves and standers by, and which was all in all, forsaken by his Father. So then by the drinking of the brooke is meant suffering of the curses, and it is frequently so used; *Ier. 25.27.49.12. Ezek. 23.32.34. Hab. 2.16. Rev. 14.9.10.*

By [The way] we must understand either the *Life of Christ* on earth, his passage betwene his assumed voluntary humility and his exaltation againe; or, The way betwene mankind and Heaven, which by that flood of wrath and torrent of curses, which were in *Jesus*, Col. 2.14. was made utterly unpassable, till Christ by his sufferings made a path thorow it, for the ransomed of the Lord to passe over.

[Therefore shall he lift up the Head.] It noteth in the Scripture phrase victory, eluctation, and breaking thorow those evils which did urge and presse a man before, *Psal. 27.6*. and also boldnesse, confidence, and security to the whole body, *Luke 21.28*. And further, it is not, He shall be lifted up, but, He shall doe it himselfe. He hath the

*Qui se humili-
auit, ipse
exaltabitur,
Hierom.*

the power of life; and the fountaine of life in himselfe, *John 5. 26. & 10. 18.* So that following this sense of the words, the meaning is, He shall suffer, and remove all those curses which were in the way between mankinde and heaven, and then he shall lift up his head in the Resurrection, and breake through all those sufferings into glory againe, which sense is most punctually and expressly unfolded in those parallel places, *Luke 24. 26—46. Phil. 2. 8, p. 1 Pet. 1. 11.*

Hee shall drinke of the brooke in the way.] From hence we may note, First, that between mankinde and heaven, there is a torrent of wrath and curses, which doth everlastingly separate between us and glory; *utis xalova isreux*, a great and fixed gulf, which all the world can neither wade through, nor remove. The Law at first was an easie and smooth way to righteousness, and from thence to salvation; but now every step thereof sinks as low as hell. It is written within and without with curses; which way soever a man stirre, he findes nothing but death before him: one mans way by the civility of his education, the ingentitie of his disposition, the engagements of other ends or relations, may seeme more smooth and plausible than others, but by nature they all runne into hell, as all rivers, though never so different in other circumstances, runne into the Sea. It is as impossible for a natural man of himselfe to escape damnation, as it is to make himselfe no child of the old *Adam*, or not to have beene begotten by fleshy parents. The Gulf of sin in our nature cannot be cleansed, and therefore the Guile thereof cannot be removed. The Image we have lost is by us *unrepairable*; the Law we have violated *irreparable*; the Justice we have injured *unsatisfiable*; the conscience of our nature *unsatisfiable*, since a severie from *sin* in *sin* god, and a constitution to the creature infinitely, and therefore the Guile thereof infinite and *unremovable* too.

VER 953 V7

We should learn often to meditate on this point, to
 finde our selves reduced unto these straits and impossibi-
 lities, that we cannot see which way to turne, or to helpe
 our selves: for that is the onely way to draw us unto
 Christ. Every man naturally loves to be in the first place
 beholden to himselfe; in any extremitie, if his owne
 wits, puffs, projects, or endeavours will helpe him out,
 he looks no further; but when all his owne succours
 have forsaken him, then he seekes abroad. It is much
 more true in the matter of salvation; no man ever did
 begin at Christ; but went unto him upon meere necessi-
 ty, when he had experience of the emptinesse of all his
 other succours and dependancies: we all by nature are
 offended at him, and will not have him to reigne over us,
 till thereunto we be forced by the evidence of that infi-
 nite and unpreventable misery, under which without
 him we must sink for ever. This is of all other the most
 urging argument unto men at first to consider, that there
 is a torrent of curses, a sea of death, a reigne of condem-
 nation, a hell of sinne within, and a hell of torments
 without, between them and their salvation; and there
 is no drop of that sea, no scruple of that cude, no tittle
 of that Law, which must not all be strictly fulfilled or
 endured. Suppose that God should summon chy guilty
 soule to a sudden appearance before his Tribunal of Ju-
 stice; and should there begin to deale with thee even at
 thy mothers wombe: Alas, thou wouldest be utterly
 gone there; even there, a seed of evill doers, the spawn
 of viperous and serpentine parents; a cursed childe; a
 childe of wrath, an exact image of this old Adam, and
 of the blood of Satan. But then here is after this pro-
 duced a catalogue, and history of sinnes of folly, of-
 fence, or threescore yeares long. And in them every inor-
 dinate motion of the will, every sudden stirring, and se-
 cret working of inward lust, every idle word, every un-
 cleane aspect, every impertinencie and irregulartie of
 life,

life, scored up against thy poore soule, and each of them to be produced at the last, and either answered or revenged. O where shall the ungodly and sinners appeare, if they have not right in Christ? And how should men labour to be secured in that right? Who would suffer so many millions of obligations and indgements, to lie between him and God, uncanceled, and not labour to have them taken out of the way? Now the onely way to be brought hereunto, is, to deny ourselves, and all we doe; to doe no good thing for this end that we may rest in it, or rely upon it when we have done, but after all to judge our selves unprofitable servants: when we have prayed, to see Hell betweene Heaven and our prayers; when we have preached, to see Hell betweene Heaven and our Sermons; when we have done any worke of devotion, to see Hell between Heaven and all our services; if God should marke what is amisse in them, and should enter into judgement with us: In one word, to see Hell betweene Heaven, and any thing in the world else, save onely betweene Christ and Heaven. Till in this manner men be qualified for mercy, they will have no heart to desire it, and God hath no purpose to conserre it. Christ must be esteemed worthy of all acceptation, before God bestow him: and the way so to esteeme of him is, to seele our selves the greatest of all sinners. And when the soule is thus once humbled with the tast and remembrance of that worm-wood and gall which is in sinne, there is then an immediate passage unto Hope and mercy, *Lam. 3. 21*; and that hope is this, *Thou shalt be able to overcome all*.

That Christ hath drunken up and dried that torrent of curses which was betweene us and Heaven, and hath made a passage through them all by himselfe unto his Fathers Kingdome. He was made sinne and a curse for us, that so he might swallow up sinne and death, and might be the destruction of Hell. *Hos. 13. 14.* I will here but touch upon two things. First, *What Christ suffer-*

red.

VERSE 7. *Next, Secondly, why he suffered:* for understanding of the first, we must note, first, that Christ's *Humane nature* was by the *hypostatical Union* exalted unto many dignities, which to all the Creatures in the world besides, are utterly incommunicable; as the communication of properties, the adoration of Angels, the primogeniture of the Creatures, the cooperation with the Deitie in many mighty workes, the satisfaction of an infinite Justice by a finite passion, &c. Exalted likewise it was by his *spiritual Union* above all his fellowes, with that unmeasurable fullnesse of grace, as wonderfully surpasseth the united and cumulated perfections of all the Angels in Heaven. Secondly, we must note likewise, that all these things Christ received for the work of mans Redemption, and therefore he had them in such a manner as was most suitable and convenient for the execution of that worke. Now Christ was to fulfill that worke by a way of suffering and obediencie; by death to destroy him that had the power of death, as David by Goliaths sword flew him that was master of the sword. As there fell a mighty tempestuous winde upon the Red Sea, whereby the passage was opened for Israel to goe out of Egypt into Canaan; so Christ was to be torne and divided by his suffering, that so there might be a passage for us to God, through the Sea of wrath which was betweene our Egypt and our Canaan, our sin and our Salvation. Here then are two general Rules to be observed concerning the sufferings of Christ. First, that the *Oeconomic* or dispensation of his Mediatorship is the measure of all that he suffered. So much as that required he did suffer, and more he did not: for though he suffered as man, yet he suffered not because he was a man, but because he was a Mediator. Secondly, in as much as a Mediator betweene God and sinners, was to be holy and separate from sinners, (for if he should have beene a sinner, he had beene one of the parties, and not a Mediatour) therefore

none

none of those sufferings which are repugnant to his Holiness, and by consequence, unserviceable to the administration of his Office, could belong unto him. Such things then as did no way prejudice the plenitude of his Grace, the union of his natures, the quality of his mediation, such things as were fiteable to his Person, and requisite for our pardon, such as were possible for him, and such as were necessary for us, those things he suffered as the punishments of our sins.

Now punishments are of severall sorts; some are sins, some onely from sins. Some things in severall respects are both sins and punishments. * In relation to the Law, as Deviations, so they are sins: in relation to the order and disposition of Gods providence, so they are punishments. As hardness of heart, and a reprobate sense. Other punishments are *from sin*, and in this regard sin is two wayes considerable, either as *inherent*, or as *imputed*: from sin as *inherent*, or from the consciousness of sin in a mans self, doth arise remorse, or torment and the worm of conscience. Again, sin as *imputed* may be considered two wayes: either it is *imputed* upon a ground *in nature*, because the persons to whom it is imputed are *naturally one* with him that originally committed it, and so doth *seminally* descend, and is derived upon them. Thus *Adams* sin of eating the forbidden fruit is imputed unto us, and the punishment thereof on us derived, namely the privation of Gods Image, and the corruption of our nature. Or else it is *imputed* upon a ground of *voluntary contract*, vadi-
monie, or suscepcion, so that the guilt thereupon growing is not a *derived*, but an *assumed guilt*, which did not bring with it any *desert*, or worthiness to suffer, but onely an obligation and obnoxiousness thereunto. As if a sober and honest person be surety for a prodigall and luxurious man, who spending his estate upon courses of intemperance and excess, hath disabled himself to

* *Deum natura-
rum bonarum
Creator opti-
mus, malarum
voluntatum
justissimum or-
dinatorem. Aug.
de Civit. Dei,
lib. 11. c. 17.
l. 14. c. 26. Cyto.
7. cont. Julian.
Pelag. l. 5. cap. 3
De Grat. & l. 1.
Lib. Arbitr. c.
23. de Prædest.
justorum. c. 10.*

VERSE 7

* τὸ ἐμὸν ἀνυ-
πότακτον ἐαυτῷ
ποιεῖ ὡς καρα-
λὴ τὸ πάντ'
σώματι. ὅς ἐστι
μὲν ἐν ἀνυπό-
τακτῷ ἐξ ὧ καὶ
σεσάδης, ἀνυ-
πότακτος τὸ
κατ' ἐμὲ καὶ ὁ
Χριστὸς λέγει,
Greg Nazian.
Orat. 32.

* Infirmitates
quædam vitio-
se, quædam mi-
seræ. Aug.

pay ray. of his debts; the one doth for his vitious disabilite deserve imprisonment, unto which the other is as lyable as hee, though without any such personall desert. Now when the punishments which Christ suffered are onely such as agree unto sin thus impured, * as all our sinnes were unto Christ. Again in punishments we are to distinguish between punishments inflicted from without, and punishments ingenerated, and immediately resulting from the condition of the person that suffereth, or between the Passions and Actions of the men that are punished. Punishments inflicted are those paines and dolorous impressions which God either by his own immediate hand, or by the Ministerie of such instruments as he's pleased to use, doth lay upon the soul or body of a man. Punishments ingenerated are those which grow out of the weakness and wickedness of the person lying under the sore and invincible pressure of those paines which are thus inflicted. As Blasphemie, despair, and the worm of conscience. In one word, some evils of punishment are * vitious, either formally in themselves, or fundamentally, or by way of connotation in regard of the originals thereof in the person suffering them. Others are onely dolorous and miserable, which prefe nature, but doe no way defile it, nor refer to any, either pollution or impotencie in the person suffering them, and of this sort onely were the punishments of Christ.

Now these punishments which Christ thus suffered, are either inchoate, or consummate; inchoate, as all those personall defects of our nature, which neither were sinnes, nor grounded upon the inherence of sinnes (for hee took not our personall, but onely our naturall defects) And these were either corporeall, as hunger, thirst, weariness, and the like; or Spirituall, as fear, grief, sorrow, temptations, &c. Consummate, were those which he suffered at last. And these likewise were either corporeall, as shame, mockings, buffets, trials,

and Resurrection of Christ.

521

VERSE 7.

trials, scourging, condemnation, and ignominious, and a cursed death. Of spirituall, and those were principally two. First, a punishment of *Dereliction*. *My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken mee?* *Matth 27. 47.* There was some kind of separation between God and Christ, during the time of his sufferings for sin in that cursed manner: For understanding whereof, we must note that he had a *four-fold Union* unto God; First *In his humane nature*; which was so fast united in his Person to the divine, that death it self did not separate it either from the Person, or from the Deitie. It was the Lord that lay in the grave. Secondly, *in Love*; and so there was never any separation neither, but when hee hanged on the Cross, he was still the beloved Son of his Father, in whom he was well pleased: Thirdly, *In the Communion of his Spirit and Holiness*; and in that regard likewise there was no disunion, for he was offered up as a Lambe, without spot or blemish. Lastly, *In the fruition of the light of his countenance*, and of his glory and favour; and in this respect there was for the time of his sufferings a *Dereliction*, *subtractione visionis, non dissolutione unionis*, by the withdrawing of his countenance; not by the dissolving of his Union. Hee looked upon Christ as a God armed against the sinnes of the World, which were then upon him. Secondly, There was a *punishment of malediction*. Hee did undergoe the curse of the Law, hee did grapple with the wrath of God, and with the powers of darkness; hee felt the scourges due unto our sinnes in his humane nature, which squeezed and wrung from him those strong cryes, whose deep and woeful complaints, that bloody and bitter sweat, which drew compassion from the very rocks. And surely it is no derogation to the dignitie of Christs Person, but on the other side a great magnifying of the Justice of God against sin, of the Power of Christ against the Law, and of the mercy of them both towards sinners, to affirm that the sufferings

VERSE 7.

things of Christ, what-ever they were in *specie* in the kind of them, were yet *in pondere*, in their weight and pressure, equally grievous with those which we should have suffered; for being in all things save sin like unto us, and most of all in his liableness to the curse of the Law (so far as it did not necessarily denote either sin inherent, or weakness to break through in the person suffering) why he should not be obnoxious to as great extremities of pain, I see no reason; for no degree of meer anguish and dolor can be unbecoming the Person of him who was to be known by that Title, *A man of sorrows*. And surely far more indignity it was to him to suffer a violent death of body from the hands of base men, than to suffer with patience, obedience and victory far sorer stripes from the hand of God, his Father, who was pleased upon him to lay the iniquity of us all.

For the second thing proposed, *Why Christ suffered* these things; The Scripture giveth principally these *five reasons*: First to execute the decrees of his Father, *Act. 4. 27. 28.* Secondly, to fulfill the propheties, prefigurations, and predictions of Holy Scriptures, *Luk 24. 46.* Thirdly, to magnifie his mercy, and free love to sinners, and most impotent enemies, *Rom. 5. 8.* Fourthly, to declare the righteousness and truth of God against sin, who would not be reconciled with sinners but upon a legall expiation. *Rom. 3. 25.* For although we may not limit the unsearchable wisdom and wayes of God, as if he could no other way have saved man; yet we are bound to adore this means, as being by him selected out of that infinite treasure of his own counsell, as most convenient to set forth his wonderfull hate of sin, his inexorable Justice and severity against it, his unsearchable riches of love and mercy towards sinners, and in all things to make way to the manifestation of his Glory. Lastly, To shew forth his own power which had strength to stand under all this punishment of sin, and

ar

*Aug. de Trin.
lib. 13: cap. 10.
Cy de Agone
Christiano, To.
3. cap. 11.*

at last to shake it off and to declare himself to be the Son of God by the resurrection from the dead, *Rom. 1. 4.* For though Christ did exceedingly fear, and for that seem to decline and pray against these his passions: yet none of that was out of jealousie, or suspicion that he should not break through them. But he feared them as being paines *unavoidable*, which he was most certainly to suffer; and as paines very *heavie* and grievous, which he should not overcome without much bitterness, and very wofull conflict. Now for a word of the last Clause.

Therefore shall he lift up the Head] We may hence observe, that Christ hath conquered all his sufferings by his own Power. As in his passion when he suffered he bowed down his head before-hand, and gave up the Ghost with a loud voyce, to note that his sufferings were voluntary, *Ioh. 19. 30.* So in his resurrection he is said to lift up his head himself, to note that he had life in himself, that he was the Prince of Life, that it was impossible for him to be held under by death (as we were by the Law, *Rom 7. 6.*) And that his exaltation was *voluntarie* likewise and from his own Power, for he was not to have any assistant in the work of our redemption, but to doe all alone, *Iohn 2 19. 5. 26. 10. 17. Act. 3. 15.*

If it be objected, that Christ was raised from the dead by the Glory of his Father, and that he raised him up, *Rom. 6. 4. Act. 13. 33.* To this I answer, that this was not by way of supplement and succour to make up any defect of Power in Christ; but onely by way of consent to Christs own Power and Action, that so men might joyntly honour the Son and the Father *Ioh. 5 19. 26.* Or by the *Glorie of the Father* we may understand that Glorious power which the father gave unto his Son in the flesh, to have life in himself, *Ioh. 5. 26.* annexing hereunto a command to exercise the same Power,

Iohn

John 10. 18. Or he is said to bee raised by himself and his Father both, because that Holy Spirit, which immediately quickned him (*Rom.* 4. 1 *Tim.* 3. 16. 1 *Pet.* 3. 18.) was both his and his Fathers. It was not any personall thing wherein the Son differ'd from the Father, which raised Jesus from the dead, but that Spirit which was common to them both.

To conclude then with the consideration of those great benefits, and that excellent use which this resurrection of Christ doth serve for unto us. First it assureth us of the accomplishment of his *Works of mediation on earth*, and that he is now in the execution of those other Offices which remain to bee fulfilled by him in Heaven for the application of his Sacrifice unto us; for having in the resurrection justified himself, he thereby rose for our justification likewise, *Rom.* 4. 25. For if the debt had not been taken quite off by the Surety, it would have lien upon the principall still. And therefore the Apostle proveth the resurrection by this, that Gods mercies are sure *Acts* 13. 34. Whereas if Christ were not risen from the dead, we should be yet in our sinnes; and so by consequence, the Mercies of *David* should have failed us *1 Cor.* 15. 17, 18. And for this reason it is (as I conceive) that the Lord sent an Angell to remove the stone from the mouth of the Sepulcher: not to supply any want of power in him, who could himself have rolled away the stone with one of his fingers: but as a judge when the Law is satisfied, sendeth an officer to open the prison doors to him, who hath made that satisfaction; so the Father to testifie that his Justice was fully satisfied with the price which his Son had paid, sent an Officer of Heaven to open the doors of the Grave, and as it were, to hold away the hangings while his Lord came forth of his bed-chamber,

Secondly, it assureth us of our *resurrection*; for as the head must rise before the members, so the members are sure

sure to follow the Head: The wicked shall rise by his *Judiciary power*, but not by the vertue and fellowship of his *Resurrection*; as the faithfull, who are therefore called *Children of the Resurrection*, *Luke 20. 36. 1 Cor: 15. 20. 23.* Thirdly, it doth by a secret and spirituall vertue renew and *sanctifie our nature*, *Rom. 6. 4.* For the acts of Christs mediation in his sufferings and victories, are spiritually applyable, and effectually in us unto answerable effects. His death to the mortification of sin, *Heb. 9. 14. 1 John 1. 7.* And his Resurrection, to the quickning of us in holiness, *Ephes. 2. 5. Col 2. 12.* Fourthly, it comforteth us in all other calamities of life which may befall us; he that raised up himself from the dead, hath compassion and power to deliver us from all evill, and to keep us from falling. This is the sum of *Iobs* argument, God will raise me up at the last day, therefore undoubtedly hee is able (if it stand with my good and his own glory) to lift me up from this dunghill again, *Iob 19. 27.* And this is Gods argument to comfort his people in patient waiting upon him in their afflictions, because their dead bodies shall live, and they that dwell in the dust shall awake and sing, *Eesai. 26. 19.* Lastly, it serveth to draw our thoughts and affections from earth unto Heaven; because things of a nature should move unto one another. Now saith the Apostle, *Our conversation is in Heaven, from whence we look for a Saviour, even the Lord Iesus Christ; who shall change our vile Bodie, and make it like unto his glorious Bodie, according to the working, whereby hee is able to subdane all things unto himself.* To him with the Father and the Holy Ghost, three Persons, and one God, be all honour, glory, Majesty and thanksgiving for ever. *Amen.*

FINIS.

*A Table of such places of Scripture
as are by the way briefly opened or
paraphrased in this Exposition,
and the former three
Treatises.*

T noteth the Treatise, and P the Psalme.

G En.3.15	T.439	Psal.119.18,19	T.435
Gen.6.5,6	T.274	Psal.119.64,125	P.308
Gen.8.21	T.274	Psal.126.1	P.209
Exod.15.3	P.493	Psal.132.8	P.163
Numb.14.17	T.274	Psal.144.11	P.23
Numb.20.12	P.190	Eccles.1.15	T.68
Numb.23.21	P.450	Eccles.5.10,17	T.72
Deut.4.19	T.284	Eccles.6.1-3,7-10	T.73
Deut.6.5	T.202	Eccles.7.29	P.354
2 Sam.3.25	P.400	Eccles.10.2	P.484
1 King.21.20	T.278	Esay 13.7,8	P.408
	279	Esay 28.16	T.484
2 Chron.6.41	P.163	Esay 33.22	P.94
Joh.21.16	T.51	Esay 53.10	P.31
Psal.2.9,10	P.12,13	Esay 57.20	P.18
Psal.37.16	T.77,369	Jer.1.11,12	T.40
Psal.37.25	T.26	Jer.2.13	T.16
Psal.62.10	T.98	Jer.3.19	P.233
Psal.78.37	T.110	Jer.8.8	P.215
Psal.87.4	P.372	Lam.3.39,40	T.176
Psal.89.27	P.17	Ezek.3.3	P.162
Psal.89.35	P.80	Ezek.18.20	P.444,445
Psal.109.6	P.486	Ezek.33.31,32	P.68
			Hof.

A Table.

Hof. 5.11	P. 59	John 3.18	T. 131
Hof. 5.12	T. 43	John 4.22	P. 136
Hof. 7.14	T. 311	John 6.44	P. 112
Hof. 7.16	T. 302	John 7.38	P. 40.178
Hof. 8.7	T. 302	John 7.39	P. 37
Hof. 8.14	T. 426	John 8.56	P. 57
Hof. 9.8	P. 251	John 10.4	P. 257
Hof. 9.11	T. 43	John 11.48, 50	T. 219
Hof. 10.11	T. 422	John 13.27	T. 267
Joel. 3.17	T. 50	John 14.20, 23	T. 487
Amos 8.2	T. 49	John 15.1, 5	T. 464
Mic. 7.19, 20	P. 122	John 16.7	P. 236
Nahum. 1.10	P. 493	John 16.10	P. 30
Habak. 3.9	P. 387	John 16.21	P. 50
Zeph. 1.8	P. 149	John 17.4	T. 420
Hag. 2.7	T. 389	John 17.13	P. 437, 491
Hag. 2.14	T. 307	John 17.15	P. 434, 435
Zech. 5.6, 11	T. 49	Acts 9.7	P. 381
Mal. 4.2	P. 51	Acts 28.28	P. 136
Mat. 4.4	P. 6	Rom. 5.10	P. 430
Mat. 6.24	P. 21	Rom. 5.13	T. 370
Mat. 9.15, 17	P. 43	Rom. 5.14	T. 136, 137-370
Mat. 11.11	P. 178	Rom. 6.3	T. 144
Mat. 13.22	T. 59	Rom. 6.11	T. 144, 275
Mat. 15.28	489	Rom. 7.8	T. 131
Mat. 23.29	P. 56	Rom. 7.12	T. 133
Mat. 26.5	P. 316	Rom. 7.14, 15	T. 278
Mat. 26.39	P. 426	Rom. 8.29, 30	T. 447
Mark. 10.21	T. 413	Rom. 8.32	T. 485
Luke 1.36	P. 384	Rom. 13.9	T. 414
Luke 2.40, 52	T. 423	Rom. 13.10	P. 328
Luke 22.32	T. 351	1 Cor. 2.14	T. 118
Luke 24.46	P. 30	1 Cor. 3.21, 22	T. 27
John 1.16	T. 400	1 Cor. 7.29	T. 54
John 1.17	P. 183	1 Cor. 8.2	P. 322
John 1.18	P. 169	1 Cor. 11.1	T. 411, 413
		1 Cor.	

A Table.

1 Cor. 12.3	P.170	Col. 3.3	T.432
1 Cor. 13.13	T.494	1 Tim. 1.13	T.295
1 Cor. 14.24,25	T.162	1 Tim. 1.15	P.6
1 Cor. 15.24,28	P.78	1 Tim. 3.16	P.273-430
1 Cor. 15.56	T.130	1 Tim. 4.4	T.24
2 Cor. 1.18	P.322	1 Tim. 4.8	T.492
2 Cor. 1.20	T.345-350	1 Tim. 6.18	T.489
	P.390	Heb. 1.9	T.422
2 Cor. 2.16	T.390	Heb. 2.3	P.136
2 Cor. 3.6,7,8	P.191	Heb. 6.17	P.384,385
2 Cor. 3.12	P.202	Heb. 7.19	P.19
2 Cor. 3.18	T.416	Heb. 8.4	P.427
	P.180.191	Heb. 9.24	P.428
2 Cor. 4.12	P.206	Heb. 10.11,12	P.23
2 Cor. 4.6	P.136.181	Heb. 11.1	T.57
2 Cor. 5.14	T.488	Heb. 11.40	P.19
2 Cor. 5.21	P.424	Heb. 12.1,3	T.356
2 Cor. 8.9	T.413	1 am. 1.8	P.317
Gal. 3.10	T.226	1 am. 1.14,15	T.155-
Gal. 3.19	T.137		286
Gal. 4.5	P.429	1 am. 1.19-21	P.174
Gal. 5.6	T.485,486	1 am. 2.10,11	P.356
Gal. 5.15-22	T.374,383	1 am. 4.5,6	P.184
Gal. 6.16	P.216	1 Pet. 1.16	T.413
Ephes. 2.6	P.435	1 Pet. 2.6	T.484
Ephes. 3.9,10	P.167	1 Pet. 2.24	P.438,439
Ephes. 4.17,18	T.182	2 Pet. 1.3	T.485
Ephes. 4.26	T.174	2 Pet. 1.4	T.344
Ephes. 4.30	T.434	2 Pet. 1.9	T.56
Ephes. 6.24	P.74	2 Pet. 3.16	T.126
Phil. 2.8,9	P.29	1 John 3.2	T.433
Phil. 3.8	T.474	1 John 3.3	T.341
Col. 1.18	P.18	1 John 3.9	T.288,52
Col. 1.24	T.421	1 John 4.20	P.73
Col. 2.15	P.118	1 John 5.8	T.280

FINIS.